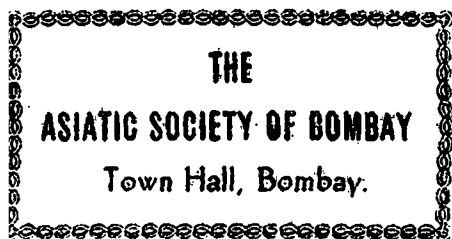




00035889



THE
L I F E
OF 35889
a

Pope *SIXTUS* the Vth.

IN WHICH

We have also (by pleasant Digressions)

A VIEW of the

TRANSACTIONS

OF THE 3/2

Romish Church,

AND

The Most Considerable Affairs of

E U R O P E

XX 2 1 3 In that AGE. XXXA 1 3

Written in Italian, by GREGORIO LETI.

L O N D O N,

Printed for JOHN WYAT, at the *Rose*, in
St. Paul's Church-Yard, MDCCIV.



00035889

T H E

P R E F A C E.

TO set off our *Waves* as well as we can; the Gentle Reader has in this our Story a fair Probability to meet with Truth. The Distance between the Time of Action and the committing it to Paper, secures him from the Common Cheats of Flattery and Malice, those Summer Plants upon which Father Time shews his Authority. We would have our Present upon this Title, pass for an Ever-Green.

The Person we bring upon the Stage was indeed a Great Man. There's as much in his Character to invite One's Curiosity as any body's has afforded, either before his time or since. He must be allow'd a Man whom Nature had endowed

The PREFACE.

as a Favourite. The Richer the Soil the more apt to produce Weeds. Bate him but the Miscarriages to which his Imperious Temper expos'd him; and attribute that to the Defect of the first Draught, and the Want of more Early Improvement; and you'll grant he has out-stripp'd Ordinary Expectation. The Dull Side of the Prospect may be of Use, as a Warning to those whom Good Fortune has plac'd out of Sight of their Original, and a Compliment to others that are better born.

That it goes in the Strain of Popery is a Disadvantage we cannot help: If we would see their Rarities, we must take 'em as they stand. And yet there's Variety in observing Things in a different Light. And so much by way of Preface: Not to tire the Reader, or forestall the Market.

THE

T H E
C O N T E N T S
O F T H E
F I R S T B O O K.

THE Birth of Sixtus. The Poverty of his Father, Page 1. His Christening. Remarks upon his Birth-Day, and His Name Felix, p. 2. The Dangers he escaped in his Infancy, p. 3. His Education. He is put out to keep Sheep, and afterwards keeps Hogs. His Inclination above his Business, p. 4. A Monk that had lost Himself, comes to enquire his way of Him. He leaves his Drove, and runs along with him to Ascoli, p. 5. He pleases the Warden with the Sensible Answers He gives him, p. 6. He receives the Habit without the Cowl. A Monk teaches him to Read, p. 7. His Genius for Learning. He enters upon Grammar. A New Warden resolves to send him home to his Father, p. 8. By an Interest made in the Provincial, he is kept in Interview of the Pope and King of France at Marseilles, p. 9. They give him the entire Habit of a Novice. Understands Latin, and renders it well in Two Years, p. 10. They give him the entire Habit of a Novice, p. 11. His Temper. He is Profess'd. England throws off Popery, p. 12. The Emperor Charles V. takes Tunis. The Anabaptists Munster, p. 13. Felix is removed to Macerata, p. 14. Thence to Fermo, p. 15. Thence to Recanati. An Interview between the Pope, Emperor, and King of France, p. 16. The Warden trusts Brother Felix in his Absence with the Keys. He falls out with
the

The Contents.

the Brothers, and betrays his Spirit of Government, p. 17. He goes to Ancona. Keeps a publick Aēt there, p. 18. His Companions envy him. And treat Him scurvily, p. 19. He is sent to Osmo, p. 20. The Prior is very kind to Him. The Emperor greets the Pope at Meeting at Lucca, p. 21. The Ward goes thither and takes Brother Felix with Him, p. 22. They return to Osmo, after having spent Three Days at Lucca. The rest of em Grumble at the Honour done to Felix. A Batchelor plays upon him, but meets with his Match, p. 23.

The SECOND BOOK.

THE Miserable State Christendom is in, p. 24. The Apostacy of a Servitour Monk and a Batchelour of the Order of Saint Francis, who endeavour to debauch Brother Felix into the Design, p. 25. The Death of James V. King of Scots. Brother Felix desires to be removed from Osmo. The Provincial sends him an Order with a Blank, p. 26. He makes choice of the Convent of Ancona, by which he has another Opportunity of seeing the Pope. His Sprightly Parts appear, p. 27. He is ordered to Urbino. There He is highly satisfied. He goes into Priest's Orders, Takes his Batchelour's Degree, p. 28. He takes the Name of Montalto. He goes to reside at Jesi, where he was guilty of a little Indiscretion as he was Preaching against Luther, p. 29. The Provincial coming to Jesi, sends him to Fermo to go out Doctor. He is stopp'd. He goes to Preach in the Country, p. 30. Returns to Fermo. And there receives the Doctor's Cap. He is appointed to keep an Aēt at the Chapter of Ascoli. He addresses His Questions to Cardinal Carpi, p. 31. He insists upon coming up First. The Cardinal Protector gives it against Him, p. 32. He engages an Eminent Disputant. Is in the Good Graces of Cardinal Carpi. Returns to Ascoli when she

The Contents.

the Chapter breaks up. He takes a Pride in his mean Extraction, p. 33. Finding the Provincial to be none of his Friend, he gives way to Passion, and gets Complaints writ to the General against Him, p. 34. The Provincial is made acquainted by the General with what had been said of Him, and finding Montalto at the Bottom of it, sits upon his Skirts. A Commissary is sent to prosecute him. His Accusation. He makes an Ingenious Defence, and protests against their way of proceeding. He is ordered to leave Ascoli in Two Days, p. 35. He resolves to go for Rome and appeal to the General. The News of Paul III's Death puts him by his Design. He betakes himself to the Convent of Recanati, which was appointed him for a Prison. He writes to the Cardinal Protector's Secretary, p. 36. He is ordered to be Lecturer at Macerata, but the Provincial refuses him. This Affront rais'd his Spleen, and put him upon Thoughts of Going out of the Province, p. 37. He makes some Steps towards setting Matters right with the Provincial. At the Protector's Request the General gives him the Regency of Sienna. He Preaches the Lent-Course there with great Applause, p. 38. He assists at the Provincial Chapter. Preaches at Camerino. Returns to Sienna to Read there. He contracts a Friendship with Mendoza. Great Disturbances at Sienna, p. 39. He is recall'd to Rome. Preaches there during Lent, in the Apostles Convent, p. 40. A troublesome Business falls out. He gives great Satisfaction to the Commissary of the Holy Office, p. 41. Is sent Preacher to Perugia, p. 42. Goes Regent to the Convent of Saint Laurence in Naples, p. 43. He gets a Letter of Recommendation to Cardinal Paccoco. Mary is Queen of England. He Preaches in St. Laurence's Church, p. 44. He exasperates the People of Naples, and they persecute him violently. He goes from thence like a Vagabond, and comes to Rome, p. 45. The Abbot Colono is his Pupil, p. 46. He goes Lent-Preacher to Genoa, p. 47. One Sermon gets him a vast Reputation. He is advis'd to Print it, p. 49. He has his Choice given him where he will be Regent, and pitches upon Venice, p. 50. The New Pope makes him Inquisitor General, p. 51.

The Contents.

The THIRD BOOK:

MONTALTO sets out for Venice. Is chosen Commissary General at Bologna, p. 52. Falls out with the Count de Pepoli. He makes up some Differences between the Brothers of the Convent of Bologna, and continues his Journey to Venice, p. 53. The Venetians Quick-sighted enough to discover the Designs of the Holy See. The first Difficulty he met with at Venice, p. 54. The Brothers don't like Him, p. 55. They bring him into great Perplexity. He falls upon a Doctor of Divinity of his own Order, who had done great Services for the Republick, p. 56. The Plague breaks all Commerce at Venice. All Courts of Judicature are shut up. Montalto suffer'd a great deal at that time. Father Ghislieri is made Cardinal. Montalto overjoy'd at the News. He writes to him, and receives a very obliging Answer, p. 57. This New Cardinal takes up the Title of Alexandria, and the Pope names him to be Chief Inquisitor, p. 58. Montalto receives Orders to prosecute the Booksellers who sell prohibited Books. The Senate disapproves of it, p. 59. The Nuncio endeavours to make up the Business. He finds fault with Montalto for being too severe. Strict Orders of the Pope concerning Brothers that go out of their Convents, p. 60. Montalto shews these Orders to the Senate. The Senate's Answer upon the Point, p. 61. The General sends him a Commission to be President at a Chapter. A Provincial is chose there against his Inclination. Which is a Mortification to him, p. 62. The Death of Paul IV. puts Montalto in a Fright. In the Vacancy of the Holy See He takes a Journey to Rome for fear of falling into Disgrace at Venice, p. 63. He falls in with some German Gentlemen upon the Road. The Ministers of the Holy Office are not well pleas'd at his coming back, p. 64. He expects to be made Provincial of the Marquisate, but another carries it from him, p. 66. The Death of a great many Considerable Persons in the Year 1559. Montalto returns to Venice by the New Pope's Order,

The Contents.

Order, p. 67. The Venetians being inform'd of his coming, do what they can with the Pope to prevent it. He begins again with his usual Severity. Uses some Monks very hardly. He seizes up a Libel against the Senate, then slips away from Venice and escapes a great Danger by it. The Senate gives Orders to have him pursued, p. 70. At his Return to Rome He is made Consultor of the Holy Office. The Brothers refuse him Commons, and indeed a Lodging in the Convent, p. 71. Sentence pronounc'd upon the Caraffas, and the Execution of it. Montalto is assistant to one of 'em at his Death, p. 73. Some Brothers move to have him at a Distance, to get him sent by the Pope to the Council of Trent, but all in vain. He is made Provost General of his Order. The General dies, p. 74. And Cardinal Carpi Prosecutor of the Order, p. 75. He goes to the General Chapter at Florence, where he is deprived of his Place, p. 78. Father Varalo, Præceptor to Cardinal Borromeo, is chose in his Room, p. 82. Strange Accidents at Rome, p. 83. Montalto accompanies the Legate to Spain as Chaplain. A very particular Observation in this Embassy, p. 85. Montalto taken notice of in Spain for his great Ingenuity. The mighty Kindness the Legate has for him, p. 86. He has a Conference with the chief Inquisitor of Spain. The Officers of the Legate's Household grow Jealous of him. He has a great Quarrel with a Gentleman of the Chamber. The Advice My Lord Castagna Nuncio to Spain gives him upon that Occasion, p. 87.

THE FOURTH BOOK.

Cardinal Alexandria chose Pope upon the Death of Pius IV. Montalto rejoices at it, p. 92. The General of the Cordeliers dies. The Provost of the Order puts in to succeed him, p. 93. The Pope denies it him, and sends Montalto the Instruments for it as he was upon the Road from Spain, p. 94. At his Ar-

The Contents.

Arrival he is mighty kindly treated by the Pope, p. 95. He goes to visit several Provinces, p. 97. He undoes some things his Predecessor had done, p. 98. At his Return to Rome he strikes up an intimate Friendship with Cardinal Bonelli the Pope's Nephew, p. 99. He is made Bishop of St. Agatha. The Pope's Reasons for making him a Bishop, p. 102. Afterwards he is made Cardinal, p. 103. The Reasons of his Promotion, p. 104. The Pope makes use of him in several important Affairs, p. 105. He goes on to qualify the Heat of his Natural Temper. Pius V. dies, p. 106. Montalto goes into the Conclave perfectly disinterested, p. 107. Cardinal Buon Campagnon is chose Pope by the Name of Gregory XIII. He takes but little Notice of Montalto, p. 108. The Jubilee at Rome. Works of Piety done by Montalto, p. 109. The Pope resumes the Pension granted him by Pius V. p. 110. He sends for one of his Nephews to Rome who was murder'd there soon after. He forgives the Assassines, and does not prosecute them, p. 112. A Mulcovite Ambassador comes to Rome, p. 113. He will not kiss the Pope's Feet. Montalto sets about persuading him to do it, p. 114. The Grand Master of Malta dies at Rome. Montalto comforts and assists him in his Illness, p. 115. The Calendar reform'd, p. 116. Montalto forced to live upon Charity, p. 118. A strange Accident that puts Rome in Disorder, p. 119. A Promotion of several Cardinals, p. 120. Montalto feigns himself elder and more infirm than really he is. The Cardinal of Austria endeavours to bring him over to the Spanisht Faction. His Answer upon the Matter, p. 121. He converts a Lutheran Baron. He goes to the Apostles Convent to keep his Lent there. Makes a Visit to some Cardinals, whom he entertains with an Account of his great Weakness of Body, as they were at Dinner with Cardinal Saint Sixtus. He faints away twice at Table, p. 123. Makes heavy Complaints of the broken Condition he is reduced to, p. 124. The Pope falls sick and dies, p. 125. His Character, p. 127. Villanies of the Banditti and others. p. 128.

The Contents.

The FIFTH BOOK.

THE Cardinals hold a Consistory after the Death of Gregory. The Spanish Ambassador makes a Harangue, p. 130. The Intrigues and Practices of those who put in for the Papacy. No Thoughts of Montalto, p. 131. His Behaviour upon the Occasion. What the Rest think of him, p. 132. The Cardinals go into the Conclave, 133. A Disturbance happens upon the Cardinal of Aultria's Coming, p. 134. Articles agreed upon and sworn to by all the Cardinals, p. 136. Who they are that pretend to the Popedom. The Practices of some of em to get Cardinal Celsi chose, p. 138. Intrigues in favour of Cardinal Sirleto, p. 139. Farneze opposes him and keeps him out, p. 140. They endeavour to have Savelli elected but in vain, Colono puts him out, p. 141. The Practices of Cardinal della Torre ineffectual, p. 142. The Cardinals d'Este and Alexandria act under-hand for Montalto, and pass their Word one to another. They make Montalto acquainted with their Design, p. 143. The Answer he gives them, p. 144. Discourse amongst the Cardinals that are for Him, p. 145. They conclude to set him up and prepare to take off all the Difficulties that stand in their Way. An Answer to those who suspect him strong and healthful, p. 146. Cardinal Albano excluded, p. 147. The new made Cardinals are gain'd over to Montalto's Party, 150. The Method of bringing over Alterns and Saint Sixtus, p. 151. Montalto's seeming Indifference, p. 152. How prudently he manages the Interests of Princes. His Complacence to every body. He speaks both in Publick and Private of the Obligations he has to Cardinal Alexandria, p. 154. How little Ambition he discovers in the Conclave, p. 155. What Cardinal Saint Sixtus said upon the Matter, p. 156. The Cardinals go out of the Chapel and return immediately, p. 158. The Reasons Cardinal Farneze has for not opposing Montalto tho' he is none of his Friends, p. 159. Some Men of Merit were never so much as nam'd in

The Contents.

the Conclave, p. 160. The way of electing a Pope, p. 163. They come to a Scrutiny and Montalto is choſe, p. 165. The Cardinal Dean tries his Skill to make the Election Null. Montalto's Answer to him. The Maſters of the Ceremonies aſk him if he will accept the Pontificate. His Answer. The ſudden Alteration of his Humour to the Aſtoniſhment of every body, p. 166. The Cardinals repent their Choice before they go out of the Conclave. 167. The Example of Charles V. Particular Remarks upon this Election. What Cardinal de Medicis ſaid of it, p. 168. The new Pope's Answer to the People who come to petition for Juſtice and Plenty. He is for being Crown'd upon the very Day of Election, but is perſuaded off of it. The Cardinals are all ſurprized at his Haſt to reform Abuſes. He is conducted to his Apartment, p. 169. Is deſired to lie down to Reſt. His Answer. His Groom of the Chamber comes to know what He'll have to Supper, p. 170. He invites ſeveral Cardinals. The Diſcourſe he entertains 'em with. They go away not much pleaſed at it, p. 171. Paſquinades at Rome. Orders given for the Coronation of Sixtus, p. 172. How he employs himſelf in the mean time. He ſends for the Governor of Rome, and gives him a ſtrict Charge to adminiſter Juſtice exactly, p. 173. Receives the Ambaſſadors of Japan, p. 174. The Diſcourſe upon their going to Rome. The Occaſion of the Embaſſy, p. 175. The Honour that was done 'em in Spain, p. 177. They accompany the Pope when he goes to take poſſeſſion of St. John de Lateran, p. 180. He treats 'em nobly. He grants great Privileges to the People of Japan at their Requeſt, p. 181. He orders them ſome Money, p. 182. They are waited of with abundance of Reſpect when they Leave Rome. They are made Knights of the Golden Spur. They go to ſee all Italy before they return home, p. 183. Signora Camilla the Pope's Siſter comes to Rome. The Pope longs to ſee her. She comes in to him dreſſ'd like a Princeſs. Some Cardinals wait upon her to the Pope. He is angry to ſee her ſo fine. Orders her to go out of his Palaſe. The Cardinals extremely confounded at it, p. 184. Camilla puts on the Cloths ſhe uſes to wear, and returns to the Pope. Then he ſhews her a great

The Contents.

great deal of Kindness. She goes to live with her Children in the House Sixtus had when he was Cardinal. Her Brother settles a Pension upon her to maintain her handsomely, p. 185.

THE SIXTH BOOK.

SIXTUS when he is crown'd grants a Jubilee. He begins his Pontificate with a great deal of Severity, p. 186. The Prodigious Number of Spies he keeps. He sends particular Instructions to his Nuncios, p. 187. Breaks several Governours, p. 188. Orders a Review of all Causes heard within Ten Years last past. Makes all the Civil Magistrates give an Account of their Behaviour, p. 189. Forbids the Roman Nobility taking unfair Methods to carry Causes in their Friends Behalf, p. 190. He sends Briefs to the Legates of the Ecclesiastical State, p. 192. Prohibits Judicial Astrology. And any body's crying out Long live Pope Sixtus, p. 193. His very Name strikes a Terror throughout all Rome. The Abuses of Confessing when he was Monk. He makes Adultery a Capital Crime, p. 194. The Nobility grow Insolent in the Reign of Gregory. He remedies that. And makes every body pay their Debts, p. 195. He will not give an Act of Grace to Prisoners upon his Coronation-Day, as is usual. He has Four poor Wretches executed at the Beginning of his Pontificate, p. 196. Orders all Bishops to repair to their Diocesses. The State of the Church over-run with Banditti, p. 197. Sixtus takes care to clear his Country of 'em, p. 198. Punishes the Officer that is employ'd to scour the Country. Neighbouring Princes make complaint of Sixtus his too great Severity, p. 199. A strange Thing of a Young Lad condemn'd to die, p. 200. Count Pepoli beheaded at Bologna, p. 201. The Murderers of his Nephew prosecuted, p. 202. The Ceremony of doing Homage for the Kingdom of Naples, when the Pope is presented with a Nag, p. 203. Sixtus expresses some Dislike of it to
the

The Contents.

the Spanish Ambassador, p. 204. The French dis-pleas'd. Their Ambassador forbid to stay at Rome, p. 205. Sixtus excommunicates the King of Navarre, and the Prince of Conde. The King's Proceedings, p. 208. What Queen Elizabeth of England thinks of Sixtus's Government, p. 212. Cardinal Sirleto dies. The Seditious of Naples punished, p. 214. The Pope's Diversion, p. 216. Saint Bonaventure made one of the Doctors of the Church, p. 223. Sixtus says Mass in Gregory's College-Church. The Jesuits invite him to see their House, p. 224. He drives a great Number of Courtesans from Rome. Distributes the City into Fourteen Quarters, p. 225. Forbids Priests and Curates having suspected Women in their Houses, p. 226.

The SEVENTH BOOK.

Sixtus removes the Obelisk that is in the Vatican, p. 228. The Antiquity of this Obelisk and what it's made of, p. 229. A Congregation appointed for this Work. Several Brass Medals struck to be thrown into the Foundation of the Pedestal, p. 230. The Cardinals and Ambassadors ask the Pope's Leave to throw in some with Devices of their own, p. 231. The Charge of removing and setting up this Obelisk. The Duke of Ossona comes to Rome. The Pope gives him several private Audiencies, and is pleas'd with his Company, p. 232. A Dispute between this Duke and Don Pedro de Toledo about some Titles of Honour. The Pope forbids the Cardinals receiving any Letters, if their due Titles are not in the Subscription, p. 233. The City of Cologne distress'd by the Lutherans. The Elector takes a Resolution to quit his Country. Sixtus encourages him to stand upon his Defence. And speaks to the Duke of Parma to assist Him, p. 234. Sends the Abbot Grimani to Flanders with some Presents for him, p. 235. The Ceremony of receiving them in the Camp, p. 236. A Great Cheerfulness in the Army. The Bishop of Vercelli the Pope's Nuncio makes a fine Speech upon occasion of the Presents, They

The Contents.

They are deliver'd by the Abbot Grimani, p. 237. The Pope sends the Arch-Bishop of Naples Envoy to Poland, News of the King of Poland's Death brought to Rome. The Duke d' Ossona leaves Naples. p. 238. The Pope rejoices at it. Margareta of Aultria, Natural Daughter to Charles V. dies. At the Duke of Parma's Desire she has great Honour done her at Rome, p. 239. Sixtus is mightily set upon adorning the City. More Obelisks dug out and set up, p. 240. The Chapel of the Holy Manger built up in St. Mary Major, and Sixtus erects a Monument there for Himself, p. 241. He lays Water to Monte Caballo. The Cistern that receives it and the Inscription, p. 242. The Gallery at St. John de Lateran to bless the People. A Stately Palace built by Sixtus, p. 243. The Holy Ladder removed from under the Ruins of an old Building. An Hospital for the Poor built and endowed. A Statue erected upon Trajan's Pillar, p. 244. The Horses of Phidias and Praxiteles which were decaying, repair'd. Admirable Pieces of Work by those two famous Masters, p. 245. The Palace of Monte Caballo augmented. The Great Care of Sixtus to enlarge his House. New Streets laid out and begun, p. 247. The Pope visits the Palace of the Vatican with an Architect. He makes a Stair-Case there to go to Saint Peter's without stepping abroad, p. 248. St. Jerome's Church upon the little River, p. 249. The Dome of St. Peter's begun and built by Sixtus, p. 250. The Pope's Grandeur and Magnificence. A College built at Bologna for the Inhabitants of the Marquisate, p. 252. A new City is begun at Loretto, which he erects into a Bishoprick, p. 253. Another new City at the Village of Montalto where Sixtus was born. A noble Bridge over the Tyber begun, p. 254. Sixtus brings the River Teveron quite to Rome. The great Convenience of that Work, p. 256. He gives Order for the Militia of the Ecclesiastical State to be under Arms, p. 257. The Jealousy of the Neighbouring Princes upon the Occasion. He builds Gallies. A Congregation of Cardinals appointed for it. The foreign Cardinals take it amiss that they are not of it, p. 259. The Quota furnish'd by the Provinces towards the Work, p. 261. The Ambassadors of the Cantons arrive at Rome,

The Contents.

Rome, and are kindly receiv'd by the Pope. My Lord Santorio sent Nuncio to Switzerland, p. 262. As soon as he comes there he calls a Diet of the Catholick Cantons, p. 263. His Proceedings, p. 265. Fifty Thousand Men Arm for the King of Navarre, p. 267. Fourteen Thousand Switzers engage in the Service of the League at the King of France's Request, p. 268. The Catholicks and Protestants fall out, p. 269. The Duke of Guise is offended and writes to the Pope, p. 270. The Pope complains to the King of France, p. 271. The King's Answer, p. 272. The Protestant Princes send Ambassadors to him in favour of the Huguenots, p. 273. His Reply, p. 274. Sixtus is for purchasing Houses for his Nuncios. The Venetians present him with One, p. 275. He gives them one at Rome. The Project goes no farther, p. 276. Sixtus's extream Justice, p. 279. Another Instance of it, p. 281. He punishes a Poet for Lampooning, p. 283.

THE EIGHTH BOOK.

THE People of Rome highly pleas'd with Sixtus his Government, p. 287. He eats a Dish of Beans with a Convert Brother, p. 288. Holds a General Chapter in the Apostles Convent. Some things that fall out at this Chapter, p. 290. He gives all the Monks, with their General at the Head of 'em, Leave to ask a Favour of him what every one likes best, p. 291. At the Request of One of 'em He orders a Fountain to be made in the Apostle's Convent. And this was all he Granted, p. 295. Congregations of Cardinals establish'd by Sixtus, p. 297. What he thinks of the Death of the Queen of Scots, p. 306. The King of France sends an Ambassador to England. The Pope's Sentiments upon that, p. 307. The People of Rome suspect Sixtus, holds Intelligence with Queen Elizabeth under-hand. The Earl of Leicester's Behaviour about the Queen of Scots Death, who was Queen Elizabeth's Favourite,

The Contents.

voarite, p. 313. *The Duke of Parma imprison'd by Sixtus. Cardinal Farneze in a great Vexation about it,* p. 314. *He gets the Duke of Parma set at Liberty,* p. 315. *The Pope falls sick, but will do Business in his Illness,* p. 316. *Some Remarkable Sayings of his upon the Occasion. He reprimands the Physician that touch'd the End of his Nose. Two Gentlemen executed by his Order,* p. 317. *Some Prelates whom he confided in severely punish'd. Their being in Disgrace put the People of Rome in a great Consternation,* p. 318. *Francis de Medicis Great Duke of Tuscany dies,* p. 319. *Ferdinand de Medicis renounces his Cardinalship. The King of Poland dies,* p. 320. *His Character. Who pretended to succeed him,* p. 321. *Sixtus interests himself in the choice of a new King. The Electors are divided,* p. 324. *A War ensues,* p. 326. *Maximilian of Austria is made Prisoner,* p. 328. *Which is a great Mortification to the Pope. He resolves to do his utmost to get him set free. He sends the Duke de Guise Head of the League a fine Sword for a Present. The Ceremony of receiving it. The King of France grows Jealous upon the Matter. Sixtus writes to the King of France about the Affairs of his Kingdom,* p. 329. *The Letter is shewn to the Council. The Answer of one of the Protestant Councillors. Satyrs made upon the Pope and sung about by the Protestants. The Pope is angry with the King for shewing the Letter to his Ministers. And promises He'll never write to him more,* p. 330. *The Pope's Reflections upon the King's Reasons. The Regal Authority weakned by the Civil Wars. Great Disturbances occasion'd thereby all Christendom over. Sixtus is heartily vexed to see the Regal Authority going down. Theodore Beza labours to unite the Switzers, that they may send Relief to the King of Navarre,* p. 331. *Some Prelates advise the Pope to get Beza taken off,* p. 331.

The NINTH BOOK.

THE Duke of Savoy sends an Ambassador to Rome. He desires the Pope's Assistance to take Geneva. His Holiness has a Conference with Faber about it, p.

The Contents.

332. *The Duke in great wrath at the Pope's refusing him. The Reasons Sixtus had to deny him, p. 333. The King of Spain's Armada against England. William Allen made Cardinal, p. 334. Sixtus takes a Journey to Civita Vecchia. The Elector of Cologn entreats the Pope's Assistance, p. 336. The Pope writes to Philip II. to comfort him, p. 337. That Prince's Answer, p. 338. His Great Soul, p. 339. The Canonization of Saint Didace, p. 341. A Dispute between the French and Spanish Ambassadors for Precedency. Another Dispute between the Regulars upon the same Score, p. 344. The Pope puts an End to it, p. 346. Works of Piety done by His Holiness. He assigns Three Thousand Crowns a Year for the Redemption of Christian Slaves, p. 347. The Respect and Veneration he has for Virgins, p. 347. He punishes some Insolent Fellows very severely for attempting to debauch a Wench, p. 348. A Youngster very hardly used for kissing a Young Gentlewoman he had a mind to Marry, p. 350. A Footman's Punishment for blowing out a Maid's Candle, p. 352. The Feast of Saint Francis de Paulo and some other Saints Instituted. The Pope much concern'd to extend the Pontifical Authority. Maximilian of Austria set at Liberty by Mediation of Cardinal Aldobrandine, sent Legate into Poland, p. 354. His Conduct in that Negotiation, p. 355. He returns to Rome, p. 356. Gives an Account of his Journey in the Palace of S. John de Lateran, p. 357. How kindly he is receiv'd by the Pope. Sixtus builds the Library of the Vatican. The Great Theater of Belvedor, p. 358. The Length of the Room where the Books are. The most considerable Actions of the Pope are represented in Painting by the most eminent Hands, p. 359. A particular Room for the Manuscripts. All the General Councils described in Painting within the Library, p. 359. The prodigious Number of Books and Manuscripts, p. 368. A Printing-House set up by Sixtus, p. 369.*

The Contents.

The TENTH BOOK.

THE King of France resolves to rid his Hands of the Duke of Guise and the Cardinal his Brother. Discourse between the King and the Legate. The Pope's Sentiments upon the Duke's Death, p. 370. The King sends Gondy to Rome to appease the Pope, p. 375. The Arguments used by the Marquis de Pisani to sweeten up His Holiness, p. 376. Sixtus speaks in the Consistory of the Murther of the Cardinal in a violent Passion, p. 377. Appoints a Congregation to consider the Affair, p. 380. The Bishop of Mans is sent to Rome, p. 380. Sixtus excommunicates King Henry III. p. 382. Who is afterwards assassinated by a Jacobine, p. 383. This Prince's singular Piety at his Death. Sixtus sends Cardinal Cajetan to France, p. 387. The remarkable Siege of Paris. The Pope refuses to assist the League against Henry IV. His Reasons for so doing, p. 385. The secret Orders given to Cardinal Cajetan, p. 389. Henry IV. acknowledg'd King of France. The Venetian Ambassador salutes him as such, p. 390. The Nuncio Resident at Venice, being offended at what their Ambassador had done, returns to Rome. Sixtus sends him back again, p. 391. The Pope under-hand does his Endeavour to get Henry Crown'd. An Understanding between the French and Venetians about the Affairs of France, p. 392. His Holiness's Way of Living, p. 393. His Exactness in doing Justice, p. 394. The Liberty the People enjoy at Carnavall time, and the Reasons upon which Sixtus indulged them in it. His indefatigable Application to Business, p. 395. His Affection to his Family, p. 397. The Opinion he has of his Successor, p. 398. His Inclination to hoard up Money, p. 399. Great Scarcity in the Ecclesiastical State during his Pontificate. His Methods to establish Plenty, p. 401. How much the Church is beholding to him, p. 402. He fixes the Number of Cardinals, p. 403. Goes to Tarracino, p. 405. Falls sick, p. 406. An Account of his Distemper, p. 407. His

The Contents.

His Death, p. 408. *The Common Chat about his Death*, it's laid upon the Ill Will the Spaniards bore him, 409. *His Body is carried to St. Peter's. The Rage of the Mob who pulled down his Statue. The Senate decrees no Pope's Statue shall be set up for the future in his Life-time*, p. 411.

ERRATA.

PAGE 24. Line 22. read *Were*. p. 25. l. 12. r. *Was*.
p. 30. l. 28. r. *Off*. p. 42. l. 18. r. *Pius*. p. 54.
l. 22. r. *Coadjutor*. p. 58. l. 27. r. *Bringing*. p. 126.
l. 21. r. *Spending*. p. 140. l. 21. r. *Fallions*. p. 142.
l. 26. Insert (it) *Infirm it was*. p. 144. l. 33. f. from r. *Of*.
p. 163. l. 36. r. *Written*. p. 176. l. 17. r. *Sirnamed*.
p. 181. l. 25. f. *design'd* r. *deign'd*. p. 209. l. 36. after *Ob-*
jected, Insert, *to*. p. 217. l. 28. f. *you* r. *your*. p. 221.
l. 18. f. 1664. r. 1564. p. 236. l. 23. r. *Battalia*. p.
243. l. 3. dele, *that*. p. 246. l. 5. r. *Work*. p. 304.
l. 10. r. *Go*. p. 308. l. 2. f. *less* r. *more*. p. 317. l. 12.
r. *Physician*. p. 333. l. 34. f. *was* r. *were*. p. 338. l. 22.
r. *entreated*. p. 346. l. 15. after *both* Insert *of*.

THE
L I F E
O F
Pope *SIXTUS*. V.

BOOK I.

P OPE *SIXTUS* was Born at a Town call'd *the Grottos*, in the Marquisate of *Ancona*. 'Tis a Place Inhabited by Seven or Eight Hundred Persons, Situate in the Signiory of *Montalto*; from whence he took his Title when he was made Cardinal. This Country is wholly Dependant on the Dutchy of *Castro*: tho' the War between the *Barbarini's* and Duke *Edward Farnese*, has strangely Confounded the Fiefs of this Lordship.

His Father *Francis Peretti*, a Native of the Castle of *Farnese*, was forc'd to run his Country upon some unhappy business, which Poverty perhaps would have brought him to, having nothing to trust to but the Sweat of his Brows. He came to *the Grottos*, where he had an Uncle liv'd, to be advis'd by him what Course he should take.

This,

This Uncle put him to a Rich Neighbour in quality of a Vine-dresser, which Employment he follow'd above Six Years; and his Master was so well pleas'd with him, that he Married him to his Maid *Gabana*, from whom he was in Merriment, nick-nam'd the *Gabaneze*.

This Match produc'd Two Sons and a Daughter: The Girl's Name was *Camilla*, of her we shall have occasion to speak hereafter. The Eldest was Born the 13th of *December*, 1521.. And Christned *Felix*; a Name, that suited well with him who should one Day fill the first place in the World. What's very particular, His Godfather and the Curate that Baptiz'd him were both of the same Name. Which made him when he was but a Monk, say among his Friends, *There was a Concourse of Felicity at his Christning*.

It pleas'd him to think he was Born the same Day that the Cardinals upon the Death of *Leo X.* went into the Conclave to Choose a Successor. This was *Adrian VI.* Native of *Utrecht*, a City of *Holland*; from whence a Province of the *Netherlands* has its Name. This Election much Disoblig'd the People of *Rome*: not only that the New Pope was a Stranger to 'em, having spent his time in the Service of the King of *Spain*, but that the Genius of the *Flemish* is vastly different from the *Italians*. However *Adrian* shew'd himself a great States-Man, by his Management of Affairs in a very ticklish time.

There was another Pope Born that same Year, on the Fourth Day of *August*. And that was *John Baptista Castagna*, a *Genoese*, who was immediate Successor to *Sixtus*, by the Name of *Urban VII.* Of him we shall say something as it comes in our way.

I. Pope SIXTUS V.

3

us was Born in the First Year of the Reign of Charles V. And as he was naturally of an Ambitious Spirit, the Flame grew Stronger, when his Fortunes exalted him out of sight of his mean Original. He would often, when the Conquests of this Great Prince were mentioned, say, *Himself had made Advances in his Way as considerable as the Emperour.*

• He 'scaped Twice very narrowly with his life; when he was a Child. The first Time of the Small-pox, at Four Years Old; of which all Italy was Infected, which was generally Mortal to those of his Age. Thro' the Poverty of his Parents, who could not afford him Necessaries, he was in great hazard of being lost. But as he was cut out for something very extraordinary, he was preserv'd in a very extraordinary manner: and came off with only the usual Marks. The Miracle of his Recovery, he would attribute to the Sacred Year of Jubilee, in which it happen'd.

His Second Deliverance was when some Sergeants came to Arrest his Father, for some Misdemeanours. He was so Frighted with the Noise of these terrible Folks, that he run up into an old Rotten House; and the Floor breaking under him, he fell Twenty Foot high upon hard Stones. A Good Woman took him up, and carried him to the next House, and perceiving he was still Alive, sent for a Surgeon to Plaster up his Broken-head, and Set his Legs and Arms, which were all of 'em Broke too. This Mischance however was a propos to his Father, who got clear of the Sergeants, that were surpriz'd at the Accident.

It was fear'd he would be a Cripple as long as he lived, but at length a perfect Cure was wrought, and the hopes of the Family restor'd.

He talk'd of this Fall when a Discourse of
of *Rome's* being Taken by the Emperor
in Breach of his Word, first given to the
They spared nothing that was Sacred, the
nour of the Ladies, as well as the Respe^c
to Christ's Vicar, was Trampled under the
Feet. *Clement VII.* was Besieg'd and made Pri
soner in the Castle of *St. Angelo*, where, with
many of his Cardinals, he thought to be free
from the Fury of the *Germans*, but was forc'd
to Purchase his Liberty with a good Sum. U
on which *Felix* would say Merrily, *Our Holy*
was Pillag'd by the Sergeants the same Year that
Rome was Sack'd, but we lost less than those of Rome,
because we had less to lose.

His Father and Mother were very desirous
make a Scholar of him; and they that observ'd
his sprightly Parts, said, 'twas pity those Endow
ments should be neglected, which Nature had so
liberally furnish'd. At Nine Years Old, his Fa
ther willing to get a Charge off his hands, put
him out to a rich Farmer, to keep his Sheep.
His Genius made him look higher, however he
submitted to the Employment. But his Master
distrusting his Abilities for that business, set h
to keep his Hogs. 'Twas a Mortification to
converse with these nasty Animals, and might
at length have driven him to despair, if the
happy Hour had not come that deliver'd him
in an unexpected manner.

Naturally he lov'd to see a Gentleman, and
particularly if a Priest or Monk came by, he
run to him and made his Honours accord
ing to the best of his Breeding. It was now
that Fortune turn'd about in his Favour, in *Fe*
bruary, 1531. when all *Italy* was got to *Bolog*
na, to see the Coronation of the Emperor
Charles, by the Hands of *Clement VII.* This Ce
rensony

ny was perform'd the 24th of the same
 which that Prince look'd upon as his
 Day.

There was a Monk *Michael Angelo Selleri*, a Monk of the
 of *St. Francis*, was going to *Ascoli*, a con-
 venient Town in the Marquisate, to Preach there
 during Lent. He lost his Way hard by *the Grottos*,
 and coming to a Place where Two Roads meet,
 was looking about for some body to set him right.

A Little *Felix* with his Drove was just by. As
 soon as he saw the Monk, he run to him, made
 his scrape and offer'd his Service. The good
 Father was glad of his help, and ask'd the way
 to *Ascoli*. The Youngster told him he wou'd
 shew him thither, and run before him so briskly,
 that, every time he turn'd his head to listen to
 what the Father said to him, his Air charm'd
 the good Man, who thought 'twas pity such a
 Boy should keep Hogs.

Father *Michael* having found his Road, thank'd
Felix, and would have sent him back: But the
 Boy would not hear him, which made the Father,
 smiling, ask if he had a mind to go to Town
 with him. Yes Sir, says he, with all my heart,
 not only to *Ascoli*, but as far as you please. And
 then told him, how his Parents Poverty had de-
 feated his Inclination to Learning. That of all
 things, he wish'd to be taken into the Service of
 some Monk, and would be very diligent, if he
 might have opportunity of improving himself.

The Father to try his zeal, ask'd, If he was
 willing to put on the Habit of his Order. *Felix*,
 who spoke from the bottom of his heart, made
 no difficulty to shew his desire of it. The other
 told him the Austerities of a Religious Life, and
 gave a dismal Prospect of the Mortifications they
 go through. But he was far from being discour-
 aged, and made Answer, *He had Patience enough*

to endure 'em all, tho' as painful as Purgato
it shew'd him but the way to Learning.

The good Man surpriz'd at the resolu
the Boy thought there must be something
than ordinary in it; and since the Call w
apparent, determined to take *Felix* with him
but bid him first drive home his Hogs, and fol
low him to the Convent of *St. Francis of Ascoli*.
The Spark fearing his mind might alter, thought it
best to lose no time, and accordingly told him, His
Cattel us'd to go home by themselves when Night
came on. And keeping on their way they arriv'd
in the Evening at the Monastery of the *Cordeliers*.

The Fraternity received this Reverend Prea
cher with abundance of Respect, but some of 'em
wondred to see a Boy at his heels so meanly Cloth
ed. When he had related the manner of picking
up *Felix*, and the eagerness he shew'd to follow
him, the Warden had the curiosity to see him,
and examine him. So Surprizing were his An
swers to what was ask'd him, that the Warden
found more in him than Father *Michael* had re
presented.

The Questions that were put to him before so
much Company would have daunted one of a
greater Age, tho' prepared for it. But *Felix*
without any confusion, made his Answers, and
with such an Air of Simplicity as none could suspect,
a Trick. He labour'd to persuade 'em of his
Vocation, and the Inclination he had to become
a great Preacher, if any body would bring him up
a Scholar.

The whole Community looking upon this desire
of his so much above his Years and Birth to be
an Intimation of Providence, entreated the Warden
not to neglect his Vocation for with the Assi
stance they intended him, he might come to
be the greatest Man of their Order.

The Warden having the same Thoughts of
 as the rest had, sent the next Day one of
 others to the Village of *the Grotto*, to en-
 after *Felix*. His Parents who had been
 rn'd for the Loss of him, were glad to hear
 he was; and willingly consented to his pur-
 pose of being Consecrated to God in a Cloyster.
 So the Family was eas'd of the charge and care
 of his Education: And there were still Two up-
 on their hands, a Girl, nam'd *Camilla*, Eight Years
 of Age, and *Anthony*, an Infant in the Cradle.

The Warden receiving his Father's Answer,
 by consent of the Community gave *Felix* the Ha-
 bit of a Convert-Brother: whose Father hearing
 the news was over-joy'd, and thank'd God his
 Son had obtain'd his wish. *Michael Angelo* was
 at the Charge of his Habit, and whatever else he
 was in want of.

This Father desired of the Warden he might
 have Brother *Felix* to wait on him in his Cham-
 ber: to which the Warden agreed, considering
 the obligation this New Convert had to him, and
 that a Preacher is always well serv'd.

He was mighty diligent and thankful all *Lent*,
 and *Michael Angelo* employ'd what Time he
 could spare to Teach him. His Memory was so
 prodigious, he would repeat at Night the Sermon
 he had heard in the Morning, with the Empha-
 sis and Gestures it was deliver'd in. His Master
 sometimes invited the Warden and some of the
 old Monks to his Chamber, and gave them the
 satisfaction of hearing him. They admir'd the
 Memory and Quickness of *Felix*, which presaged
 great things.

His Genius for Learning was so remarkable,
 that before he knew his Letters, he was constant-
 ly poring in the Books that lay upon the Preach-
 er's Table. He was always so hard at it, one

would have sworn he had understood 'em. He put Father *Angelo* upon teaching him to Read, which he advanc'd so fast, that before *Le* out; he could read any thing in the vulgar language. And when he saw any of the Monks would run to him and entreat him to hear a Lesson.

Father *Angelo* upon his return to *Rome* after Easter, was thinking to take Brother *Felix* with him: and might have had the Warden's consent. But for some reasons he resolv'd to leave him at *Ascoli*, recommending him to the Warden's care and the chief Monks of the House.

The Warden appointed Brother *Felix* to assist the Chapel-Clerk; he was to sweep the Chappel light the Candles, and some such things. The Clerk was order'd to teach him to make the responses at Mass, and Instruct him in his Accidence: who having taught him as far as he knew of Grammar, confess'd to the Warden, *Felix* was ready for a better Master. He was then sent to a Monk that was a good Grammarian, with whom he made a progress accordingly.

The Chapter having appointed a new Warden of the Convent of *Ascoli*, call'd Father *Fabricin* of *Ancona* an odd humour'd Man, the Officers of the House were all chang'd, and a great many of the Monks sent away; and amongst the rest, Brother *Felix* was to be sent home to his Father.

This design griev'd the whole Community who begged the Warden would let him stay. They told him, they were mightily pleas'd with his Behaviour, and that he was very useful to the House. The Adventure of the Monk that brought him was related, but all in vain; the Warden said he was an unnecessary Mouth, and allow'd him but a week to provide himself,

Before the time was expired, the Provincial of good Fortune came to *Ascoli*. The Chief of the Convent upon the very Night he arriv'd, inform'd him of the resolution of their Prior; who was about to turn out a poor Child, call'd *Felix*, from Religion, that gave great hopes he would prove an Honour to the profession of St. *Francis*. They related too the extraordinary Marks of his Vocation. The Provincial was so pleas'd with the account, that he had a mind to see Brother *Felix*; and was so taken with his ingenious Answers to the Questions he made him that from thence forward he conceiv'd a strong Friendship for him. He gave Orders to the Warden not only to keep him there as a Convert Brother, but forbid he should be put to any servile work. And gave it in charge to a Batchelour of the House to instruct him in Humane Learning.

The Warden tho' he durst not disobey the Provincial, found ways and means to exercise the Patience of poor *Felix*, which was the first of his troubles he met with in the Cloyster.

Yet this Warden at the point of leaving his charge reflected on the rigour he had us'd toward him, and charm'd with his patient and submissive behaviour, took the best care to advance him, and admired the progress he made.

In *May* 1533. when the Pope was at *Marseilles*, to have an Interview with the K. of *France*, there was held a new Provincial Chapter, in which Father *Augustin de Fermo*, Dr. of Divinity, was chose Warden of *Ascoli*, in the room of Father *Fabricius*. This Gentleman had a Natural Affection to those that were Bookishly inclin'd, particularly, if he observ'd a good nature go with it. Father *Michael Angelo* who was his intimate Friend, had given him an account of *Felix* at *Macerata*, where they met together at a Chapter, As soon as he came

came to *Ascoli*, he declar'd he would take care of *Felix's* Studies, as well out of the respect he had to Father *Angelo*, as for the Young Man's desire who made it his business to obtain the Esteem of the principal Monks: the most rigid of which had nothing to reproach him with, except he had too much Quick-silver.

At the end of Two Years, which he spent in this House he had made so great a Progress, as to understand any *Latin* Author, and render it *extempore* in *Latin* of his own. He made those that went to Philosophy Lectures with him frequently blush to be out-shined by his abilities and diligence. Which the Regent that read to 'em admired as well as they.

The Prior who would have the honour of devoting him entirely to Religion, resolv'd to give him the Capuche and make him Brother of the Choir. He communicated his design in a full Chapter, and with great zeal, represented to the Community how fit it was to receive into the Noviciate, a person so hopeful, one that would hereafter be a Glory to their Order.

The Monks in general receiv'd the Proposal with Joy, and were for executing it presently, that he might be engaged to double his diligence in his Studies. The Chapter sent for him to know if it was what he himself desired, to which he made Answer, It was the greatest honour he was capable of, to put on the Habit of *St. Francis*: And gave the Warden and the Monks his thanks for the Favour they did him.

The Provincial's Leave being requisite, The Warden took care to obtain it. He gave notice to the Chapter, and a Day was appointed for *Felix* to put on his Habit: And the Warden to show all possible Proofs of his Affection

Felix, gave him the Liberty of going to see his Father and Mother at *the Grotto*, and ask for a Blessing.

Some Days after, he receiv'd his Habit in the Church from the Warden's own hand; who gave him at the same time an Order (which they call an *Obedience*,) to make his Noviciate in the same house. This he thought preferable to that of *Macerata*, (tho' the Provincial had given him his choice) because there was in the first, a Master of the Novices, an extraordinary Man. So he was received the 25th of September, 1534. into the Order of the Monks of the Foundation.

The Warden design'd to make him his Creature, and to give him the name of *Augustin*: as it is common for the Novices to change their Christen'd Name, if they are not fond of it. Some advis'd *Felix* to take the name of *Michael Angelo*, in acknowledgement of the Obligation he was under to that Gentleman. Others would have had him call'd *Francis* in Honour of their Founder. But he desired the Warden, he might retain his own, and accordingly was call'd Brother *Felix*, a presage of the Fortune that ever attended him.

He took his Habit the same day of the Week he was Born, the same that *Clement VII.* died. And the News coming to *Ascoli*, the Warden, smiling, said to him, You are Born to Religion the same Day the Pope is dead to the world: To which *Felix* made Answer, 'Tis a greater joy to me, wearing the Habit of St. *Francis*, than to be Pope my self. The Warden pleas'd with his reply, said, *Such Timber would invite a Workman.*

He Studied with abundance of Application the Year of his Noviciate, as much from his own

Inclination as the Advice of the Society, perceiv'd him Born for Letters. So well he employ'd his time that he Read and Wrote Latin as easily as Italian. It must be confest, Nature had been extremely generous in the Capacity she gave him for Learning, it was attended with a blind side, which he found much to manage. He was too forward and apprehensive of Affronts and Injuries, which made his Fellow Students dislike and reflect upon him.

There will be sometimes a Jealousie amongst the Brothers, and some of 'em begun to talk of the Disparagement of *Felix*: Upon which the Warden, who had a kindness for him, took him aside and told him how much it was his Interest to pass by these Trifles; that he might stand fair in the Favour of the Monks, and get to be Profess'd. He follow'd this direction so well, as to take no farther Notice of what any body said. And was Profess'd the 1st of November, 1535. by consent of the whole Community, tho' as yet but Fourteen Years Old.

This Year was Remarkable for England's Divorce from the Church. King *Henry VIII.* not being able to obtain a Brief from *Paul III.* Successor of *Clement VII.* to put away his Wife, *Catharine of Spain*, the Daughter of King *Ferdinand*: And to Marry *Anna Bullen* that he doted upon; was so enrag'd at the Refusal, that he turn'd out *Catharine* by his own Authority, and publicly Married the Other. He Executed several English Lords for Adhering to the Interests of the Pope. And *Wolfey*, Cardinal of *York*, would have come to the same end, if he had not dropt sooner with the Apprehension of it. He made a Law to drive the *Romanists* out of his Dominions, and call'd Himself, *The Head and Chief Prelate of the Church of England.*

While

While Henry was thus employ'd, The Emperour Charles V. laid Siege to Tunis with a Formidable Army, and in a few Days made himself Master of it. He set at Liberty Twenty Thousand Christian Slaves, and return'd to Italy Triumphant, where his Success was Celebrated by Solemn Processions and Prayers, through the Ecclesiastical State. Those of *Ascoli* would do something Extraordinary, because their Bishop had a Brother that serv'd under the Emperour at that Siege: they begun the Solemnity by a Procession to the Cathedral of St. *Francis*, which they had most Magnificently Adorn'd. Brother *Felix* as he was helping the Chappel-Clerk to put up a piece of Tapestry, fell from the Top of a long Ladder: As he got up (to shew where his Thoughts were) he only said, 'Tis a merry business to see his Holiness so Transported with Joy at the Taking of Tunis, in which he has no concern, when he should be in Tears for the Loss of England, which no more owns him for Sovereign Pontiff.

The Brothers remembred with pleasure these Ingenious Reflections, and look'd upon 'em as the Sallies of an extraordinary Genius, at that Age to penetrate Affairs with such a Reach. Tho' the Quickness of his Apprehension cost him dear sometimes, and serv'd to make him uneasy.

The *Anabaptists* had this Year, 1535. got *Munster* into their hands, the Strongest Fortress of *Westphalia*. The Bishop enrag'd at these Rebelious Hereticks, (as well he might be) laid Siege to the Place, and after many Attacks, they were so closely pent up, that for want of other Victuals they were forc'd to eat Cats, Dogs and Mice, and so much as the Skins of these Creatures, and at length to Surrender at Discretion. The

The Bishop did not spare one of 'em, and down the Town about their ears that had got 'em Shelter, while the Inhabitants reduced to Skeletons were not in a condition to make resistance. The Leader of this Rabble, who they had made Governour of the Place, was *John of Leyden*, a Dutchman of mean Extraction, who had formerly been a Hog-herd in *France*. The obscurity of his Birth was no hindrance to his pregnant Parts. The Resolution with which he went about every thing, made him talk'd of all the World over: and he had establish'd a Memory as Glorious as it is now Detestable, if he had put to good use the Talents Nature had furnish'd him.

This was at that time the common Subject of Discourse through all *Italy*, as well as at *Ascoli*. A Batchelor that did not love Brother *Felix*, and took every occasion to mortify him upon the Meanness of his Birth, call'd him and said, *We are talking of one of your Family, John of Leyden, who in his younger Days kept Hogs like you. Felix* disobliged at the Comparison, made Answer, *If John of Leyden and my Self are a-kin, as we have both had to do with Hogs; You that make the Remark seem nearer related to him, being so Hoggish in your Behaviour.*

In the Year 1536. The Provincial resolving to lessen the Number of Monks at *Ascoli*, as the Warden desired, for the convenience of the House, sent an Obedience for Three Students to remove, One of these was Brother *Felix*, who was Order'd to *Macerata*, there to continue his Studies. He left *Ascoli* in *April*, at the same time the Emperor upon his return from the Conquest of *Tunis*, was splendidly Received at *Rome* by the Pope and the Sacred College. Tho' the People had yet a broiling in their Gizzard against

East the Spaniards, that had so lately Pillag'd
 the City, were not over-well pleas'd to see
 the Prince within the Walls. But they assembl'd
 their Disgust as well as his Holiness, and all con-
 tinu'd at length in the Joy.

Brother *Felix* had not spent much time at *Ma-
 cerata*, before Father *Michael Angelo* was nam'd
 Prior of the Convent of *Fermo*, who Petition'd
 the Provincial to place him there. As soon as
 the favour was granted, the Disciple left *Ma-
 cerata* gladly, to come under a Warden, whose
 Friendship and Protection he was well assured
 of.

This made some of the Brothers Jealous of
Felix, not being able to bear so distinguishing
 Favours as were shew'd him. What's most in-
 supportable, was the Authority he would take
 upon himself over them as if he had been their
 Prior. They were very angry and wrote to
 the Provincial complaints against them both : For
 the Warden they Accus'd him of too great Con-
 descensions, as trusting the Keys of the Treasure
 and all the Offices to Brother *Felix* : who rare-
 ly was present at the Exercises of the House,
 and slighted the Advice given him by the chief
 Monks, as to his Conduct. And other things
 they laid before the Provincial ; who remem-
 bring the Earnestness with which the Warden
 desired to have *Felix* there, suspected there was
 something of Truth in it, and therefore Order'd
 him away from *Fermo* in Three Days, and to be-
 come himself to *Recanati*.

The Warden understanding what Offices had
 been done him to the Provincial, thought him-
 self highly Affronted by this Order : which as
 soon as he receives, he goes directly to *Orbin*
 to find the Provincial, endeavours to discourse
 him, and to procure Justice against his Informers.
 But

But the First Story had sunk so deep, as to form a strong prejudice against him. And poor Gentleman could obtain nothing, but was sent back to *Fermo*, sufficiently mortified by a second Precept, directing *Felix* to repair immediately to *Recanati*.

He put on an Air of Detestation against those he took to be Authors of his Remove: And forgetting himself a little, imprudently said, in a great Company of the Monks, *He defy'd all those that bore him Ill-will*. They took care to inform the Prior of *Recanati* of these Speeches; to prejudice him against *Felix*: which so far prevail'd, as to procure him but a cool reception. He was look'd upon for some time but untowardly: But taking pains by all Methods to make himself acceptable, his Diligence at length overbore their malicious preventions, and set him fair in the Warden's good opinion, till at length he entirely gain'd his Friendship.

The Cardinal Legate had fix'd an Interview between the Pope, the Emperor, and King *Francis I.* The Place agreed upon was *Nice*, a Town of *Provence*, but belonging to the Duke of *Savoy*. They had also Reform'd their Train, because the smallness of the Place would not admit a great Retinue. It was in *May*, 1538. Whatever the Pope could do, tho' he made this Journey, which considering his great Age, and the distance of *Nice*, was very much; he could not prevail upon these Two Great Princes to see one another in his Presence. They waited on him separately at a Village near *Nice*; and after he had for some Days treated with each of them, he return'd much displeas'd at them both. He took the Way of *Genoa*, where Embarquing, he came by *Turkey*, and Arriv'd at *Sienna* the 15 of *July*.

All the Towns in *Italy* were left empty, so great was the Concourse to see the Pope in his Journey. The Warden of *Recanati*, taking under the same Curiosity, went three Days Journey with some of his Monks. And order'd the Carter, whom he took with him, to leave the Key of his Office with Brother *Felix*, as the Person the most Trusty, and the best Manager of 'em all.

This Administr'd an occasion of observing the Humour of *Felix*, inclin'd rather to Govern than Obey. The Brothers thought in the Warden's Absence to take a little more Liberty than Ordinary. To have some small Entertainments, which they did not imagine *Felix* would be against, but rather help 'em to all they desired. But they reckon'd without their Host. The new Steward instead of exceeding retrench'd their ordinary Commons. What he spar'd out of one Meal serv'd for the next, so that he had in Bank above Ten Crowns sav'd out of their Allowance in the Three Weeks the Warden was away: who at his return was as well pleas'd with this thrifty Course, as the Monks that were Sufferers were discontented.

The Vice-President demanded of him the Key of the Office, and order'd him to keep his Chamber; which he refus'd to obey him in: having receiv'd the Key from the Prior, he would deliver it to no body else. He stood so firmly to his Tackle, as to argue them out of their design to confine him to his Cell. This Affront rais'd his Spleen against Mr. Vice-President, and when he met him he could not forbear saying, *When he came to be Pope this Mortification he had caus'd him shou'd not be forgotten: That, says t'other, is a likely business.*

When he had spent a Year and half at *Recanati*, the Provincial sent him to *Antona*, it was 1539. Whither he came in *November*. The Regent under whom he was to Study, was acquainted with him at *Macerata*, and knew of how much he was capable: He caressed him highly, and offered him the honour of keeping a Philosophy Act: In three *Months* he was provided for it, and disputed Publicly in the Church of the Convent, before several Persons of Quality and Eminent Monks of all Orders.

A Bachelor that was a Dominican, a good Philosopher, who opposed him, stood amazed at his quickness, and to see him so readily repeat his Arguments and explain 'em. He embraced him with great satisfaction, and said to the Regent: *This Young Man will come to great Perfection, or I am much deceiv'd.*

The Fame of this Disputation run about the Town, and every body talked of his great Performance. The Dominican was so charmed with him, he could speak of nothing else: which brought abundance of Monks, to see him, under pretence of visiting the Convent. They return'd infinitely pleased with his Conversation, and found him rather more deserving than Report had set him out.

When he fell into company with other Monks at processions or obsequies, he always engaged one or other. And disputed so cleverly, That the Doctors of Divinity who generally despise such youthfull exercises, were invited to accept the Challenges he made 'em in Philosophy, in which he was as well skilled as any of them.

His Companions, envy'd his growing Reputation which so far out-stript them, and did what they cou'd to weaken it. Saying he was proud
and

and conceited; and complained to the Warden and their Regent, of the Importunity with which he drew them to Dispute. But this wrought a contrary Effect, they were sent back with this Answer, That if they deserved so well as *Felix*, they would not be so envious against him.

He slighted these attempts of the Students as long as he got the Esteem of their Betters. The former, were never in company with him if they cou'd help it, not loving to be out-shined and stand mute before him. These Heart-burnings increasing daily created him good store of uneasiness: For going on his way he wou'd not mind what they said to him; but took pleasure to ask 'em with an Air of Contempt, If they wou'd dispute with him; which put 'em upon contriving methods of Revenge.

If he wanted any thing that was within their reach; they'd be sure to make him fetch it, and threw the door in his Face when he was going in to 'em, and such sort of country malice: Nor cou'd their Superiours make 'em more civil tho' they punished some of 'em.

They agreed, whoever met him shou'd put him in mind of his Original, so the end they might (they said) subdue his Vanity by letting him see from what he came.

Tho' Brother *Felix*, did not lay much to heart the meanness of his Birth, yet to hear of it so often cou'd not but ruffle him a little. He made complaint to the Warden who forbid the Students to reproach him any more, threatening to show his Authority if they did: For some time they stobd in awe of this. But the Provincial in the course of his Visitation coming to *Ancona*, at the end of the Year 1540, they returned to their old

practice of laughing at *Felix*, for his Coat of Arms. The Provincial finding there was like to be no agreement among the Students, ordered three of 'em to remove, of which Poor *Felix* was one, and sent 'em to compleat their Studies at *Osino*.

Tho' the Obedience run for their going in Three Days, yet he obtain'd respite for a Month, to the great Mortification of the other Two, who were forc'd to pack off in Two Days. The desire he had to be Opponent at the Publick disputation, that was shortly to be, made him entreat the Regent to procure the Provincial's leave for so long stay. This Exercise was to be perform'd in the house of the Regular Priests call'd Jesuits; a Society Founded by *Ignatius Loyola*, a *Spanish* Gentleman, and confirm'd this year by *Paul III*. This Ceremony was perform'd at *Ancona*, upon account of Two Famous Monks, of this new Order, Natives of the Place: One of which knowing the Merit and Capacity of *Felix*, desired him to oppose one of his Scholars, which he did one Day in Christmas, which was the time fixed to Solemnize the Confirmation of their Society.

Before the Month of Grace was out, he obtain'd Letters of Recommendation to the Provincial, that he might be allowed to continue at *Ancona* till the Spring: But no favour cou'd be had for more than Eight Days. He must be gone by the end of *January* 1541. He took the Journey in company of a Preacher who had a Misfortune to that Country, and was sadly fatigued by Ill way and weather: but his patience held out Nobly.

The Prior of *Osino*, who was his Country-man, receiv'd him kindly, gave him Clothes to shift his own, which were wet and dirty with Travelling,

velling, and recommended him to his new Regent who had a great mind to see him, upon the Good and the Ill he had heard of him. For at the same time he was cry'd up for a Young Man that promis'd very well, he was also said to be obstinate and affected. But he clear'd himself in a little time, and gain'd the good opinion of all that were prejudic'd against him: He carried himself so obligingly, and was so ready to serve ~~up~~, as won their esteem and acknowledgments. They encourag'd him to apply himself heartily to his Studies, assuring him he would make one of the Greatest Men of their Order.

Amongst other things that went according to his mind in this House, the opportunity of seeing the Pope and the Emperor, was none of the least. And thus it happen'd.

The Diet of *Ratisbon* being up, and the Emperor resolving to execute his design upon *Algiers*, was to pass through *Germany* into *Italy*, and by the way, gave the Pope a Meeting at *Lucca*. They were to confer upon several Important Affairs, but chiefly about calling a Council which his Holiness was mighty desirous of, and which was the reason of his moving for this Interview.

Leaving at *Rome* Cardinal *Rodolphus Pius*, of *Carpi*, Protector of the Order of *St. Francis*, in Quality of Legate, he set out in *July* for *Lucca*, against the opinion of his Physicians, and the greatest part of the Cardinals, who would not have had him take the Journey by reason of his great Age. But his Holiness preferring the Publick Good to his own Health and Ease, set out and arriv'd Five Days after the Emperor, who went out to meet him, and gave him Five Visits for one that his Holiness made him.

The Warden having notice of this, from a Brother he had with the Pope, who desired extremely to see him at *Lucca*, was as eager to be there himself. As soon as his Intention was known, all the Brothers put up for the honour of being taken as his Companion, and doubled their diligence to recommend themselves to his Favour. Brother *Felix* carried it, either upon the earnest Entreaties he made, or the strength of the Reasons he offer'd, or the Warden's inclination to gratifie him. This transported him beyond measure, so exactly suiting his natural Inclination to see Great Persons, which from his Childhood was very strong.

The Brothers anger at the Prior was also directed at *Felix*, and they look'd upon him with contempt, saying, *There's a pretty Fellow to go to see the Pope!* To which he pleasantly made Answer, *I go to see how it is to be Pope, and whether it will suit with my constitution.*

They staid at *Lucca* but Three Days, Lodgings were so hard to be got. In which time Brother *Felix* (such a penetrating wit he had) div'd into the designs of the Prelates and other Noblemen that compos'd the Pope's Court. He enter'd so far into their conduct, that whoever heard his account of the matter, would already have concluded him born for the Triple-Crown. One Day above all the rest being at Table with the Warden and his Companion, he ask'd them so many Questions about the Pope, that the Gentlemen could not forbear saying with a Smile, *I really believe You have a mind to be Pope.* To which he Answer'd as Merrily: *I am too young yet: but if Providence should advance me to that Dignity, I should have the heart to accept the offer, in hopes the same Providence would not forsake me.*

At his return, One of the Batchelors seeing him in the Warden's Chamber, with several of the Monks, made him a low Bow, and taking him by the Arm, said in contempt; *Your smell mighty strong of the Pope since you saw him.* To which he replied in the same Tone; *If you are so much displeas'd that I have seen the Pope, how will you look when I am Pope my self?*

 The SECOND BOOK.

THE Infidels this Year, 1541. made themselves Masters of that part of *Hungary* which the Christians were possess'd of after the Death of King *John*, upon which ensued a Bloody War between the Emperor *Ferdinand*, and *Solyman* the Grand Seignior. On the other side, King *Francis I.* revived the severe Edicts publish'd against the Protestants, 1534. These things fell out the more unhappily, that the Emperor was engag'd with the *Algerines*, against which place he went, contrary to his Holiness's Advice, in the worst time of the Year, His Ships were broken to pieces in a Storm, which had been a Terror to the coast of *Africa*. But the Moors took courage upon this disaster and Massacred every Man that was saved upon their shore. The Emperour return'd to *Spain*, mortified with the miscarriage so much beside his expectation and contrary to his former Successes.

Notwithstanding these miseries which afflicted *Christendom*, there was yet some disorders amongst the Men of Religion. Amongst the rest in *Romania*, where a Servitor Monk upon some disgust at his Superior, Apostatiz'd and endeavour'd to seduce others, and carry 'em into *France*, where he hoped to find more of his Kidney. He had a Brother by the Mother's Side, a Batchelour in the Cordeliers Convent at *Osno*, one of a turbulēt Spirit, and of dangerous Example to the Society. He was no sooner made acquainted with the design of going

going to *France*, but he eagerly embrac'd it. This Batchelour often took a walk with Brother *Felix*, and one Day took him out to a Garden near the Town where the other had appointed to meet the 1st of *April*, 1542. and did appear accordingly.

The Batchelour did his endeavour by the way, tho' without revealing the design, to draw *Felix* into the Plot, speaking much in the praise of *France*, and crying out upon the discouragements the Ecclesiasticks in *Italy* were under: where no-body were so generous to help on the good intentions of a young Man that was capable of a great deal, and had merit enough to recommend him. He explain'd himself no farther, desiring first, to meet his Brother who waited their coming with Impatience.

Brother *Felix*, from the beginning smell'd a Rat, and upon seeing a Bundle of Clothes, which the Batchelour had brought into the Garden, concluded, this Airing had something more in it than Ord'nary. The Two Brothers having Talk'd together aside, came to *Felix* again, and bringing on the Discourse, how happy Living it would be in a Country so Free as *France*; laid open the Intrigue, and Invited him to go with them: Assuring him he would there find opportunity of making known his Merit, and Advancing his Fortunes by good Preferment.

The thing at first shock'd Brother *Felix*, but summoning in his Reason, he resisted this dangerous Bait with a firm resolution. And after moment's Thought, he did what he could to dissuade these Wretches from their desperate design, and chiefly labour'd to bring off his Companion: but all in vain, he was proof against all that could be offer'd. And *Felix* with amazement reflected upon the ill opinion the Batchelour

hour must entertain of him before he could hope to engage him in so scandalous an affair. He then apprehended himself not very safe in their hands, and run from 'em as fast as he could to his Convent. They unwilling to lose time did not pursue him, but took another Road, and got off as fast as they could that they might not be stop'd. The Warden being inform'd of the matter, by *Felix*, dispatch'd some Officers after 'em; but they had order'd it so well, as to get clear way.

James V. King of Scotland Died this Year without Issue Male, and left one Daughter *Mary* Heiress to the Crown. She Married *Francis II. King of France*: This Match was a great Eye-Sore to the *English*. It was never spoke of before *Felix*, but he lamented the miseries of that poor Kingdom so much, that after he was Pope, he was heard to say, whenever he receiv'd ill News from thence, *That the Death of King James, and the Succession falling into the Hands of a Young Princess, gave him always a Melancholick prospect.*

Being weary of *Osimo*, either that the House was disagreeable, or that he had not time to Study; he wrote to one of his Friends, a little before the Meeting of the Chapter at *Ascoli*, in September, to entreat the Provincial he might remove; and have an Obedience for *Ancona, Urbino, or Ascoli*. His business was so well taken care of, that he had a Blank sent him to fill up with what place he thought best to pitch upon. This Favour pleas'd him so mightily, that he thought upon't as long as he liv'd, as the greatest he had met with in Five and Twenty Years, that he had spent in a Monastery.

As soon as he receiv'd this agreeable Obedience, he made choice of *Ascoli*, both because he

he liked the place, and had a mind to shew those that did not love him, he had credit enough to return into a Convent from whence he had been unhandſomely turn'd out. He came thither in *October*, and his old Friends were as glad to see him as his Enemies were mortified with it.

There he had opportunity to see the Pope a Second Time, who resolving upon a Visitation through the State of the Church, left *Rome*, in *March* 1543. was receiv'd at *Ancona* with all the Solemnity due to a Sovereign Pontiff, and staid there a Week. Brother *Felix*, who was providing himself to Preach in the Church of *St. Francis*, upon the Annunciation of the Blessed Virgin, was advis'd by the Warden not to venture the first Time without good Assurance his Sermon would pass, and that he should not want courage to deliver it: That besides a very great Congregation, there were a great many Prelates attending upon the Pope, who had Lodgings in the Convent, and would be witnesses of his performance. He made Answer, without any signs of Confusion, *The Auditory would rather encourage than fright him, especially if he might hope to see his Holiness there.* And in good earnest he came off so handſomely, that no-body could believe it was his Probation. One of the chief Prelates after Dinner had a mind to talk with him, and put him upon Discoursing about several things which were the Subject of his Sermon. He was so delighted with his Conversation, that at parting, he said, *You should soon be a Cardinal, if I were Pope.*

The Warden who was of *Ancona*, was charm'd with this Piece, and over-joy'd at the Success it met with. As a Proof of his being well pleas'd he order'd *Felix* double Commons in the Hall; dispens'd with the Silence which is enjoin'd the Society,

Society, and Drank the new Preacher's Health. He acknowledg'd himself much Honour'd by the Compliments made him, as well upon the Act he had before kept in that Town, as upon this occasion; and profess'd he would ever retain a grateful sense of the Advantages that House had afforded him, and the kindness of those that had open'd him the way into it. These two Performances, establish'd his Reputation for a great Man as any *Ancona* afforded: But upon some little differences there, between him and some of the Brothers, the Provincial sent him an Order to go to *Urbino*, in the Beginning of the Year 1544. He found here more satisfaction than he expected, and many opportunities of recommending himself. Amongst the rest, at the Provincial-Chapter of the *Augustines*, where they disputed Publickly in Philosophy and Divinity. He took upon him to oppose a Batchelour of that Order, the best disputant there: Tho' his own Warden fearing the great Fame of his Respondent, did unwillingly consent to it. But *Felix* hand'd him so well, and confounded him to that degree, that the Warden condemn'd the distrust he had shewn.

He wrote to his Provincial, to desire he might go into full Orders; since there were not Priests enough in the Convent. To which he received no other Answer, but, That he should mind his Studies, and the Provincial when he Visited, should see whether he was qualify'd for the Priesthood. At length, upon a due Examination of his Abilities and his Conduct, for the sake of his excellent Qualifications, he pass'd by some little slips of Nature; and gave him Letters Dissolatory: upon which he was ordain'd Priest, in *June* 1545. He was at the same time admitted to his Degree of Batchelour, tho' he found

found some Difficulty to be created; and said Mass the First Time on *Lady-Day*, after his Regent had made a publick Speech in his Praise.

At the Time of his Ordination he took up the Name of *Montalto*, and was seldom called by the Brothers *Peretti*, which was his true Name.

By the Leave of the Bishop of the *Diocese* who gave him his Mission, he began his *Lent-Course*: but made a Blunder at *Jesi* which reflected a little upon him. Preaching in the Convent there the First Sunday in *May*, 1546, at the Time all the World talked of *Luther's* Death which happened in *February* the same Year, after having as it were triumph'd in *Christendom*, and given deep Wounds to the *Romish* Church, he was so transported with Zeal against this Arch-Heretic, that without Design he fell foul upon the whole Order of the *Augustins* from which *Luther* was an Apostate. A Doctor of this Order who was present, was highly offended at the Discourse, and went to *Rome* with a Complaint to the Bishop of the Place: The Bishop appointed *Montalto* for his Punishment, to retract in another Sermon what he had said. With much ado he brought himself to submit to the Sentence, and upon St. *Francis's* Day made ample Amends to the *Augustins*, consistent enough with his own Honour.

The Provincial being then in his Visitation, came to *Jesi*, and his Secretary falling sick, he took *Montalto* to do his Business! He continued in this Employment two Months at *Macerata*, from whence he went to *Fermo* for his Doctor's Hood. He wrote to the Provincial for a Permission, and asked it also by Persons of great Account with him, at whose Desire he was sent

to that Place, which is an University; thither he came in *June* 1547.

There he kept Exercise both in the Pulpit and the Schools for Five Months, by which it appeared he deserved the Hood very well. Notwithstanding the Provincial at his Coming in *October*, made several Doctors, of which Number the Poor *Montalto* was not One; He was put off another Time, tho' he had approved himself better than any of the Four that were created. This he took for an Affront, and could not forbear shewing his Resentment to the new Doctors, and Him that had given 'em their Title; and thought of going to *Rome* to inform against him. But as he wanted an Obedience for the Journey, without which the General would have looked upon him as a Vagabond, he was advised to take it patiently: And being told that the Provincial did but obey his Orders in it, and followed the General's Intention, he comforted himself in hopes the Just Honour which had been denied him was only kept back for a few Months.

The Bishop of *Fermo* had given him a Mission to Preach the Lent-Course in a Neighbouring Town, tho' the Bishops had done their best to deprive him of that Prelate's Friendship. He came of so well, with so great Approbation, and Benefit to the Auditory, that when he waited upon the Bishop at his Return, he had the Honour of the Pulpit of his Cathedral conferr'd upon him for the next Lent.

At his Return to *Fermo* after *Easter*, he found there a Letter and an Order from the Provincial, who invited him to keep a publick Act at the general Chapter which was shortly to be held. His intimate Friends had told him in Confidence, that the Professor had pitch'd upon him for Respondent.

spondent at this solemn Time, tho' all the other Divines envy'd him the Honour of it. He was in his Heart much delighted that he could upon this Occasion be serviceable to his Order; but with a little Resentment of what was past, he answered the Provincial, That since he was not thought worthy to be Doctor, he could not so maintain the Interests and the Glory of Religion upon so great a Day. The Provincial, who understood what this meant, told him he cou'd not fail of a Hood; that he should trouble himself about nothing but to fit himself for the Chapter. And accordingly he came in a few Days to *Fermo*, with all the Powers requisite to that Ceremony, with others that were to assist at it; and having examined *Montalto* for Form sake only, presented him with a Doctor's Ring, in Presence of a great many Monks and other Inhabitants of the Town, who were got together to hear *Montalto's* Speech upon the Occasion, at which he came off with his usual Applause.

As soon as he was invested with that Dignity, which is esteem'd by the Brothers, the greatest Mark of Distinction, he thought of Printing his *Theses*, and dedicating them to the Cardinal Protector of the Order, who by his Place was to preside in the Chapter. This was *Rodolphus Pius de Carpi*, a Man at that Time in as great Esteem as any of the Sacred College, and therefore was by *Paul III.* made choice of for Legate à *Latere* in his Absence.

Being inform'd that this Gentleman had no Ambition in him, but so modest, that the usual fulsom Compliments of an Epistle-dicatory would turn his Stomach; he observed a great Decency in his Address. And the Chapter being appointed, he set out thither in Company with some considerable Monks, and arrived the same Day

Day with Cardinal *Carpi*. He thought it was proper to wait upon the Cardinal at his Coming, and present him the *Theses* in private. But to make sure of a favourable Reception, he applied himself to the Secretary Signior *Sigismond Bossius*, who introduced him to his Eminence, and procured him all the Respect and Civility he cou'd hope for at his first Audience.

There was a Contest in the Chapter for Precedency, The Respondents disputing about Place. *Montalto* would keep his Act before another Doctor, who pleaded he was of the Diocese, and t'other but a Stranger. To which he answered, this was a Chapter General, where all of the Order in whatever Nation were assembled, and there ought therefore no Regard to be had to the Place of Birth. That being the Senior Doctor he would begin the Exercise, or he'd return to his Convent without disputing at all.

Most of the Fathers took one Side or other. And *Montalto* seeing the Professors inclining to give it against him, notwithstanding all the Reasons he cou'd offer, urged that meer Respect to the Person to whom his *Theses* were dedicated, was more than enough to demand the Precedence. The other submitted to this last Reason upon Condition the Cardinal Patron expected it. He behaved himself with so much Modesty in declining the Place upon this Account, That it was determined for him, and *Montalto* was prevail'd upon to be satisfied with the Second.

His Compliance was rewarded by the Advantage he got above all that appeared with him. And tho' he had not the first Place in the Exercise, he was Second to none in the Glory of it. The Day that he was Respondent in Presence

of the Cardinal Protector, he met with very great Applause from the Auditory, which was very numerous, consisting of Persons of all Qualities, both of the Place and the Neighbouring Towns. They cou'd not but admire his Quick Apprehension and Presence of Mind, together with a prodigious Memory and a mature Judg-

particularly distinguished strenuously with a Father of Calabria, *Marco Antonio* by Name, the First Divinity Lecturer in the Convent of *Perusia*, a Man famous in the Schools, whose Name made all the rest tremble: But so far was he from running *Montalto* a-ground, that he cou'd but just make his Party good with him; and summoning up all his Force, cou'd bring it to no more than a drawn Battel.

The Cardinal Protector, to express the Sense he had of *Montalto's* Merit, did him the Honour that Night to invite him to Supper at his own Table; and as long as the Chapter lasted, missed no Opportunity of shewing his Good Will to him. At the same time *Montalto* contracted a great Familiarity with *Sigismond Bossius*, whose Endeavours he had for his Advancement as well as those of his Master. When the Chapter was up, he obtain'd Leave to fix again at *Ascoli*, and be Doctor in the same House where he had learn'd to read. Thither he sent for some of his Relations, and instead of being mortified at their Poverty, thought it an Honour to have out-stretch'd the Expectation of the World. Once, since he attain'd the Pontificate, upon a Discourse about some Illustrious Houses of *Italy*, he merrily went about to prove his own to exceed 'em all. *Mine*, says he, *being half tiled and hung about with pieces of old Mat instead of Wall, through which the Sun shone gloriously*

riously upon us, must be allowed the most splendid of all.

Thus did he confound the Pride which frequently reigns in the Breast of those dedicated to Religion, who though professing to look down upon the World with Contempt sometimes value themselves more upon their Secular Advantages than the Holiness of their Life: As if they did a mighty Honour to Religion, by Sacrificing to it the empty Glories of an ancient Family. On the contrary, *Montalto* valued himself upon what others take pains to conceal, and was perhaps the only one that boasted of a mean Extraction.

It's true, he would sometimes let himself out against those who used him with Scorn, and retort, as we have observed, what the Brothers said in Disparagement of his Family: Yet none knew better than he, how to keep under these Spurnings of Nature, and to command his Resentment when it would have argued Weakness.

At *Ascoli* he did meditate a little Revenge against his Provincial, and it was upon this Occasion. Father *Charles Contini*, the first Divinity-Professor in the Convent, dying in the Beginning of the Year 1549, *Montalto*, by Consent of the Warden, read the usual Lectures in his Room, with a Promise to obtain the Provincial's Confirmation at the first Chapter that should be. Accordingly the Provincial did send him a Confirmation, but reserved to himself the Liberty of revoking it whenever he thought fit; and in two Months Time he named another *Rigent*, and, which was the greatest Mortification, gave him the Powers without any Reserve. After he had given some Hints of his Anger at the Provincial, he procured some discontented Persons to write to the General in his Prejudice.

Prejudice. This was soon made known to the Provincial by the General, from whom he also received the Letter that had been sent. He imagined *Montalto* was at the Bottom of this ill Office that had been done him, which he was heartily concern'd at, and resent'd it heavily in a Letter to him. *Montalto* made but a lame Reply, and for many Reasons wish'd he had kept out of this Miscarriage. He took more Care afterwards of his Conduct; but all his Vigilance did not secure him from experimenting 'tis in the Power of a Superiour to make his Monks uneasie when they fail in their Duty to him. As he was not much concern'd to stand well in the good Graces of his Superiour, and slighted the Friendship of some of the Brothers, some of 'em prosecuted him with Accusations. He was reproach'd for having spoke ill of the Provincial; for going out of the Convent without his Superior's Leave; that he said no Masses except in the Choir, whither he went but seldom; that he had spoke Ambiguous Words in Company of Lay-men; that he never fasted upon Holy-day Eves, and such sort of things. Upon this the Provincial sent his Commissary the next Day to make Enquiry, with Power of Determining as he saw fit: But *Montalto* upon his Examination overthrew so effectually these different Accusations, by excepting against some of the Witnesses as his Enemies, and by producing his Friends in his Justification, that all which was said against him went for malicious Slander.

He spoke and writ many things to clear himself, which wrought so far with the Commissary, that he suspended the Decision of the Matter; but insisted a Punishment on him for having disobey'd the Provincial in several Respects. He order'd him to remove to *Recanati* in Two Days

Days' Time, to be there under a sort of Confinement, till the Provincial and other Judges should take the Matter into Consideration, and give Sentence upon him.

Montalto finding himself used with too great Severity, complain'd of this Order in Presence of the Commissary, telling him he would go to Rome with an Appeal to the General: But a little Thought, he submitted without any Opposition, because the Holy See was now vacant by the Death of *Paul III.* who died the Tenth of *November.* During a Vacancy Things very much changed their Course, and therefore he thought it no proper Time to proceed farther in that Affair. After Two Months Continuance in his Prison, when No body thought of him, he wrote to the Provincial; who return'd for Answer, That his Cause should come to a Hearing before a Congregation of the Fathers of the Province; and in the mean time took care to have his whole Life narrowly look'd into, how he had behaved himself in all the Houses where he had been. *Montalto* on his Part made Friends at Rome for a Regency, hoping thereby to gain the Esteem of the Provincial, and put a Stop to the Enquiry that was making. Tho' he had not much to fear, the worst that could be inflicted being no more than the usual Pennance of the Cloyster, and a few Months Suspension. He applied himself to *Sigismond Bossius*, who had at *Ascoli* made him great Promises of his Friendship; and who no sooner heard of his Desire to be Divinity-Lecturer, but he inform'd Cardinal *Carpini* his Master of it. The Cardinal sent him in his Name to the General of the *Cordeliers* to assure him of the Respect he had for *Montalto*, and to ask, as from him, the first Divinity-Chair that should be void. *Bossius* follow'd this Matter.

Matter very close, and paid many Visits to the General to sollicite it.

As it happily fell out there were several Chairs then vacant, and among the rest that of *Macerata*, the most considerable in the Province. This the General preferr'd him to, out of Respect to the Cardinal Protector, and to oblige the Secretary, to whom he delivered the Instruments, and they were accordingly convey'd to *Montalto*. He received them in *May* 1550. But it being requisite to have Induction from the Provincial, he employ'd a Friend to carry a Letter to him in which he entreated the Provincial's Consent, and his Friend was so perswade him what he could: but instead of succeeding, he was forbid to go to *Macerata*, and the General was inform'd, that a Process was out against *Montalto*, and was now upon a Determination, that he was therefore incapable of a Regency; and whatever Recommendation he might procure at *Rome*, the Provincial would not be brought to consent to it.

Seeing his Design thus defeated, he endeavour'd to get an Obedience for *Rome*, under Presence of the Indulgence of the Sacred Year, which the new Pope *Julius* III. had opened upon *St. Matthias's* Day with the usual Ceremonies. This being denied him, away he went without any Leave, and by this Act of Disobedience, gave the Provincial just Cause to pronounce him Rebellious and Incurable; who wrote to the General and represented him as such, and he had been infallibly taken up, if Respect to *Bossius* had not saved him. There were Means tried to reconcile these two angry Folks, but the General declared against *Montalto*; and *Montalto* was supported by the Cardinal, who would however carry it fairly to the Provincial, so that upon the

Matter the difference was not like to be made up. At length the General being press'd by the importunity of *Bossius* in favour of his Friend; and at the same time unwilling to do any thing against the Provincial, to whom he had been always a fast Friend, thought it best to part 'em. Accordingly he gave *Montalto* a very honourable employment in another Province: which was the Divinity Chair of *Sienna*, much more considerable than that of *Macerata*; together with a Precept to Preach in the Town. He went thither about the end of *August* with Letters of recommendation from Cardinal *Carpi* to the Provincial of *Tuscany*, who had a Brother with the Nephew of his Eminence, and upon that account received *Montalto* with a great deal of Joy and Civility.

The Provincial put him up to Preach on St. *Francis's* Day, tho' he wou'd fain have been excused: Yet he must comply with the Curiosity of those that had a mind to hear him, because of the great name he had obtain'd, and because he was to be their Lent Preacher. But the same reasons made him unwilling to hazard his reputation upon the uncertain success of his first Sermon, in an Auditory whose Taste and Humour he was absolutely a stranger to; He ventured however, and made so ingenious and elegant a discourse, That the People of *Sienna* wish'd for Lent most impatiently; which being come he had constantly a large congregation.

The Provincial Chapter of the Marquisate being to sit the next Year to Elect a New Provincial, *Montalto* had a right of Voting in it. He cou'd not leave his Regency without the General's permission, and therefore ask'd it: 'Twas granted, and a Mission also to be Lent Preacher at *Camerino*. He cou'd not forbear making

making some little complaints at the Chapter, against the Provincial: But the President who very well knew their Bickerings, did what he cou'd to make 'em Friends, and carry on the Election peaceably.

Having finish'd his Lent Course at *Camerino*, he made his Old Friends at *Ascoli* a Visit, and went to the *Grotto* his Native Place. Thence he return'd to *Sienna*, which he found all in confusion, and narrowly scaped there with his Life.

Tho' this went under the Notion of a Free-Town, *Diego Urtado de Mendoza*, the Emperor *Charles* his Governor there, us'd the Inhabitants as if they had been Slaves. He laid the foundations of a Citadel, pretending the Emperor's order for it to prevent any disturbance, and tumult as happened there sometimes. The principal Inhabitants who were quite tired with that heavy yolk, being assisted by the Ministers of *Henry II.* King of *France*, Count *Petillana*, and the *Farneses*, who by the Authority they had in this Country, drew together in all hast some Troops, under pretence of sending 'em farther off; brought 'em into the Town, surprized the Spanish Garrison, of which they cut in pieces some, and beat the rest out of the City and the Castle.

Montalto who had contracted a Friendship with *Mendoza*, being in company of some of the chief Inhabitants who abhor'd the Spanish Government, was so imprudent as to defend it: If the Respect they bore his Character had not bridled their Passion, they had not given him time to reflect upon his blunder, which he went about to rectify talking against the *Spaniards*. Finding the people of *Sienna*, from that time forward looked upon him with a Jealous Eye, he kept as much as he cou'd from meddling in any publick business.

ness. Pope *Julius*, having made enquiry into the business by the Ministry of *Fabio Mignaneli* Cardinal of *Sienna*; whom he appointed his Legate for the purpose, made a proposal to the People that they shou'd return to their duty, and cast themselves upon the Emperor's Mercy: But not being able to persuade 'em he recall'd his Legate to *Rome*. *Montalto* fearing the Emperor wou'd revenge this Act of disobedience, and that he shou'd be involv'd in the desolation the place was threatned with, and with which it was afterwards chastized, entreated the Cardinal to procure him some Honourable means of quitting it. Who dispatch'd Letters to him appointing him Preacher of the Apostles Convent at *Rome*, for the next Lent: There he had constantly a prodigious number of Hearers. Cardinal *Carpi*, was his Auditor at least twice a week, and invited his Brother Cardinals to do him the like honour: Besides a great many Prelates, there were one day no less than Five Cardinals to hear him.

There was one thing fell out this Lent which was Odd enough, and made a great noise in Town, but which ended well and mightily advanced his Fortunes. He had taken for his Text these words of *St. John's* Gospel, *I am the good Shepherd, and I know my Sheep, and my Sheep know me*; intending from thence to Preach upon Predestination. This Piece was the most learned, well composed, and Ingenious of any he made in all Lent; There were abundance of Truths in it, setting forth the Blindness and Arrogance of Hereticks: And such as afforded Consolation to the Faithful, under the Miseries which Novelty had brought upon the *Romish* Church.

The Sunday before, he had invited the Learned to hear him upon that day: a *Lutheran* having notice of the Sermon had the Curiosity to be at

it;

it; who when he came home, examined as far as his memory served him, the propositions advanced by *Montalto*, and against every one of 'em, wrote in great Letters one single word, *You Eye*; Then sealing it up like a Letter, he carried it to one of the Preacher's Friends for a packet from *Stenna*.

Montalto opening it saw the Contents, which very much surprized him: He enquired of his Friend what sort of man it was that brought it. But it was delivered when it was duskish, and therefore there was no guessing who it should be; so he sent him with it that Minute to the Prior of the Dominicans Convent of *Mineva*, where the Court of Inquisition was kept, who examined it, and sent it to Cardinal *Carpi* as One of the chief Ministers of that Court, and Protector of the Order of *St. Francis*.

The Cardinal sent a Commissary of the Holy Office to *Montalto*, to consult him about prosecuting the Affair, which required the best management, because of the great progress Heresie then made.

Cardinal *Caraffa* chief Inquisitor, had newly chose *Peter Michael Ghislieri*, Commissary of the Holy Office. He was born at a Village called *Bois Six Miles from Alexandria*, of mean parentage, but had taken the habit of *St. Dominick*: after he had Preached several Lent Courses, and govern'd several Houses of his Order as Prior, he was made Inquisitor of *Rome*, at the time that a sort of Heresie was said to spring up in *Lombardy*. Upon this occasion he shewed so great zeal, judgment, and resolution that in a short time he recommended himself to all the Cardinals of the Inquisition. Upon some dispute with the Officers of the *Milaneze*, in what related to his Office he return'd to *Rome*: where he

he gave the Commissaries of the Inquisition so good a proof of his conduct, that he was sent to the *Grisons* with a process against a Canon of the Cathedral Church, who was accused of many Heretical Tenets. He was afterwards sent Inquisitor to *Bergamo*, and the Court of *Rome* was so well pleased with his conduct in both these employments, that he was at his return Honour'd with the Office of Commissary, which is one of the most considerable of that Jurisdiction.

He was so taken with the Ingenuity of *Montalto*, and the strength of his reasoning the First time he saw him, that he had ever after a mighty Affection for him, and took great pleasure in his conversation. He engaged him to a high degree by the service he did him, and at length made him Cardinal when himself was Pope, by the name of *Pious V.*

Montalto was sent Preacher to *Perusia* 1553. sorely against his will, missing the Pulpit of *Ascoli*, which wou'd have been very agreeable to him, and he had indeed reason to expect: but another Monk who was secretly his Competitor carried it from him; and he was forced to take up with that of *Perusia*. He was not well liked of by his new Auditory, either that he was not careful to please 'em after he had lost *Ascoli*; Or that the Taste of the *Perusians* was different from that of *Rome*, where he had been highly acceptable: He was esteem'd less than another Preacher of the same Town. Having an Inclination to obtain a Regency, he came to *Rome* at the time when there were several to be dispos'd of; And apply'd himself to his Patron Cardinal *Carpi*, who had already thought of him, and assured him the General had pass'd his word to provide him one of the best. Accordingly he was presented to that of the Royal Convent of

of *St. Laurence in Naples*, tho' it was aim'd at by several other great Divines: the recommendation of *Carpi*, was too strong for 'em all. And *Montalto* went immediately for *Naples*, with the Provincial who was returning to the same Convent.

The Monks of this place, being prejudiced against him, and fearing his brisk and resolute temper received him but coldly: He endeavour'd to obtain their favour by a strict application to the business of his Office.

Some few Months before *Don Pedro de Toledo* Viceroy of *Naples*, was by order of the Emperour marched at the head of a strong Body of Troops, *Spaniards, Italians and Germans*, to chastise the People of *Sienna* for their Sedition aforementioned; And Cardinal *Pacceco* a *Spaniard*, was left in Quality of Lieutenant.

Montalto reflecting upon the small respect he met with amongst the Brothers, thought it proper to fortifie himself against 'em, by a Letter from Cardinal *Carpi*, recommending him to Cardinal *Pacceco*: But here he was out in his guess, it did him more hurt than good. For relying too much upon his own strength, he was too positive in opposing the chief of the House, and amongst the rest Father *Carraciolo*, who was descended from one of the most Antient Families of *Naples*.

Mary, Daughter of King *Henry VIII.* of *England*, at this time came to the Crown, by the Death of her Brother *Edward VI.* She was no sooner settled in her Throne but She restored the *Catholick Religion in England*, by assistance of Cardinal *Pool*: And at the same time Married *Philip* Son to the Emperour *Charles the Fifth.* All *Christendom* Celebrated the Restoration of Religion in that Country, by solemn processions; And particu-

particularly the Kingdom of *Naples*, which the Emperor had given in Marriage with his Son.

The Monks of *St. Laurence*, which is a Monastery of Royal Foundation; had a mind to distinguish themselves, by Magnificent Doings, which lasted Nine Days. They chose *Montalto* to open it with a Sermon; by which he got so much credit in *Naples*, that abundance of People of Quality Wrote to the General in his behalf, and entreated he might have the chief Pulpit of the Town for the *Lent* ensuing. He had a Patent sent him accordingly: And tho' there was another celebrated Preacher, in a Church hard by, *Montalto* had a great Auditory, who always went away with their expectation Answer'd. The Warden advis'd him not to venture with his Sermon of *Predestination*, which had made so much noise at *Rome*. He Answer'd coldly, he should follow the directions of the Holy Spirit, to treat upon the same Subject: which he did with greater zeal and earnestness than he had done the first time. He was so transported in speaking of *Thomas Cranmer*, Archbishop of *Canterbury*, who was since Burn'd for holding Principles contrary to the Church of *Rome*; that every body thought he carried the matter too far.

His Superiour taking it amiss that he had been a second Time upon that Subject he warn'd him against it, and reprimanded him for it. This created a difference between him and *Montalto*, upon which, *Montalto* wrote to *Rome* to inform against the Warden for ill Principles. The Warden hearing of this, would let no occasion slip of mortifying him; and begun by forbidding him to Confess in his Church.

He Preach'd Two Sermons, which of all the rest were most admired, and he was mightily impor-

importun'd to Print them: He declin'd it as much as he could; but no denial being admitted, he Dedicated them to *Antonia Christopher Simoncelli*, one of his great Friends and Patrons. These Two Pieces, tho' full of Fine Notions, and set off with all the Addition of Language, lost some of their Reputation when they came to be read.

In this Convent there was a sort of Persecution rais'd against him: The Monks as they pass'd by would hardly Salute him; and the Warden had a Quarrel with him, which he pursued so far, as to make complaints to the General. But the Informations betraying something of Passion, the General declar'd himself for *Montalto*: Who upon his coming off so well, said to him that gave him notice of the proceedings, That he scorn'd their Malice. He wrote several things in his own Defence, and presented 'em to the Society in the Hall.

Above Two Years together he went through it, and slighted the Affronts put upon him at *Naples*, as long as his Superiours were of his Side. But finding himself forsaken by them, his Patience grew tired; He rail'd at the Brothers of the House, and the Provincial himself: and carry'd matters to that height, as to go to *Rome* without an Obedience. The General incens'd at his Behaviour, Remanded him to *Naples*, and treated him as Refractory and Rebellious.

This ruin'd his Reputation in the Apostles Convent, where Cardinal *Carpi* had prevail'd for him to stay. Here he could not bear the Marks of Contempt daily put upon him by the Brothers: and therefore entreated his Eminence to deliver him from so uncomfortable a State; by obtaining a Brief from the Pope, for some honourable Pretence of leaving the Monastick Life, which was become so uneasy to him. The Cardinal

dinal Protector was highly difoblig'd at this Motion, and threatn'd him to withdraw his Friendship and Protection, if he heard one Syllable more of a design that reflected so grossly upon his Honour, which had been hitherto engag'd for him. And told him, that none but a person that had thrown off all respect to Authority was capable of a Thought so extravagant. *Montalto* finding this door shut against him, resolv'd to bear it patiently; and endeavour'd to comfort himself by the advice of Father *Michael* the Commissary of the Holy Office, to whom he had communicated his design, in hopes of his Assistance. The General and the Fraternity hearing of it, were so highly offended, that they reproach'd him at every turn, how unworthy he was of a Religious Foundation. But Cardinal *Carpi* spoke to the General, that they would let him live in quiet.

The Palace of *Colono* joins to the Apostles Convent, and the Lords of it had always honour'd this House of St. *Francis* with their Protection. At that time the Lord Abbot *Marco Antonio Colono* Lodg'd there, who made enquiry for some Monk to read to him the Philosophy of *Scotus*. *Montalto* offer'd his Service, in hopes of procuring a new Interest in a House that was one of the most considerable of all *Italy*, and the most powerful of any in *Rome*.

The Abbot was glad to meet with a Man that had in *Rome* the Reputation of so good a Philosopher: and heartily accepted the Offer, upon condition he might go to Lectures in *Montalto's* Chamber. But *Montalto* thought himself oblig'd to wait upon his Scholar, at his Lodgings, who made a Progress so suitable to the care and application of his Tutor, that with the excellent Endowments Nature had afforded him, he grew
in

in a short time as knowing in the matter as *Montalto* himself.

The Provincial Chapter of the Marquisate, was Summon'd to Elect a new Provincial. *Montalto* who had reason to expect they shou'd cast their Eyes upon him; did not oppose his Friends endeavours; for advancing him to that Dignity. The *General* proposed it to Cardinal *Carpi*, who being engag'd by such a Recommendation, as well as his particular Friendship to *Montalto*, applied to the General as his Friend; and as Protector of his Order, to obtain this Favour for him. Assuring the General withal, that this good Office done to *Montalto*, would make him forget all his just complaints. The General, who was by no means inclin'd to bring him in, and had actually engag'd himself to prefer another Person: Answer'd, That the thing was impossible; That the Brothers were not at all dispos'd to Choose him, and would rather have any Body than *Montalto*. Besides, he had been for Three Years out of the Province, and it was not likely they would take him, before those who had merited this Honour by their Diligence and constant Service. And seeing the Cardinal Protector still pressing it, He told him plainly he could not in conscience do such manifest Injustice to the Ancient Monks to whose deserts the Place was due. The Cardinal went away upon this Answer, but assured *Montalto* sooner or later this Post would fall to him.

But the General that he might not absolutely refuse the Cardinal Protector, gave him the Pulpit of *Genova*, whither he went in the beginning of *February*. And the Person that was remov'd from thence, was otherwise provided for in the Kingdom of *Naples*.

At his coming to *Genoua*, he had the Keys of the Strangers Appartment brought to him, and was very kindly receiv'd. But the *Genoueses* being free but for a Meal or two, and in general Thrifty: The Brothers gave *Montalto* to understand they would not entertain his Companion, and he must look for no more than was usually afforded those that were taken into the House. His Companion was very dear to him, and as he had brought him from *Rome*, he chose rather to bear his Charges, than send him away. Nor was this the only cause of disgust he met with, at his settling there. The Preachers had their Lodgings generally in the Appartment which belongs to the General, or Provincial, when they reside at *Genoua*. As soon as *Montalto* found this out, he made heavy complaint, that he should be pack'd into the Strangers Chambers; and would have left the place upon't: But the Warden telling him, the Provincial was to be there in a few Days; and therefore the Lodgings he had were appointed him, as they thought, for his convenience, that he might not be turn'd out when the Provincial came. This reason set all right again, and *Montalto* took up very contentedly with the Lodging he had.

In the beginning of *Lent* he was not mightily follow'd. The Monks of *Genoua*, hearing he was to have their Church, had given out, they were to have the greatest Preacher of their Order. This Talk had indeed brought together a vast Congregation upon *Ash-Wednesday*; but it soon dwindled into a smaller Auditory, tho' he did his best to produce something extraordinary: Yet at length, his Sermons took so mightily, that the *Cordeliers* Church, which is one of the biggest in *Genoua*, was too little for the People, and they were forc'd to build Scaffolds to it.

Pope Julius III. died *March 23*, and the News of it came to *Genoa*, the Night before the Fourth Sunday in *Lent*. The Gospel for that Day was upon the Miracle of feeding Five Thousand with Five Loaves and Two Fishes. *Montalto* took his Text out of the Gospel, and ingeniously applied those Words, *that there was a great Multitude who had nothing to eat*, to the present sorrowful Estate of the Church, which was then depriv'd of its Common Father: Which took mightily with his Auditory, that was greater than usual upon Account of a solemn Procession. The *Genoeses* admired the Performance as a Master-piece of Oratory.

Some of the principal Senators desired him to Print his *Sermon*: But remembering Those he had consented to publish at *Naples* were less valued in Print than in the Pulpit, he would not venture a Second Time. He preach'd another on *Easter-Day* as full of good Thoughts, and as aptly expressed as the First. The News of an Election of a New Pope coming to *Genoa* upon *Easter-Eve*, (this was *Marcellus Cervino*, a *Tuscan* by Birth, who retaining his Christned Name, was called *Marcellus II.*) it was commonly said in the Street: *We must go to morrow and hear the Cordelier, for he will do Wonders*. And he so pertinently brought in the Joy of which the Church was sensible at the receiving a new Head, whilst he treated of the Comfort which the Resurrection of the Son of God affords the Faithful, that his Hearers resolv'd with one Voice, to entreat the General, *Montalto* might be their Preacher another *Lent*.

The Brothers so highly delighted to see their Preacher so much follow'd, and their Church so full, payed the Charges of his Companion, which they had before made a Difficulty of;

gave him a better Allowance than Other Preachers had, and every one of them made him some Present as an Evidence of their Respect.

He was mightily pressed to spend a few Days at *Genoa*, and rest himself after the Pains he had taken: But he went away immediately for *Rome* after *Easter*, designing to be there at the General Chapter that was about to sit. He desired to have a Regency such as he should like, and thought it the best way to follow the Business himself; for fear the General, who had made a Promise to Cardinal *Carpi* that he should be remembred when the Employments of his Order were disposed of, should reckon he had kept his Word if he gave *Montalto* some Indifferent Thing.

When he was Two Days Journey from *Rome*, he heard of the Death of *Marcellus II.* which happened on the First of *May*, Twelve Days after his Election: *Montalto* being in a pleasant Mood, turn'd to one of his Fellow-Travellers and said, *Since the Popes take Occasion to go off so fast, I hope at last my Turn will come; To which t'other answer'd, One would guess as much by your Looks.*

Near *Rome* he met with Father *Fabius d'Osimo* with whom he had Studied: This Father embracing him said merrily, *Father Montalto, Are not you going to Rome to be made Pope? To which Montalto replied, That may be, but I doubt They'll hardly choose me.*

He Preached, during the Vacancy of the See in the Apostles Church by Order of the General, who kept his Word that he had pass'd to his Patron, by making him the first Offer of all the Regencies in *Italy.* *Montalto* who naturally lov'd his Liberty, chose the Regency of *Venice*, as affording the greatest of any Place. Besides, he

Book II. Pope SIXTUS V.

51

knew he could have strong Recommendations from the House of *Colono* to some Noble *Venetians*.

A little before he obtain'd this Regency, *John Peter Caraffa*, Cardinal of *Ostia*, was Elected Pope on the Fifteenth of *May*, and took the Name of *Paul IV.* Cardinal *Carpi* was his Intimate Friend; and he so particularly respected Father *Michael Ghislieri*; that he made him Cardinal soon after his Election. *Montalto* waited upon them to take his Leave, and both of them advised him to have Patience; and promised him to take care of his Fortunes. Some time after the Pope coming to a Resolution with them to send a Commissary of the Inquisition to *Venice*; and looking out for a proper Person to fill this new Office, they told him they knew No body so Fit as *Montalto*. The Pope reposing a great Confidence in them, and being already inclined to *Montalto*, for a Sermon he had heard him preach in the *Apostles Church*, named him Inquisitor General at *Venice*. This Commission, together with the Divinity-Chair was a Matter of Wonder to all the World, and particularly to his General.

 THE THIRD BOOK.

HAVING disposed all things in order to his Journey, and received his Instructions from the Congregation of the Holy Office; Father *Ghislieri*, who for a long time had discharged that Business, and was perfectly well acquainted with it, gave him some particular Advice relating to his Duty as Inquisitor. He took Leave of all his Superiors, and his General ordered him to go by way of *Bologna*, to make up some considerable Difference there was between the Warden and some Monks of that Convent, with the Title of his Commissary, that he might act with greater Authority. He left *Rome* in the End of *September*; and tho' he went out of his Way to go thro' the Marquifate, he came to *Bologna* on *St. Francis's Eve*.

At first he endeavour'd by the General's Directions to bring 'em to a fair Agreement, and to satisfie all Parties: But both Sides were grown so inveterate, neither would come to an Accommodation. *Montalto* finding it necessary to put in Execution all the Authority he had, suspended the Warden, named a Vicar in his Room, gave Obediences to some of the Monks to go to other Houses, and imprison'd Two till farther Order from the General.

One of these Prisoners having sent Notice of his Confinement to Count *Pepoli*, one of the Chief Noble-men of *Bologna*, who had a particular Respect for this Father; the Count came immediately to *Montalto* to beg him off. The Answer

he met with was blunt, That it did not become the Laity to meddle with these Affairs. His Lordship who was naturally Hot, thought as he was one of the first Quality in the Place, he might have expected greater civility from *Montalto*, was in a passion and threatned him a little: The other seem'd to laugh at it, tho' in truth it stuck in his Stomach.

After he had set things to right as much as he cou'd in the Convent of *Bologna*, and given some orders for keeping Peace and Union amongst the Brothers, he went for *Venice* where he arrived in *November*, leaving behind him the Character of a Rigid and Severe Man. And the same notion the *Venetians* had of him, from Letters sent thither from *Rome*, *Bologna*, and the Marquisate, in which he was set forth as of a Temper too Austere. These reports had strangely alarm'd the Religious of *Venice*, who in a Cloyster retain the Affection for Liberty they are Born with. They inform'd the greatest part of the Senate of what they heard, which prejudiced them extremely against *Montalto*. And tho' the Brothers it may be had no design of doing him Ill Offices, yet this bespeaking People to his disadvantage did him abundance of mischief: so dangerous it is to have one's Character taken with our best Qualities left out.

The *Venetians*, watched narrowly the Steps which the Court of *Rome* took. The Popes under colour of the Inquisition, designed to Establish a Secular Authority over the Sovereign Princes of *Italy*: And this Republick had reason to believe, they would clip her Independance. For in the Year 1551. in the Popedom of *Julius III.* having smell'd out the intention of the Holy See, the Council of *Ten*, sent Instructions to all their Judges to be present at the proceedings

of the Inquisition. His Holiness being inform'd of this, made complaint, and sent *Achilles Grassi* in quality of Nuncio, to remonstrate to the Senate the Injustice of that practice: But the Pope was forced to withdraw his remonstrances, and the Inquisitors made no process, but in presence of the Ordinary Judges.

The Senate finding in the First Year of the Reign of *Paul IV.* that they had to do with a Resolute Man, kept upon their Guard against him: They knew he had ever been a promoter of the Inquisition. That (it was by his advice *Paul III.* had set it up in *Christendom*; and therefore there was all the reason in the world to conclude, when he came to be Pope he would declare himself the Patron of it. For these reasons the Arrival of an Inquisitor at *Venice*, was disagreeable to 'em; and the rather so, because *Montalto* was the Man, whose humour and conduct were so ill represented to 'em.

At his coming to *Venice*, he named by his own Authority a Doctor of *Treviso*, Coadjutor and Assistant of the Inquisition: This was the first point that he Squabbled with the Republick upon. The Senate receiving information of this, let him know, He could not execute his Office but with their consent, and after being acknowledg'd Inquisitor of the Holy Office, according to the usual forms. *Montalto* thought fit to give an account at *Rome*, of the difficulties he had to struggle with: But considering the Respect which the Senate demanded, was due to all Sovereign Powers, he made his appearance there; They desired to see his Commission, which he thought it was sufficient to produce. A Secretary told him, It was proper his Instruments should be left with 'em, to be look'd over by their Lordships: to which *Montalto* made answer, He did not believe a Commission given

given out at Rome by the Pope himself, shou'd come under examination of an inferior Authority.

The Secretary having deliver'd this answer to the Senate, was sent back again with another to *Montalto*. To let him know that as the Senate did not concern themselves with the Rights of the Holy See, no more would they suffer their own to be meddled with: The Nuncio took cognizance of the affair and by his Interposition made up the matter. But *Montalto* could not obtain the concurrence of the Senate till *January 1559*.

Tho' this was but a Trifle, yet the zeal which *Montalto* shewed in maintaining the Pope's Authority, confirm'd the *Venetians* in the opinion the Brothers had establish'd of him: The Senate began to use him with no great respect. The Monks were, out of Interest, Spies upon him, and People of Quality upon account of the Publick Good, watched him with such a Jealous Eye that he could conceal nothing from them. But as he had long struggled with difficulties and contradictions, he slighted their Vigilance and applied himself to his business whatever should come of it.

There was a complaint against him in the Convent for the haughty and dogmatical strain of his Divinity Lectures. And the *Venetians*, who place their *Summum Bonum* in the Liberty they possess, look'd upon him as too severe a Master. His Friends repented having procured him two employments, One of which required a sweet Temper, t'other a severe. And tho' *Montalto* was Master of a great spirit, he cou'd not temper that firmness and resolution which becomes an Inquisitor, with the Gentleness and Address by which a Regent shou'd insinuate himself, and endear himself to his Scholars to engage them in their Studies. They considered him barely as Inquisitor; and therefore stood too much in

fea of him, which made 'em shun him as much as they cou'd: And this put him upon treating them according to his natural inclination.

These misunderstandings created him a great deal of trouble with the Monks, and he had like to have embroyld himself extremely, by prosecuting, upon some accusation, one Father *Jules* a Man of Note in the Town, and one that had done considerable service to the State. This person being a Doctor of Divinity, justified himself to *Montalto* with too little respect considering his quality as Inquisitor, insomuch that he reflected upon him for something of his life past. *Montalto* being nettled at the abuse given at a time when his Character set him out of the reach of such Affronts, and finding the Doctor justifying himself farther by ill language, accused him of Heresie, and was for examining witnesses against him to rights: But none of the Convent being willing to appear against him, *Montalto* was about to excommunicate the whole Community, if the Nuncio had not interposed very much *a propos* between the Inquisitor and the Religious. For the Senate wished for nothing more than to catch *Montalto* at a false step, and had certainly embraced the opportunity, if he had ventured upon any act of Jurisdiction in breach of their Privilege, without the consent of their Judges Ordinary: which he had certainly fallen into, if the Nuncio had not warded off the blow, and prevented the consequence.

The Plague at this time broke out in *Venice*, which put a stop to all Trade as well as shut up the Courts of Judicature. It made a sort of desolation in the State, and reduced poor *Montalto* to great extremity: as he was a stranger, and had not made many of the Monks his Friends.

he was in want of Necessaries. The Senate ordered all the Convents to be shut up. There went out only a few Monks that had the Courage and the Charity to be assisting to the Sick. *Montalto* at this Time was miserably forsaken, and in Apprehension of being starved. Some people thought this was a Scourge sent from Heaven to overturn the Measures which the Senate had concerted to ruin him.

In the midst of these Misfortunes there came News to him which over-joy'd him so much, that in Transport he was heard to say as he read the Letter, *What a Happiness is this? Nothing in the World could have fallen out more to my Advancement.* This was the Promotion of Father *Michael Ghislieri* to the Cardinalate by *Paul IV.* in the Year 1557. He took up the Title of Cardinal of *Alexandria*, being born in the Neighbourhood of that City. *Montalto* had Reason to rejoice at the Honour his Patron was arrived at, both for the good Offices he had already received at his Hands, and those he still expected. And this Expectation was fully answer'd by Favours heaped up as we shall see in what follows. As soon as this News came to him, He went to be merry with the Prior of the *Dominicans* Convent, to whom he related the great Obligations he had received from this New Cardinal. He wrote to him too upon his Promotion, and received an Answer from the Cardinal's own Hand; In which, after Thanks for the Satisfaction he had express'd at his Advancement, and Promises of his Protection whatever should happen; he concluded with assuring him he was extremely desirous of an Opportunity to show in more than Words the Esteem he had for his Person. *Montalto* kept this obliging Letter by him a great while; and was so firmly persuaded of the Sincerity of the Cardinal's

his Friendship for him, of which that Letter made Professions, that he could not forbear sometimes saying, *If this Man ever come to be Pope he will make me a Cardinal.* This Speech though a sort of Braggadocio proved a true Prophecy, for when the Cardinal of *Alexandria* was made Pope, he gave him the Hat.

Seeing himself under the Protection of Two Cardinals so great as *Carpi* and *Alexandria*, he took Courage against those who would have baffled his Designs. One Evening in his Chamber he let fall these Words, *That he feared no Enemies, but could defend himself against a Hundred Princes in Combination against him.* This Talk went about amongst the Brothers till at length it came to the Senator's Ears, who look'd upon themselves intended where he talk'd of opposing a Hundred Sovereigns. In short, he did enough to set the Pope and the Republick together by the Ears, which would have been of ill Consequence to both, if the Nuncio had not interposed. The Emperor *Charles V.* died the same Year 1558. that he had abdicated his Throne in Favour of his Brother *Ferdinand.* And the Pope having made Peace with the King of *Spain*, applied himself wholly to advance the Inquisition. He was for bring not only Crimes of Heresy under their Cognizance, but others too which belonged to the Ordinary Judges. He chose Sixteen Cardinals to be Supreme Judges in this Court, and made the Cardinal of *Alexandria* President, by the Title of *Inquisitor Major*; With Directions to stir up all the Inquisitors of *Christendom* to a more diligent Application in their Function.

This Cardinal began with *Montalto*, as well out of the Friendship he bore him, as to shew what Consideration so famous a City as *Rome* challenged from him; which he look'd upon all

to want purging from some Errors that crept into it. Amongst other things given in charge to the Commissary this was one, That he should enjoin the Bookfellers not to Print or Sell any Book without his Licenc; and sent him a long List of such as the High Court of Inquisition had censured as suspected of Heresy. Farther he ordered him to forbid all Persons either to read or keep these upon pain of Excommunication.

Montalto, who was pleased to shew his Authority, no sooner received his Orders than he put 'em in Execution. He sent for all the Bookfellers and examined 'em singly upon the List that was sent him from *Rome*, and commanded 'em upon very severe Penalties to give him in a Catalogue of all the Books they had in their Shops and Ware-house. This Order surpris'd the whole City: but they were the most amazed to see one of the Bookfellers, who did not appear, alledging he knew no Superior but the State, Excommunicated; and the Sentence that was given against him set up upon his Shop. The Senate looked upon this Proceeding as an Invasion of their Liberties; and ordered a Serjeant to go pull down the Sentence, and tear it to pieces. They farther gave Orders for taking up *Montalto's* Companion who had put up the Placaert on the Bookfeller's House: But he being aware of it, took Shelter in the Nuncio's Palace; who looked upon all these Squabbles with Grief, foreseeing the Consequence would prove inconvenient to the Holy See: Being a Prelate of very good Sense, he spoke to *Montalto* to do things more cautiously for fear of breaking the Publick Peace. And upon his Answer, That He had only executed the Orders that were sent him from *Rome*; The Nuncio made him this Return, That these
Orders

was carried a different face at Venice from what they did at Rome.

It was not in his Power to make the Inquisitor listen to Reason; who inform'd the Cardinal of *Alexandria*, that the Nuncio shew'd but little Zeal for the Interests of the Holy Office. The Nuncio was blamed for this in several Letters that he received from *Rome*; and tho' they industriously conceal'd from him who it was had done him this ill Office, he easily guess'd the Author, and resolv'd to leave *Montalto* to manage by himself, and to fall out with the Senate as he pleas'd; against which he grew stiff, as he saw them Resolute in maintaining their Privileges. They were once so out of Patience at his positive Way, that they were very near throwing him into the Dungeon: but the Nuncio according to his usual Prudence, prevented the Noise such an Affront would have made.

The Pope at the End of this Year publish'd a very severe Edict, enjoining all Monks that were gone out of their Convents upon what Pretence soever to return to 'em immediately. Some of 'em chose rather to pass the Mountains, and retire to *Geneva* and other Places infected with Heresy, than to obey an Edict in which the Pope directed their Abbots and Priors to receive 'em with all the Severity such Libertines deserv'd. These poor Wretches dreading the Prison and other Punishments of a Cloyster, abandon'd the *Romish Church*; and those that defended their leaving the Convents were so severly handled by his Holiness's Officers, that some were laid in Irons, and a greater Number sent to the Gallies: so violent Proceedings made above Two Hundred of 'em desperate, who throw themselves into the Arms of Heresy.

The Pope was not contented with Publish'd this Decree in the *Ecclesiastical State*, but sent it through all *Italy* with an Order to the Inquisitors, to Prosecute such as would not submit to it; and if they had incurr'd an *Excommunication Major*: and to let what would come of

Montalto, who had a particular charge to take care of the Business, no sooner receiv'd the Decree, but he solicited to have it Registr'd. The Senate ask'd some time to consider of it, and after a few Days, made Answer, *That the Edict was not agreeable to the sweetness of their Republican-Government; which in Punishing Offenders, had more regard to Compassion than to strict Justice. That He ought to rest satisfied with the Publication of the Edict but that he should take care, not to Inflict any Punishment without consent of the Judges appointed to Sit with him, upon the Affairs of the Inquisition.*

There were abundance of these Vagabond Monks at *Venice*, and particularly of the Order of *St. Francis*, most of which Lived in a great deal of Freedom, at Private Houses, under the Protection of the Principal Senators. These Libertines despis'd the Inquisitor, and the Pope's Injunctions, abusing the Protection that was allowed them. *Montalto*, to make his Court to the Pope, and maintain strictly his Holiness's Edict, tried all ways: He Prosecuted some, and Excommunicated others; and had their Sentences set up upon their Hall Doors. These Proceedings served but to encrease the Hatred of the Brothers against him, instead of removing it. And the Senate made a Jest of his Fury, despising his vain and impotent Menaces; and making him uneasy to see the weakness of his Authority.

The

The General whether to do him a piece of Honour, or to serve himself by the Reputation he had gotten, sent him a Commission, to be President of the Provincial Chapter, of the State of *Venice*, which was to be hold in the Beginning of *June*, 1550. He recommended to him above all things, Father *Antonio de Treviso* to be Provincial, who had a good Intérest; and who besides the General's recommendation, had very pressing Letters to *Montalto*, from the Cardinals *Carpi* and *Alexandria*.

There were several Disputes at the opening of the Chapter, about some Orders that *Montalto* as Commissary, would make. But most of the Religious oppos'd 'em, as against the Privileges the Order enjoy'd by Allowance of the Senate. This Contest was like to have brok up the Assembly: But *Montalto* seeing his Project could not be brought about, gave it over. By this Ill Success he lost himself a little among the Brothers, and was not capable of commanding their Votes, and bringing his design to pass. Father *Cornelio Divo*, a *Venetian*, was Elected; notwithstanding all he could do. The Brothers, who esteem'd him for his Merits, lik'd him still better for their Provincial, because he was of different Sentiments from *Montalto*. The Senate had desir'd the Chapter to give him the Place, and they must honour so powerfull a Recommendation. And indeed all the Religious of the State of *Venice*, have more regard to the Request of the Lowest Senator, than of a Dozen great Cardinals.

The Chapter being up, *Montalto* return'd to *Venice*, with little Success in his designs. At first coming he Publish'd some Injunctions of the General, and reviv'd his Prosecution of the Monks who had left their Business. But the *Venetians* despis'd

despis'd his Threatning, upon the Strength of that Liberty Providence had afforded them, and referr'd themselves to the great Prudence of their Senate, upon which, the Doge sent him this Message by a Secretary: *Your Reverence gives your self a great deal of trouble, and us too.* To which he made Answer, *If the Court of Rome would let me alone, I would not trouble any body.*

At this time Died *Paul IV.* And just before, *Henry II.* King of *France*, was unfortunately Kill'd at a Turnament, upon the Publick Rejoycing they made at the Conclusion of a Peace with *Spain*. It was thought the Pope Died with Grief at the dismal End of his Brother, who was Strangled the 18th of *August*. His Death was not much lamented either by the *Romans* or *Venetians*, who could not bear the violence with which he push'd on the Establishment of the Inquisition: In short, the Erecting a Court by a Foreign Power, has been always look'd upon by the *Venetians*, as an Infringement of their Privileges. And they have always suspected the Popes in setting it up, have intended to weaken and clip their Power and Authority.

The News of the Pope's Death, mightily alarm'd *Montalto*, and made him apprehensive of some ill usage from the *Venetians*, whom he knew ill-affected to him before, and were now no longer in awe of a Pope, so firm and resolute as *Paul IV.* who had kept them during his Pontificate, from driving him out of their Dominions. *Montalto* seeing himself at this Juncture expos'd to all their resentments, thought it best to retire as fast as he could; having no Prospect of standing the storm he expected from the Senate, in the Vacancy of the Holy Sec. The Princes of *Italy*, particularly the *Venetians*, generally make use of this Time to revenge themselves of the Usurpations

tions of the Court of *Rome*. He communicated this design to the Nuncio, who was the better pleas'd with it, because there was like to be a new Jangle between the Senate and *Montalto*; which without doubt, would have fallen heavy upon him.

He left *Venice* the 1st of *September*, with an intent never to see that Country more; where the Officers of the Court of *Rome* must Truckle to the Privileges of the State, or be always ready to run away and avoid the disgrace of a Prison.

Returning from *Venice*, he fell into Company with some *German* Gentlemen, who were also going for *Rome*, who were so well pleas'd with his Conversation, that they treated him upon the Road. One of 'em would be often saying to him, *Courage, Courage Father, if you have a mind to be Pope, we'll do our endeavour for you as soon as we come to Rome.* To whom *Montalto* Answer'd; *What you please, I shall submit to the burden as heavy as it is.*

All the Ministers of the Sacred Office, and particularly, the Cardinals *Carpi* and *Alexandria*, interpreted his return to *Rome*, as disadvantageous to him, they thought it reflected upon their Court and upon his own in particular. It was said he was driven from *Venice* out of disrespect to the Inquisition, and that his Superiours had not sustain'd him in the business, as they ought. What confirm'd the Report, was, That when he gave an Account of his Conduct, he made Excuses for himself, sometimes insisting upon the Displeasure of the Senate; sometimes on the Trouble the Brothers had given him, and the present State of Affairs. These Reasons were not well taken by the Ministers of the Holy Office, who blam'd him for the Weakness he had in his Land.

And for deserting his Charge, at a time when his Presence was more necessary than ever, to maintain the Inquisition at *Venice*; the Interests of which were like to be but poorly defended by the Deputy he had left behind.

The Grounds upon which they condemn'd him prov'd in the end for his Justification. For the Mob of *Rome* being out of patience with the heavy Bondage of this Court, came at length to burn down the Palace where it was held. And were so far enrag'd, that they cut off the Head and Right-hand of a Marble Statue of the Deceas'd Pope, which had been set up in the Palace of the Preservers, and was done by the best Hands of the Age. This insolent Rabble dragg'd him for Three Days together, about all the Streets of *Rome*, with all manner of Affronts and Indignities: *Montalto*, upon the News of this Sedition, said, *That he had rather be a plain Monk, than Chief Justice of the Inquisition at Venice.* And speaking to one of his Friends, added, *If I were now at Venice, my Carcass would be in as much Danger as the Dead Pope's Statue.* Another time, to Cardinal *Carpi*, upon the same Subject; *How should I have secur'd my self from the Rage of the Venetians, who are a Sovereign Power; when the whole Sacred College was not able to Protect the Pope's Effigies from the Fury of a People, who liv'd always in Subjection, if we maynt say Slavery, to him?*

He expected to be Chose Provincial at the Chapter of the Marquisate, which was now about to Sit. He thought the Interest he could make, and the Respect that would be paid to his Merit in the Employments he had gone through, would make the thing more feasible than the first Time, when he was put by: That his Youth and small Experience in matters of Religion,

could not at present be objected to him. The Cardinal of *Alexandria*, notwithstanding the inclination he had of sending him back to *Venice*, undertook to serve him upon this occasion. But before he went about it, ask'd him in Confidence, *Whether he chose to be Provincial in the Marquisate for Three Months, rather than Inquisitor at Venice for his Life.* To which, *Montalto* made no other Answer; than a scrap out of *Ovid*, which he Pronounc'd shugging up his Shoulders, *Charus Amor Patria.*

The Recommendation of Cardinal *Carpi*, who being Protector of the Order, might expect what he desired in *Montalto's* Favour, was powerfully employ'd with the General. He shew'd him the Justice of such an Amends, after his disappointment at the last Chapter. And whether the General had a mind to serve him, or to make the Cardinal believe so, he engag'd to do all he could. The Cardinal wrote several Letters with his own hand to the chief Monks of the Province; to secure their Votes. *Montalto* knew what the Cardinal had done for him, and accordingly went to the Chapter, in order to be Chose. But the General and several Monks, not giving their Voice for him, away he went to *Rome*, without so much as waiting till the Election was over.

All this pass'd in the Vacancy of the Holy See, which lasted Four Months. The Disorders at *Rome* upon the Death of *Paul IV.* were the Cause of this Delay. At length, a few Days after *Montalto's* Return to *Rome*, Cardinal *Fabio Angelo de Medicis* a Native of the *Milaneze*, (tho' not of the same Family with the *Medicis* of *Florence*) was chose Pope December 26th, and took the Name of *Pius IV.* Tho' he had at first made a Resolution to manage the Affairs of the

quisition, with all the Sweetness that might be expected from a Sovereign Pontiff who had taken so devout a Name; Yet the Cardinal of *Alexandria*; and the Congregation of the Holy Office, had persuaded him to send *Montalto* to *Venice* again; tho' this was against the Advice of some, who would have had this Employment in the hands of somebody less severe and Rigorous.

But the Cardinal of *Alexandria*, who knew full well how vigorously he had pushed on the Affair; and who would have him return with Authority to a Place, from whence the Brothers gave out he had run away in Disgrace, was set upon his going again, and carried it. It's true, the greatest Trouble he had, came from the Cloysters, as once he told a Friend with Admiration: *He could not conceive whence it should be that at the same time he should have the Friendship of the Prelates, and the Hatred of the Brothers.* To which his Friend answer'd, *This Odd Aspect of Affairs will make you Pope some time or other.*

The Year 1559. was remarkable for the Death of so many Great Men, as no Age has afforded the like. There died in Fifteen Months Time, A Pope, An Emperour, Two Kings of *France*, A King of *England*, A King of *Portugal*, A King of *Denmark*, The Queen Dowager of *Poland*, The Queen of *England*, *Mary* Queen of *Hungary*, Queen *Eleanor*, The Doge and Patriarch of *Venice*, The Duke of *Ferrara*, Thirteen Cardinals, and many other Persons considerable either for Quality or Merit.

Montalto having received new Powers, went from *Rome* the Beginning of *January* 1560. with Assurance, from the Cardinal of *Alexandria* that he should have more considerable Posts, if the Court were satisfied with his Conduct. But he

told this Prelate at parting, tho' he perform'd his Duty, it was impossible the Holy See should be pleas'd with the *Venetians*.

A Doctor of *Modena* who was going to *Venice*, offer'd to go in his Company, and *Montalto* thought himself very happy in the Opportunity, but they could not agree which Road to take. The *Modenezze* would go by *Loreto*, and *Montalto* on the other Side was for missing the Marquisate as much as he could, and made Answer to his Fellow-Traveler who would fain have him do otherwise, That he could not think of passing through a Province without a Character which had twice refus'd him for their Provincial. This Talk was carry'd to the Brothers of the Convents where they went, and renew'd their Spleen at *Montalto*; Insomuch that the *Modenezze* Doctor was offend'd at the Disrespect they shew'd him; hearing 'em say in general, they were glad to be from under his Government.

Montalto went to *Venice* by the way of *Florence* and *Bologna*, and arriv'd there in Three Weeks. He met with but a cool Reception, and found the Affairs of the Inquisition in a much worse State than he left 'em. He apply'd himself vigorously to bring 'em into Order, and pull'd upon himself fresh Persecutions. The Brothers made frequent Complaints to the Senate; and in a Body wrote to the Protector of their Order, and to the High Court of Inquisition, that *Montalto* brought the Holy Office into Disrepute. They desired Care might be taken in it, and the Scandal be prevented, which would certainly follow if some other Employment were not assign'd him.

Some of the Senators by Consent of the Senate, at the same time wrote to the Ambassador of the Republick at *Rome*, that he should in-

ply to the chief Judges of the Inquisition for recalling *Montalto*; for the Rigours with which he prosecuted the Business would at length end in great Disorders, not only with the Brothers but the Senate it self; and at last make a Difference between his Holiness and the Republick.

Montalto was inform'd of all these ill Offices; but went not a Step out of his way for 'em: But foreseeing to what a sorrowful pass Things were going; and the least he had to expect, was to be driven from *Venice* in Disgrace; Whilst his Enemies were labouring his Removal, he himself solicited the Cardinal of *Alexandria* to be dismiss'd; Desiring he might for the Quiet of his own Mind and the Safety of his Conscience, be permitted to return to *Rome*, the Reasons of which he would give by Word of Mouth. The Cardinal finding how Matters stood, consented to it without much ado.

As weary as he was of *Venice*, he let slip no Opportunity of shewing how much he contemned his Enemies. He followed the Inquisition with extraordinary Severity, and sacrificed his own Ease for the sake of disturbing others. Seeing the Time of his Remove drawing on, according to his own and his Enemies Wish, he was for employing that little he had left, in beginning more Proceses, and Summoning People before him, and excommunicating them upon too trivial things: That the Senate was under a Necessity of interposing with their Authority, forbidding him to meddle in Matters which could not be brought into a foreign Judicature without invading the Liberty of the State. Assuring him he should repent his Contempt of this Prohibition if he did not observe it. A Monk of his own Order, who was not his Friend, was be-

fore him: The Process run as against a Heretic; but all the Crimes alledged against him not being proved, the Senate would not let him be delivered over to the Inquisition, as having a Natural Right to be judged by the Laws of his own Country. *Montalto* being vexed at this Opposition the Senate made, had a Libel against the Senate set up upon the Door of *St. Marcellus's* Church; in which he Cited I don't know what Officer to appear before him, and answer what had been done. This Libel was put up in the Evening, and *Montalto* having a *Gondolo* provided, went at the same time out of the Town. His Retreat was seasonable: for it's most certain He had never been Pope if he had fallen into the Senate's Hands; who hearing the next Morning what he had done, gave Order to pursue him in all hast and secure him, but he was too Nimble for 'em.

Having scaped so great a Danger, he came to *Rome* in the End of *October*, where he heard of the Senate's Design against him. His Friends, who had been in pain till they saw him safe, rejoiced at his Coming as if he had got out of the *Corfairs* Hands. One of those he was most intimate with, who had been always his Fellow-Student, told him in Jest, *You may thank your Legs, that the Pantaloons did not make you swing. I shall, said he, beware of 'em till once I have been Pope.* To another that spoke to him in the same manner he answer'd; *That having made himself a Promise of being Pope in good time at Rome, he did not think it proper to be hanged at Venice.*

When he gave an Account of his Conduct in the last Struggles he had with the *Venetians*, which was done Five Days after his coming to *Rome*, he was received into the Number of the

Councillors of the Congregation, by Procurement of the Two Cardinals his Patrons. The Brothers of the *Apostles* Convent, where he was not hugely beloved, told him they could not Treat him, and would not let him Sup at their Cost, the very Night that he was made Councillor. Some Officers of the Inquisition hearing he was forced to pay out of his Pocket for that Nights Supper to the Butler of the Convent, provided him Commons which were short enough. This Difficulty being over, They plagued him with another about Lodgings. The General gave him but Three Days Time to find some House in Town: But *Carpi* and *Alexandria* being peremptory that he should not lodge out of a Cloyster, procured an Order from the Pope himself for an Apartment there. The General could not resist this Order, and therefore appointed him Two Chambers, which Father *Gaspard de Naples*, Provost of the Order, who hoped to succeed in this Employment gave him, together with a Mule, that he might be more capable of doing Service to the Holy Office.

At this Time there happened a Business, which in a few Days came to so sad and Tragical a Conclusion, as may stand for an Example to Posterity to keep great Persons to their Duty. *Montalto* being consulted about the chastizing of the Offenders, it is still in the Way of our History.

As soon as ever *Pius IV.* was raised to the Dignity of Pontiff, he set about cleansing the City from the Wickedness which the Nephews of his Predecessor had filled it with; The Good Man in his Life-Time not being able to hinder such a Nuisance. As he came out of the Convent on the Seventh of June, he commanded the Cardinals *Charles* and *Alphonso Caraffa* should

should be arrested; One of 'em was Nephew, t'other Nephew in the Second Degree to *Paul IV.* The like Order was given the same Day for securing *John* the Brother of *Charles* Count *de Montorio*, who had been come to *Rome* but Two Days. He went then by the Title of Duke *de Palliano*, his Uncle having invested him with that Dutchy, which he had unjustly taken from the *Colonos*, notwithstanding the great Services this House had always done the Holy See. He imprisoned also the Count *d' Alis* his Brother in Law, and *Leonard de Gardino* who was related to 'em. These Lords, who very easily guess'd at the Design which was laid against 'em, were much surprized to be arrested, and drag'd to Gaol with abundance of the Domesticks and the Creatures of the House of *Caraffa*. These Orders were so exactly executed, that the Officer who had the Charge of the Affair, did not miss one of those he had in his List; and his Holiness ordered him a Hundred Pistoles for his Service. The Pope willing to make publick Proof he acted in this Affair without any manner of Passion, appointed the Process against the Cardinals, should be before other Cardinals, the most considerable of which was the Cardinal of *Carpi*. And he ordered the Affair of the Count *de Montorio*, and the rest that were accused, to be laid before the Lord *Hieromo Frederici*, Bishop of *Savona* and Governour of *Rome*, who, with *Alexandro Palenterio* Advocate *Fiscal*, was to take Cognizance of it.

Montalto came to *Rome* just at the Time when this Grand Affair was pushed on with the greatest Heat. He was chose one of the Privy Council of Six, by the Advice of whom, the Cardinals that were Judges were to act in managing the Process; Besides, the secret Conferen-

ces, which Cardinal *Carpi* had with him, who thought the Opinion of so great a Divine as *Montalto* was, and One so well versed in Courts of Judicature, would remove any Scruples that should rise in his Mind about the Matter. The Lord *Frederici*, who was naturally of a rigid Disposition, made choice of him too for his secret Adviser. This coming to the Brothers Ears, they said publickly, *If Montalto be of Council for the Commissaries, the Poor Lords will be severely handled.*

After Nine Months labouring the Point, the Business was reported in a full Consistory, and Cardinal *Caraffa* was found guilty of Felony by the Pope Himself. The Counts *de Montorio* and *d'Alis*, with *Leonard de Gardino* were found guilty of Murther, and several other Crimes by the Governour of *Rome*. They all Four received Sentence of Death, and the Publick Officer had Orders to execute them according to the Custom of the Country. The Cardinal was strangled in Prison, and the other Three beheaded publickly. *Montalto* being desired to assist one of 'em in his last Offices, was afterwards ask'd, *if he had no more mercy upon their Souls than he had shewn to their Bodies: To which he answer'd, The only Wrong that was done 'em, was the keeping 'em Nine Months in Prison, if he had been Pope, he would have dispatch'd 'em in as many Days.*

Tho' his Holiness was much taken up with these severe Acts of Justice, he thought at the same time upon the continuation of the Council of *Trent*: There he bore the charges of a great many Prelates, and Religious, who were considerable either for Piety or Learning. Those of the Apostles Convent, who had an antipathy, to *Montalto*, did what they cou'd with the Cardinal

dinal Protector to get him sent to *Trent*: But This Prelate considering the employment was neither fit for him nor Suitable to his Inclination, was not prevail'd with to do it. *Montalto* did not care for being far from *Rome*, at the time that a new Provost of the Order was to be chose. He had reason to believe they would pitch upon him: which was the reason some of the Brothers, who were afraid of seeing him in that employ, were so earnest to get him sent to the Council. But he was chose however at *Witfontide* 1561 (at which time Father *Gaspar de Naples* left the Office) as well upon the Strength of his own Merit, as the recommendation of Cardinal *Carpi*; tho' against the will of some that had Votes at the Chapter who opposed him out of some Interest of their own.

Some Months after his Election, the General, who had been against him in it, died; and Father *Avosta* Vicar-General was put into his place. He was a Man but of Moderate Learning, but of a good Reach and Ready Wit, who had always opposed *Montalto's* designs, and particularly declared against him at his Election.

There was a custom, when a General died, the Estate he left fell to his Successor: Father *Avosta* Interpreting this in favour of himself, wou'd have taken possession of the Money his Predecessor left behind him: *Montalto* opposed him, and made it appear what was coming ought rather to be applied to the uses of Religion in general, than to one Man's private advantage. He wrote very earnestly to the Cardinal Protector about it, and to so good purpose, that by the Favour of Cardinal *Borghese*, who has been since Canonized, and, as the Popes Nephew, at that time govern'd the Affairs of the Church, he obtain'd a Brief, by which it was decreed, whatever be-
longed

longed to the deceas'd General shou'd be applied to the use of the Apostles Convent. This was executed 1562. and the Money laid out, to build an apartment for the Generals, and to beautifie the Vestry and Organ.

This Year, in which the Council of Trent was broke up a third time, *Montalto* was again in Trouble by the Generals means: but the Cardinal Protector being inform'd of the Truth of these Intrigues, brought him off with honour, and he justified himself in every point of his accusation.

Cardinal *Carpi* died 1563. much lamented by the Pope and the whole Sacred College. He was a Person of extraordinary Vertue and Merit, and had done very considerable service to the Church. His death struck *Montalto* to the Heart, not only thro' a sense of gratitude for Favour, received, but as much was he afflicted for the loss of what he still expected: He was constantly with him in his Sicknes overflowing with Tears; and when he saw him expiring broke out into these words which he cou'd scarce pronounce for sighing; *I should be more happy to die with him, than to survive him: so much he was over-born with Sorrow that for above a week he was in continual sighs and Tears.* And the Cardinal of *Alexandria* to console him said, *Montalto, you have indeed lost a Friend that loved you very well, but you have another left that loves you still as much.* To which the Poor *Montalto* made this return: *My Lord I make it my request to God Almighty, that your Lordship may enjoy all manner of Prosperity, and particularly, I desire your life may be preserved to comfort me in the loss of so generous a Friend, as now I miss.*

They made a Magnificent Funeral for the Cardinal Protector, in the Church of the Holy Apostles.

postles. The General who said Mass, wou'd not invite *Montalto* to the Ceremony, tho' by his place he ought to have been there. He complain'd of this Affront to the Pope, and desired satisfaction; but it being too trivial a business for His Holiness to engage in, He did not think fit to make it up. This squabble was soon followed by another of the same Persons.

Montalto, as Provost General had given notice of the Cardinal's Death to all the Provincials of the Order, enjoining them to sing a Mass in every Convent for his Soul. The General maintain'd, it was properly his business to have directed the Provincials, and that *Montalto* had invaded his Rights. He sent him a Message by one of the Monks, that *Himself medled with nobody's Business but his own, and he desir'd Montalto would observe the same Rule.* *Montalto* was a little offended with the Complement, and sent him Word, *He knew well enough what his own business was, and did not need any Instructions upon the Matter.* This Affair brought 'em both before Cardinal *Borromeo*, whom they had made Arbitrator of their Differences.

Providence at that time seem'd to shew a particular regard to *Montalto*, by the promotion of *Marco Antonio Colono*. He had by steps rose to the Arch-Bishoprick of *Tarentum*, and accordingly was sent to the Council of *Trent*, in which he so well Answer'd Expectation, (besides the Merits of his Family, and the services he had done the Holy See) that the Pope thought fit to honour him with the Sacred Purple, under the Title of the Holy Apostles.

The Whole Town rejoiced at his Preferment, But *Montalto* extremely; who having had the honour to read Philosophy to him, might well expect his Friendship and Protection. And when he

he went to give him Joy of his new Dignity, he was received with all manner of esteem and kindness. The Cardinal mentioning his having Studied under *Montalto*, said, *Father, I have not forgot that I was your Scholar, and you may make use of me according to the right you have as Master.* To which the other with abundance of respect made Answer; *That Persons of his Rank were always look'd upon as Masters, and not as Scholars, that it was Honour enough for him to have had opportunity of serving him.* This Gentleman who indeed inherit'd the Generous disposition of his Family, contributed much to *Montalto's* advancement.

The General Chapter was appointed at *Florence*, 1566. by Order of the Pope, tho' some advis'd rather to have it held at *Rome*. *Montalto* foreseeing how he was like to succeed in it did all he could to hinder their meeting at *Florence*. Not that he thought to arrive at the Generalship, very well knowing that *Avosta* who was none of his Friends cou'd command Votes enough to keep him out. But he had a prospect of promoting the advantages of Religion much better at *Rome*; where the Generals dare not abuse their Authority being under the immediate Inspection of the Pope. When he saw Cardinal *Borromeo*, had named by Authority of the Holy See *Avosta* President of the Chapter, he gave up the thoughts of what was designed for him.

All his Friends, and particularly the Cardinal of *Alexandria*, advis'd him to avoid all opportunities of disputes and quarrels, by finding out some Honourable excuse of not going to a Chapter so far from *Rome*, where his Interest was not great enough to oppose the General. All they cou'd say was to no purpose, and as great deference as was due to the Cardinal's opinion, he

he told him going to this Chapter was of very great consequence to him. That his Enemies would set him out for a timorous mean Spirited Wretch if for fear of the General he should neglect the Interests of Religion, at a time when his Post particularly oblig'd him to maintain 'em. That he had many things to offer there in Person, which it was impossible to lay before the Chapter in writing; and more, that the General wou'd take advantage of his absence to ruin his Authority in his Office. Being positive in his opinion, he went from *Rome* in company only of a Monk, and in five days arrived at *Florence*, which was Two Days before the opening of the Chapter. The President begun with him, by shewing He should not have left *Rome* so much on a sudden, where his business required him to be for the good of his Order. And that he shou'd not have come to be troublesome in a House at *Florence* against the usual practice, which does not suffer a Provost General to go to a Chapter before it's opened. This first squabble was follow'd by another; The first time the Chapter sat it was taken up with creating and admitting the Officers of the Assembly: *Avosta* wou'd have it that *Montalto* shou'd not be there, tho' the Provosts General always were. *Montalto* complain'd highly of this Injustice, and protested against it: However considering it as an Affair of no great moment he pursued it no farther. The General Stomaching the little quarrels that had been between 'em, wou'd not admit him at the Second sitting, where it was necessary he should be present. *Montalto* taking these Affronts very Heinously, made his Protestation in Writing, and set it up himself over the Hall Door, and went away without taking leave of the Chapter.

Avofa, who wanted nothing but a Pretence to get him away, was very well pleas'd with his retiring; and having seen the Form of his Protestation, sent an Order to all the Wardens by whom he was to go, in his way to *Rome*, That they should take him up, in farther Order. But *Montalto* suspecting his Tricks, lodg'd only in *Dominican* Convents.

In this Journey, two Accidents extraordinary enough befel him. The first was a Day's Journey off *Rome*, at an Inn where he Din'd: After Dinner, he lay down upon the Bed to rest a little, before he got on Horseback: His Eyes were hardly clos'd, when he was disturb'd with a great Noise, which made him run to the Window to see what was the matter: He saw several Sergeants keeping Guard without, whilst others of their Company fasten'd the Door on the Inside, and were searching the House very narrowly.

He imagin'd these were in quest of him, by means of the General; and that he had recourse to the Secular Arm, for securing his Person. The Fright he was in, put him upon contriving how he shou'd get off. Just when the Noise was loudest, he heard a knocking at his Door; and because he did not open it immediately, they threaten'd to break it open. To prevent that, he let 'em in; and, to his great comfort, they told him, they look'd for a High-way-Man, having Intelligence he was conceal'd there. As soon as he came to himself, he took Horse, and as he thought upon the matter by the way, condemn'd himself, saying aloud, *Is it possible that such a Man as Montalto shall into a Panick Fear?* A little Consideration might have satisfy'd him, the General wou'd not take that Course with him; or if he had, the Order could not have been so suddenly executed.

T'other

Other Mischance, was, the loss of his Cloak, which he lost from behind him, for want of tying it fast: It was a great while before he mis'd it, and therefore he thought it could not be recover'd. Next Morning, falling in with a Tradesman that was going the same Road, they rode along talking together. This Honest Man finding it began to rain, unt'y'd a Cloak that was fasten'd to his Crupper, and put it on. *Montalto* presently saw it was that he had lost, and without any more a-do, pull'd it off of his Fellow Traveller's Back, and put it on himself.

Avosta, in the mean time, was labouring for a Pretence to rout him: He kept the business of the Chapter at a stand, and employ'd himself in a Process against *Montalto*. This sudden Prosecution was grounded upon several things, the most considerable are these: The words he had spoke disrespectfully to him, as Apostolick President: His breaking the settled Rules of the Chapter, by meddling with Matters he had nothing to do with: The premeditated Design with which he came to that August Assembly, that he might put all things in Confusion; And the Menaces he had used toward several of the Religious. To these Accusations were added the Informations given in against him at *Rome* upon other Occasions. All which making his Cause appear very ill, it was Tried before *Avosta* and his Assistants: And *Montalto*, without any Defence made for himself, was adjudg'd Incapable, and depriv'd of his Office. Some of his Judges were of Opinion, it was best to go cautiously to work: They represented him a Man of very great Interest, and that he wou'd never stop there, but wou'd go throw himself at the Pope's feet, and desire Justice: That when the Dispute was about an Office so considerable as his was, they shou'd not make one step without the
Delibera-

Deliberation. But the General being above these Considerations, declar'd he cou'd not suffer such Crimes to go unpunish'd, for which the Offender deserv'd not only to lose his Office, but even to be degraded from his Orders: That his Holiness would give a very severe Sentence upon him, if he shou'd dare to Complain to him of a Judgment pronounc'd against him: And let what wou'd come of it, he wou'd be bound to answer for't, and give the Pope a good Account.

This was *Montalto* Turn'd out, tho' some were rather for Suspecting him only, and citing him to come and Answer for himself. The General, at the same time, made a Motion to have another Provost chose in his room, *Father Thomas de Varaso* by Name, who was no more a Friend to *Montalto*. Most of the Brothers were sufficiently surpriz'd, to see with what heat he pursu'd the Interest of *Varaso*, to get him in, tho' there were a great many of a higher Merit, and more likely to fill the Place well.

This *Thomas de Varaso*, who was much in favour with Cardinal *Borromeo*, for having read Logicks to him, hearing of his Scholar's new Promotion, and of his Power with the Pope his Uncle, went straight to *Rome*, expecting by such an Interest to arrive at the greatest things of his Order. He had sometime before this procured several Letters of Recommendation from the Cardinal to *Avosta*; by which he was prevail'd upon, tho' otherwise not much inclin'd, to do him what Service lay in his way. Finding this Occasion proper to oblige the Cardinal Nephew, and supplant *Montalto*, he thought to put into his head a Person whose Interest was strong enough to hinder the Pope from declaring the Deprivation unjust.

Montalto no sooner heard of the Matter, but he went to give the Cardinal of *Alexandria* an Account

Account of it. His Eminence, after blaming him for going to the Chapter against his Opinion, did his endeavour with the Pope to get some Redress of this Misfortune; and Cardinal *Colo* also labour'd in it. *Montalto* presented a Petition to his Holiness, but he knew before-hand there was not much to be expected, *Varaso* having got the start of him; and as soon as ever the Election was over, came Post to *Rome*, by *Avost*'s Advice, to wait upon Cardinal *Borromeo* his Patron, and engage him to get the Election confirm'd by the Pope.

His Holiness, without any regard to the Complaints of poor *Montalto*, approved all that had passed against him in the Chapter of *Florence*. This cast him down to that degree, his Friends thought he would have had a Fit of Sickness upon't; but the Cardinal of *Alexandria* prevail'd with him, that he wou'd not so much give way to his Grief and Resentment.

His Uneasiness grew again upon him, when he saw Cardinal *Borromeo* made Protector of the Order, and concluded upon it, that he could hope for no Employment there. For tho' the Cardinal had the Character of a Man of great Worth, yet he was afraid his Enemies, if ever they got under his Protection, would abuse it, by doing him ill Turns.

Cardinal *Borromeo* was soon inform'd *Montalto* was not so much to blame as they pretended; and tho' his Behaviour could not altogether be defended, yet it deserved not the Usage he had met with. But because he wou'd not go back from what he had done in *Varaso*'s behalf, he try'd to sweeten up the Matter; and sent for *Montalto* to advise him not to take the business so much to heart, promising him he would take care to fix him to his Satisfaction, and procure him a good Employment.

Employment either in a Religious Foundation, or elsewhere. *Montalto* giving him to understand he design'd to go from *Rome*, the Cardinal order'd him to stay there, making him large Assurances, he should in a short time receive Testimonies of his Favour. This brought him out of the despair he was in, of ever being preferr'd by *Borromeo*, and made him wait with patience an Experiment of his Good-will.

But there fell out two things at the Court of *Rome*, of so very great consequence, as made Cardinal *Borromeo* not only to forget his Promises to *Montalto*, but all that was past, and took up all his Thoughts. A certain *Benedictine* Monk of *Ascoli* had entred into a Plot together with three other Rogues, to assassinate the Pope as he gave Audience: This Wretch, for his own part, was to have the honour of giving him the first stroke, as he was reading a Paper he wou'd offer him; the Horreur of this Parricide wrought so powerfully, at the point when it was to be committed, that he had not the heart to go about it. One of his Accomplices thinking to save his Life, discover'd the business, betray'd the rest of the Gang, and had 'em taken up. They died in all the Torments so Villainous a Design deserv'd, and yet could not be brought to discover the Author of the Conspiracy. Tho' they were Examined a-part, they all agreed in what they said, That they were carry'd on to this Undertaking, by a firm Persuasion, that after this Pope was dead, there would be another chose by the general Consent of Christendom, who should be more like an Angel, if not higher still, than Man, and should Reign over the whole Earth. It was the opinion of some, that the Heretical Princes had put this into their Heads: But others, with greater probability of truth, imputed it to the fury of

Enthusiasm, and the vain satisfaction of Talk'd of.

The other thing that happened at Rome, One Dispute between the Embassadors of France Spain, for Precedency. This Affair diverted yet Court from every thing else, and the French Embassadour was mighty earnest to have it decided on his side. The Pope, to carry the business even, forbore going to Chapel. The French, disgusted at his tedious Proceedings, threatened they would go out of Town to the Council of Trent, and try what they could do there. The Affair was at length committed to the Prudence of Cardinal Borromeo, who was so much taken up with it, that he had no time to think of Montalto. The Pope resolved to send a Legate à latere into Spain, upon the Affair of the Archbishop of Toledo, which was of great Importance to the Holy See; having this further Design in it, to sweeten up the King of Spain by so great an Embassy, upon his Ambassadour's Disappointment, in having the Question given against him, which would make his Catholick Majesty a little fullen.

After he had look'd about for a fit Person, he pitch'd upon *Hugo Buon Compagnon*, a *Bolognese*, whom he had lately made Cardinal, with the Title of *St. Sixtus*. He was a Man of great Experience in State Affairs, and by his good Services, advanc'd himself to *St. Peter's* Chair, under the Name of *Gregory XIII*. As soon as he was appointed Legate, he prepar'd to be gone very quickly, the Affair of *Toledo* not admitting any longer Delay.

He was to have a Councillor of the Holy Office allow'd him, to take care of the Affairs of the *Inquisition*, under him. Abundance of the Religious aim'd at this Employment, as well to get an Acquaintance with the Cardinals, as to

Spain at Free-cost. *Montalto*, who had
 at *Rome*, amongst the Brothers, as long as
 he could, told the Cardinal of *Alexandria*
 he would be glad to wait upon the Legate, as
 Councillor. The Cardinal did his Endeavour to
 procure this Commission for him; but he found
 some difficulty in it, because there was an *Augustin*
 had put in for it before him, and the Cardinal-
 Legate had as good as declar'd for him. But
Alexandria desir'd Cardinal *Borromeo* to interpose
 his Authority; who reflecting upon the Neglect
 he had been guilty of to *Montalto*, whom he had
 not done Justice to; and his word to make up the
 loss of his Place by very good Amends, took so
 much pains to serve him, that he carried it a-
 gainst all Competitors, and was declar'd Chap-
 lain to the Legate, and Councillor of the Ho-
 ly Office.

He left *Rome* in the end of *August*, 1565. The
 Legate being well acquainted with his Merit,
 and how capable he was of the Business of the
 Inquisition, express'd a great deal of satisfaction
 to have him near him.

It's worth observation, that this Embassy was
 made up of Three Popes, that is to say, Three
 Men who Succeeded one another in the Chair:
Buon Compagnon, by the Name of *Gregory XIII.*
Montalto, who came next by the Name of *Six-
 tus*, and the Lord *John Baptista Castagna*, Bishop
 of *Rossano in Calabria*, (whom *Pius IV.* sent Nun-
 cio into *Spain*, taking the opportunity of the Le-
 gate's Company) who Succeeded *Sixtus*, and
 took the Name of *Urban VII.*

The Cardinal Legate communicated all the
 Affairs of his Embassy to *Castagna* and *Montalto*,
 and treated 'em with an extraordinary Famili-
 arity. *Montalto*, who knew how to make his
 Court to these Two Prelates, wou'd often be

saying, when they Three were together; *thinks I see Two Popes when I look upon you.* To which the Nuncio one day made Answer, *You are much in the right: as to my Lord Legate, they will do him but Justice by Advancing him to the Supreme Dignity, but for my own part, Father Montalto, I am no more likely Man than You are.* The Legate putting in, said; *Tho' I am Cardinal of a longer standing than You, yet You may be Pope before me: One may apply well enough those Words of the Scripture to the dignities of the Church, The First shall be Last, and the Last First.*

Thus they convers'd every Day, and Montalto made his Court to 'em. Once upon a time taking up the Cardinal Legate's Cap, which lay upon the Table, the Legate said, *Montalto, see whether it becomes you. That's time enough my Lord,* cried t'other, *when you are Pope.* To which the Legate Answer'd, *I should desire it for no other Reason, but to satisfy your Curiosity, and do Justice to your Merit.* The Nuncio coming in at this time, *Montalto said, My Lord, I desire you to bear witness, my Lord Legate has promis'd to make me Cardinal as soon as he is Pope.* 'Tis very true, said the Legate, and laugh'd, *I have promis'd him a Hat, because he hath promis'd me the Tripple-Crown.* The Nuncio told 'em, *You shall be both pleas'd if there's no more than my Evidence necessary to do it.*

The Legate was passionately fond of Montalto, and knowing him to be of a good understanding and solid Judgment, did nothing without his Advice. But there was not the same good Agreement between him and the Officers of the Household, either upon Account of his severe Temper, or the aversion these People generally have to Monks, or that they were jealous he was too intimate with their Master.

had daily fallings out with some of 'em, particularly, there was a Groom of the Chamber who could not bear him: This Man was accus'd with all his past Life; and one Day against all the rest, reproach'd him before several of the Legate's Domesticks, with the Quarrels he had rais'd amongst those of his Order. And Added, It was no wonder he fell out so constantly with the Brothers, since he could agree with no-body; with other Speeches very much to his Disadvantage. This Quarrel coming to the Legate's Ears, put him into such a Rage, that he had like to have turn'd the Groom out of Door upon't. But *Montalto* generously obtain'd his Pardon, entreating the Nuncio also to interceed. This he did to oblige him, at the same time advising him to have a care of such things for the future, for the sake of his own quiet and credit both.

From hence forward *Montalto* alter'd his Behaviour, taking the Nuncio's Counsel: He studied by his good Offices to make every body of the Family well affected to him; and repented his not doing so sooner. He was told, that as soon as ever he was Nam'd to accompany the Legate into *Spain*; some of the Brothers said, He that cou'd not live peaceably in a Cloyster, would be disagreeable enough to the Ambassador's Train. And the General himself had said to one of the chief Officers, If his Master kept him but One Month, he'd engage to lay down his Generalship, that he might have it. This Talk being brought him at the time when he was out with the Groom of the Chamber, put him upon a Resolution to behave himself with that sweetness and complaisance for the future, as should convince the World, it was the Brother's Fault, they Liv'd no better together.

In Six Weeks time they Arriv'd in where he was taken notice of, as a great Ingenuity. The Religious of his shew'd him mighty Respect, and constantly their Court to him, which well enough his Natural Ambition, to be above others, was invited to assist at a Chapter, and open the Disputations before the Cardinal Legate, who design'd to honour them with his Presence.

He had private Conferences with several Ministers of the Inquisition, about the Interests of the Holy Office; which was not at that time so well establish'd in *Spain*, as it was a little after. And the Legate to whom this Affairs was particularly recommended, was glad to see the *Spaniards* conferring with his Councillour about it. They brought Two Prisoners upon their Trial, and desired *Montalto* to be in Court, upon whose Advice they were Executed. But he did nothing without giving the Legate an exact Account of it, and asking his Advice, and the Nuncio's too.

The Marquis *de Berg*, and the Lord *Montigny* were come to *Madrid* from *Flanders*, by Order (as was given out) of the Dutchess of *Parma*, Governess of the *Netherlands*. But it was plain enough the Chief Burghers, and the Heads of the Faction had more hand in sending 'em thither than that Princeess. That their business was, to Petition the King the Inquisition might be taken off, to which the *Flemish* would never submit.

For many Reasons, His Majesty deferr'd their Audience. They imagin'd the Legate was the great cause of the delay, because he knew what they desired would be in prejudice of the Holy See; and directly contrary to one of the Motives that put his Holiness upon sending this Embassy

to the King: For he had Instructions to the Establishing of the Inquisition in *Flanders*, and to push it on with all imaginable earnestness. He had already dispos'd the King and Council to do this Service to the Church: And he was afraid these Deputies should bring 'em off their Intention; they on their part fancied, He was the Means of keeping them from Audience.

These Two Lords made a Visit to the Cardinal Legate, who receiv'd 'em wondrous kindly, but they pass'd their time in Compliments, and he did no business with 'em, but through *Montalto*, whom he order'd to get acquaintance with 'em; of which he found out some means or other. *Montalto* overjoy'd to find himself Intrusted with a Negotiation of such Importance, employ'd all his skill to grow intimate with 'em, and particularly applied himself to *Montigny*, who was a Man express'd himself well, and spoke *Italian* in perfection, with a great many accomplishments besides. He shew'd a great Satisfaction in *Montalto's* Conversation; though it was seldom upon any other Topick than setting up the Inquisition in *Flanders*; and tho' he was inform'd, the Legate would not have allow'd *Montalto* to converse so freely with him, and the *Marquis de Berg*, but upon that score: They were both of 'em extreamly taken with his way of Discoursing upon that Argument; which he manag'd so much like a Christian and Politician too, as to make *Montigny* profess in a great Company, *A Hundred Monks such as he was would produce a great Harvest in the Netherlands.*

He gave an Account of all that pass'd between these Lords and himself, to the Cardinal Legate, and to the Nuncio, who had also some Conferences with them; but his Quality forc'd him

to take such measures as *Montalto* might disagree with, whose Habit allow'd him to pay a Visit any time without inconvenience. For this reason, he was often out of the Legate's Palace, and as he did not much care to be alone, spent the best part of his Time with some of the Brethren. They Invited him to a very great Dinner, but he wou'd not go till he had ask'd the Legate's Leave, who gave it him with Joy, well knowing what a pleasure they took in his Company. His Genius was indeed admirable and always Govern'd the Conversation. He gave the Legate so good an Account of all that pass'd amongst 'em, as made him wonder a Man bred in a Cloyster, at a distance from the World, should be so well Skill'd in secular Affairs; so capable of managing the Interest of the Church, as well as that of the State, and making a firm agreement between 'em, without disorder and confusion.

THE FOURTH BOOK.

WHILST the Affairs of *Spain*, with relation to the Holy See, were carry'd on as we have shewn, the King and the Legate receiv'd News of the Death of *Pius IV.* which happen'd the 10th of *December.* This broke off all Business at this Court. His Death had been a much greater Affliction to *Montalto*, if it had not been that he flatter'd himself, the Cardinal of *Alexandria*, from whom he might hope for any thing, wou'd be Chose, the first Conclave. The Prayers he put up perpetually for his Election, which he told his Friends, were in his daily *Memento*, pass'd for a kind of Presage of his Advancement : However, he kept this to himself when he was in the Legate's Company, who was not enclin'd that way, tho' he did not reckon that Cardinal unfit to govern the Church. When he was free with his Domesticks, he used to say, he knew no better Man than *Alexandria*; but for all that, wou'd not give him his Voice, if he were in the Conclave, looking upon him to be a Man too much addicted to do Justice with Severity.

At the same time, *Montalto* had News of *Avosta's* Death. All the Family of the Cardinal-Legate were heartily desirous of their Master's Promotion; and *Montalto* seem'd to join with 'em in it, tho' in his heart he was for *Alexandria*, his old

old and tried Friend: Yet the Cardinal-I thought never the worse of him, because he there was Reason in what he wish'd; and by the Conclave is no otherwise acted, but ever for the sake of his Kinsman, or his Patron.

Tho' he was at such a distance from *Rome*, he had the best Interest of any One: And Cardinal *Borromeo*, who was at the Head of a considerable Party, and went into the Conclave with greater strength than any Cardinal-Nephew before him, at first did all he could to get him Chose, judging him the fittest of all his Uncle's Creatures, whose Merit laid as just a Claim to the Supreme Dignity, as any of 'em cou'd shew. But his hour was not yet come, Providence waiting a more favourable Opportunity of advancing him to the Chair, declar'd in favour of Cardinal *Alexandria*. He was supported by Cardinal *Borromeo* and *Farnese*, Leaders of the two most powerful Factions, and was Chose the 7th of *January*, 1566. It's hard to determine whether the Skill with which these two Cardinals managed the Intrigue, as well as the Secrecy of it, was more surprizing, than the Carelessness of the other Side, and their Stupidity, in not suspecting the Design.

A Courier was dispatch'd to the Legate, to give an Account of the Election, and with Orders that he should return to *Rome*. He made a shew of Joy by splendid Entertainments in his Palace, with Acclamations of, *Long Live Pope Pius V.* for that was the Name his Holiness took. But the Legate at his return to *Rome*, was not acceptable to him because he gave him Lectures of Moderation and wish'd the edge of his severe Justice might be a little taken off.

Montalto only was transported with Joy upon the Occasion, which he could not contain. As soon as he heard of the Election, he went to th

Book IV. Pope SIXTUS V.

93

icans Convent to Rejoice with them, and
 there. The Clafs went about to *Pius Vth's*
 on, the Company being pleas'd, to see *Mon-*
 s Satisfaction. The Officers of the Legate's
 shold made him their Compliments when
 came-home, either to affront him, or
 to please him, it's hard to say which. He
 spoke as if he had indeed the Honour to be a
 Relation of the Pope, often saying, *He should be*
sorry if there were a Man upon the Earth better
pleas'd at any thing, than he was at this Election.
 This Joy was follow'd by a great many Kindnesses
 he receiv'd from the Pope, in the beginning of
 his Pontificate.

As *Montalto* thought upon the Pope at *Madrid*,
 his Holiness did not forget him at *Rome*, being
 careful of his Interests in his absence, and de-
 lighting to do something for him, without any
 body to put him in mind of it. The Death of
Avosta the General, which fell out about the same
 time with *Pius* the IVth's, set *Varaso*, Provost of the
 Order, to work, in order to get the Place. When
 he heard the General was given over, he lost no
 time, but procured a Brief, by means of Cardinal
Borromeo, to succeed him. But the Pope dying
 before *Avosta*, there was another Brief requisite
 to get Possession. As soon as *Pius V.* was Chose,
Varaso made a Petition to him, which Cardinal
Borromeo deliver'd, in which he made it appear
 to be an ancient Privilege of the Religious to rise
 from being Provost of the Order, to the General-
 ship, particularly when the Place was vacant by
 Death: He brought several Precedents, together
 with many Reasons, to shew what he ask'd, was
 but a point of Justice; but what he chiefly in-
 sisted upon, was the Brief he had obtain'd from
Pius IV.

His

His Holiness, with abundance of Patience, all they had to say; then made Answer, " was glad to hear from him, that the Province of the Order, was the Step by which a Man should rise to be General: That he was fully resolv'd to follow the ancient Practice; doing which, he must make *Montalto* General, who was the only true and rightful Provost of the Order, for that he had been unjustly Depriv'd at the Chapter of *Florence*, contrary to the usual Course, by main Force of *Avosta* the General.

Varaso, surpriz'd and vex'd at this Answer, applied to his Patron, Cardinal *Borromeo*, to consult how he might make good the Brief which the Cardinal had obtain'd for him, and the Pope now pretended was Null and Void, because it was granted without hearing the other Side.

The Cardinal told him his Cause was good; but yet the Pope, who was to be Judge of it, had already declar'd for *Montalto*. *Varaso* did not think fit to push the business any further, and, notwithstanding his Brief, was glad to sit down Provost-General. For his Holiness had pronounc'd, and with Reason too, his Election into that Post void, if Cardinal *Borromeo* had not got it ratified by him, as a special Favour.

The Pope had a Brief for *Montalto* dispatch'd immediately, in which he declar'd he made him General of his Order, from his own motion only; and, as an additional Favour, sent it to him by an Express; though the Courier had also Letters for the Legate, containing an Order to dispatch some Affairs of Importance as he came to *Genoa*.

The Courier came to the Legate at *Asti*, a Town of *Piedmont*, and deliver'd him the Pacquet from his Holiness, in which *Montalto's* Brief was enclosed. The Legate carried it to him to his Chamber,

ber, and said, as he deliver'd it, *Look here, Montalto, what good effects the Pope's Affection has produced for you already.* To which Montalto replied, *This Favour, My Lord, is to be esteem'd much greater, as his Goodness alone is the Motive to make me so happy.* And a little after, *My Lord, What an Excess of Kindness has his Holiness shew'd me in this, that he shou'd bestow anything upon me without asking? He does you but Justice, answer'd the Legate, in preferring your Merit to the Importunities and Recommendations of Others.*

The Legate carried him afterwards to the Cordeliers Church at Asti, where *Te Deum* was sung, his Eminence being Præcentor: Then he Treated the New General with a very handsom Supper, whose Health he wou'd have go about. The Brothers also shew'd their Joy, by Bonfires in their Convent. After Supper, the Legate said to Montalto, in a very obliging manner, *Father, its time for us to part: You are going to take up the Post of a Man in Authority, and I am withdrawing to the Condition of a meer Subject. I shall ever esteem it a greater Honour,* replied Montalto, *to be your Servant, than to be advanc'd to all I now have in my Order.* The Legate press'd him continually to take Possession of his Charge; but he wou'd do nothing in it, saying, *He had yet the honour of being in his Service till he came to Rome; and besides, he thought himself oblig'd, before he entred upon any part of his Office as General, to kiss his Holiness's Feet.* This Modesty, however, did not hinder him from lodging in all the Convents of his Order which lay in his Road, nor from receiving Complements of all the Wardens and Provincials who came from all Parts to meet him.

At his Arrival, the Pope treated him so kindly, that after he had kiss'd his Toe, he embraced him with all the Tenderness in the World, and talk'd with

with him a great while upon several Affairs. Brothers of the *Apostle's* Convent who had treated him scurvily, were in a great concern: resolved to make him just and honourable Answer for what was past, in hopes he would not remember it against 'em: And indeed what they did upon the occasion was so Magnificent as before had never been seen. There was a Solemn Procession made, and the Greatest of their Preachers made Orations in his Praise. There were Consorts of Musick composed on purpose for this Ceremony, and Verses in honour of *Montalto* set up on the Walls of the Cloyster, and the chief places of the Convent. In short, his Entry was like a Triumph and several People came to *Rome* for the sake of being Spectators. All the other Generals of an Order, and most of the Prelates that were in *Rome* came to wait on him, as well on Account of the Pope's Friendship for him, as upon his New Dignity. *Montalto* doubly return'd their Civilities, and went first to see the General of the *Dominicans*, to be merry with him in private upon the Pope's Exaltation. He lived always in a very good understanding with the Religious of this Order; and the Recommendation of a *Dominican* would prevail with him more than any Prelate's.

He began with giving order for the Reforming some Abuses crept in among the Brothers, and sent directions to all the Provincials that they should see it executed. In the next place he prepared for his Visitation, which he was about to make together with his Assistants in the Provinces of the *Ecclesiastical State*, *Tuscany*, and the Kingdom of *Naples*. Going to take Leave of the Pope and ask his Blessing, His Holiness express'd a Satisfaction to see him show so much concern for the Houses of his Order; but that he wou'd

not have him take up too much time in the course of his Visiting, because he desired to have him at *Rome* near himself. These Words Affected him so much that he was like to put off his Journey; but that he could not Decently do it after he had taken Leave of the Pope. He made such hast in the Affair as betray'd strong Inclination to be back again. In the First Place he Visited the Province of the Marquisate, and struck a Terror wherever he came: He excused No body, and punished severely the Religious that were charged with having any thing of their own, confiscating their Money to the uses of the Vestry and the House. Amongst the rest, he deprived the Warden of *Fermo*, for being possess'd of some Money which he had not given Account of to the Chapter; and threatned to send him to the Gallies for some other Faults which did not deserve such a Punishment. He sentenced Nine more to the same punishment in Two Years time that he was General, which frighted the Brothers to that Degree, that there were few of 'em would venture upon the Charge; choosing rather to continue barely Monks than be exposed to the rigorous Inspection of a General, who meddled only with those that were distinguish'd by an Office which they did not discharge well.

What's very extraordinary, he disturbed none of his Enemies, not so much as those who would have disgraced and ruin'd him: He connived at their conduct, and used those with much greater exactness and severity who had done him service, than others who owed him a Spite. This practice he took up to let the World see, Revenge had no part in his determinations, but he was act'd by a Love of strict Justice.

Indeed if he gave any instance of his Resentment it was only to the Memory of his Dead Pre-

cessor, by undoing what he had done, and making his Decrees void and null by New Ones of his Own.

He called all that had been in Office under *Avosta*, not excepting the Provincials, to Account for their Administration. He Suspended Father *Gulielm* a *Florentine*, Provincial of *Tuscany*, who was under an Accusation of making some present to the Deceased General, by which he obtain'd his Preferment: But he restored him at the Request of *Cosmo* Great Duke of *Florence*, who was Earnest with *Montalto* for it. He thought he must not deny a Prince of so High Merit, who had received him in his Palace at his return from the Marquisate, and treated him very Nobly.

He spent but Five Months in Visiting the Marquisate, *Umbria*, *Tuscany*, and the Ecclesiastical State, and Hurry'd back to *Rome* where his Good Fortune waited him. Fearing his Absence might lessen the Pope's kindness for him, he prefer'd being at *Rome* to the care of Visiting the Rest of *Italy*. He came thither in *April*, 1567. highly delighted with the Honour that had been done him and the thoughts of being General over those who did not reckon him worthy to govern a Province.

At his coming to *Rome*, he went to kiss his Holiness's Feet, and gave him an Account of what had pass'd in his Journey. He received him with a great deal of Dearness, and commended his Diligence and Zeal; tho' the Cardinal Protector in his Absence had done him Ill Offices, Endeavouring to Persuade his Holiness, that *Montalto* had treated the Brothers so unkindly that some of 'em had writ to him to complain of it; and shewed him at the same time a great Bundle of Letters which he had received from several Places. *Montalto* made so good a Justification of himself, and the
Pope

Pope was so well Satisfied with his Conduct, as to tell him He had great want of him to be near his Person.

This proof of his Confidence in *Montalto*, gave him fresh Hopes. And he left the Care of those Provinces he had not Visited to Commissaries, however Impatient he was to know the Condition they were in. He had a mighty mind to go to *Naples* himself, perhaps to convince the Brethren there, who had affronted him Egregiously, that all they could do was not enough to Interrupt the Course of his Fortune, or inspire him with any thoughts of Revenge.

Tho' the Affairs of Religion took up most of his time, yet he employ'd some in Writing a Commentary upon St. *Ambrose*, which he had begun before he went to *Spain*. He had a mind to finish it, that he might Print it, with a Dedication to the Pope; but he was diverted from it by a great deal of business that fell out.

Besides the Affairs of his Order, The Pope committed abundance of things of Importance to him, and made him Councillor in several Congregations. There was One Cardinal *de Bonello* the Pope's Sisters Son, whom He had taken out of the Order of Dominicans, and preferr'd by the title of St. *Mary of Minerva*, who also took up the Name of *Alexandria* after his Uncle. This Gentleman was ordered by the Pope to keep company with *Montalto* as much as he could, in hopes it wou'd prove an Advantage to him. All these things hindered his going forward with *St. Ambrose*, which at last he made an End of, when he was Cardinal, and Dedicated it to *Gregory XIII.* but the Pope did not Accept it so kindly as was Expected by the Author. He shew'd abundance of respect to Cardinal *Bonello*, (whom we shall, for the future call *Alexandria*,) and

made it his business to oblige him, and do him service as often as he found opportunity. He spoke much in his commendation to his Uncle, and set out his Behaviour to Advantage. His Holiness was highly delighted to hear such a Character of his Nephew, from one that he looked upon to be sincere and disinterested, as well as in truth a Good Judge. And to the Cardinal of *Alexandria*, spoke much in praise of *Montalto*, telling him what he had a design to do for him. This Cardinal made his Court to the Pope by the good Offices he did *Montalto*, and His Holiness was pleased to see the good agreement there was between his Nephew and *Montalto*, who was often recommended to him by *Alexandria*.

The Passion which the Pope had for *Montalto*, (if one may call a strong Inclination by that Name) went so far as to make him his Extraordinary Confessor, which, all People took for a good Omen to him. Father *Varaso* whose aim was to be General, had long wished to see him Cardinal that he might have him out of the way; and therefore did all that in him lay, to bring it about. He had been reconciled to him a long while, and seeing his Interest so great with the Pope, did nothing without his approbation and advice, which he follow'd with all submission and respect.

One day they were together in the Pope's presence upon some Religious Affair, and His Holiness said to *Montalto* as he was taking leave of him; *Father General, Here's Father Varaso has as much mind to your Place as he had before You was in it, are you of the opinion to let him have it? I throw my Place, my Heart, and my Pen* replied *Montalto*, at your Holiness's Feet; and am ready to resign my Generalship to whomsoever you shall Please to bestow it on, since your Goodness alone

gave

gave *Montalto* a Title. From hence *Varaso* concluded *Montalto* would soon have a Hat, and himself the Generalship.

In the end of the Year 1568. his Holiness gave *Montalto* the Bishoprick of *St. Agatha*, the Revenue of which was pretty good: The Court of *Rome* having been in expectation of seeing him made Cardinal, was surpriz'd that he should come off with so small a thing, considering what the Pope might have done for a Man that had been a long time very Dear to him; a Man too, to whom his Affection visibly encreas'd, after he came to be Pope, so much as to make all People expect to see him in the Sacred College, rather than General of the *Cordeliers*.

Montalto, whose Natural Ambition made him look upon the thing with the same eyes as other People did who had no interest in it, began to fear he was now at the Top of his Preferment, being installed Bishop, in the beginning of the Year 1569. He accepted it, however, with a very good grace, tho' it is no more than ordinary for the Generals of an Order to be advanced to a Bishoprick when they go out of their Office: And in this there was no distinction made between *Montalto* who was a favourite, and any other Man.

Pius V. had in this an Intention to oblige Cardinal *Borromeo*, and his Nephew *Alexandria*, who had powerfully recommended to him *Varaso* for the Generalship. His Holiness had a further Design to send *Montalto* Nuncio upon some grand Affair, though he had as yet been employ'd only the *Inquisition*, and Church-Matters: He pitch'd upon him to treat with one of the Sovereign Princes of *Italy*, in the Prospect he had of bringing all the Christian Princes into a League. And because the Habit of a Monk is for the most part disagree

disagreeable in a Prince's Court, his Holiness thought a Bishop would be more acceptable.

Pius V. seem'd to have doubled his Kindness for *Montalto* after he was Bishop, and assur'd him of it in private, saying, *I loved you very well when you was but a Brother, but better now you are a Bishop.* He order'd him to live at *Rome*, near to him, where he gave him Employments of Honour and Importance, changing his first Design of sending him *Nuncio* into *Italy*. When *Montalto* went to ask his Blessing, in order to go to his Diocese, the Pope said to him, *It is necessary for you to stay here; you will discharge your Duty well enough, by doing Service to the Head of the Church; by which too you'll find both Credit and Advantage.* *Montalto's* Hopes were revived at this, and he began to please himself with the thought that his Holiness was well enough affected to him, to put him in the number of those he intended shortly to honour with the Sacred Purple.

This Promotion had been long talk'd of; and five or six Days before it came, the Pope declar'd he had a Hat for *Montalto*: He thought it but due to his Merit; but besides, he had a mind to have a Creature of his Nephew in the Conclave, one that he persuad'd himself would be Grateful. He order'd the Cardinal of *Alexandria* to let *Montalto* know something of the matter, but not to tell him all. *Alexandria*, as he met him, cry'd out, *Montalto! Montalto! my Uncle has a great Kindness for you, and so have I; I hope we shall in a few days shake hands as Brothers.* To which he made answer, *I shall be your Lordship's most Obedient Servant as long as I live, nay, if I come to be Pope.* There had been two Promotions, and *Wagers* had been laid *Montalto* wou'd be the second; Which made the Town say, when they saw he had no Hat, *They make him cool his Heels so long.*

Book IV. Pope Sixtus V.

103

This Talk made him tell Cardinal *Alexandria*, that the Common Discourse had made him at least Cardinal already. To which *Alexandria* said, You are so in his Holiness's Thoughts; and that's more to your purpose, than what the World says of your Promotion.

To comprehend this Matter, we must look a little farther off. The Pope had given *Cosmo de Medici*, in *November*, the Title of Great Duke of *Florence*. 'Twas due indeed to the Merits of this Prince, to his Virtue and Piety, and the great Services he had done to the Church. As soon as he receiv'd this Proof of his Holiness's Esteem and Gratitude, he came to *Rome*, where he was Crow'd by the Pope; and this Ceremony was perform'd with all the Magnificence necessary to such an Occasion: There were Justs and Tournaments, and Triumphal Arches were erected in Honour of this Prince. *Montalto* was made choice of for Assistant to Cardinal *Alexandria*, who Officiated at this August Solemnity, and conducted the Great Duke back to his Lodgings in one of the Pope's Coaches.

His Holiness receiv'd News, in *April* following, of the considerable progress Christianity had made in the *Indies*, where several Kings had embraced the Faith, with their whole Provinces. He made a solemn Thanksgiving to God for it, by a Procession; and to make the Publick Joy greater, resolv'd upon a Promotion: He communicated his Design to the Sacred College, and in a full Consistory said, It was but reasonable to augment the Number of Cardinals, in proportion to the progress Religion made in the World. *Montalto*, at last, was one of those that receiv'd the Hat at this Promotion, which was upon the 7th of *May*. The Brothers were extremely

pleas'd at it, as well for his own sake, as for the Honour done to the Habit of St. *Francis*.

There were several Reasons for the Pope's bringing *Montalto* into the Sacred College, the chief of which was, the Inclination which naturally he had for him : He said frequently after his Exaltation, That he found himself strangely dispos'd to do him Kindness ; and once when he was but Cardinal, speaking to Cardinal *Borromæo* in his behalf ; the Cardinal admiring to see him so very much inclin'd to *Montalto's* Interest, said, *I am of opinion, My Lord, you cou'd not defend the Cause of a Relation, with more eagerness than you do his. It's true,* reply'd he, *I find a mighty Satisfaction in expressing the Friendship I have for him.*

The second Reason of Promoting him, was out of a real Esteem he had for Persons of extraordinary Merit, which he look'd upon as a Respect and Tribute to Vertue. This he said in the Consistory, when he mention'd *Montalto*, " That he would bring into the Sacred College a Person of approv'd Deserts, whose Understanding and Experience would be very serviceable to the Church.

In the next place, his Holiness thought it a due Respect to the Memory of Cardinal *Carpi*, whom he had often heard say, That he wish'd himself Pope, for no other reason but to make *Montalto* Cardinal : As he said also to his Secretary, my Lord *Rusticucci de Fano*, whom he made Cardinal at the same Promotion, expressing himself to this effect, *I had so great Service done me by Cardinal Carpi, when I was a Monk, as, in Gratitude, put me upon honouring with the Sacred Purple, a Man who he ever express'd a mighty Kindness for.*

His devotion again to the Habit of St. *Francis*, was another reason of advancing *Montalto* ; his Holiness

Holiness having a mind to shew, in his behaviour to him, the Respect he had for so great and renowned an Order: which this Discourse to his Domesticks, upon the Day of Promoting him, sufficiently discovers; *St. Dominick and St. Francis always lived in a good Understanding with one another; I thought fit therefore to present the General of each Order with a Hat, that I might set an Example to those who wear their Habits, of keeping up the same good Correspondence.* Another time, to the Provost-General of the *Coraciers*, and the Warden of the *Apostle's Convent*, who came to kiss his Feet, and return Thanks for the Honour he had done to their Order, *That it was the least he could do, to shew his abundant Devotion to St. Francis, the making one of his Children Cardinal.*

His Holiness considering this new Cardinal's Circumstances were not good enough to bear up the Port his Preferment required, assign'd him an indifferent Pension, and gave him some Ready-Money for Furniture and Equipage. The Cardinal of *Alexandria* gave him also Proofs of his Liberality. The Convent of the *Holy Apostles*, and several Persons of Quality in *Rome*, and some of the richest Cardinals, made him very handsome Presents.

Sometime after, his Holiness overflowing with Charity and Zeal for the Salvation of Christendom, sent his Nephew, Cardinal *Alexandria*, into *France, Spain and Portugal*, in Quality of Legate, to engage those Crowns in a League against the Common Enemy of Christianity. As soon as *Alexandria* was gone, the Pope committed to *Montalto's* Charge some Affairs which that Cardinal had under his Care; amongst the rest, he was to examine the Prayers, contain'd in the *Breviary*, which are said upon the Festivals of Saints; to reform which, there

there was appointed a Congregation of Divines and Cardinals.

The League being concluded between the Kings of *France, Spain, and Portugal*, in 1571. Cardinal *Alexandria* return'd to *Rome* in Triumph. *Montalto* deliver'd up to him the Management of his Affairs which he had undertook in his absence; and in doing so, seem'd to desire his Ease, and take Breath a little. But he was not allow'd any Idle Time, being perpetually summon'd to all Congregations.

It's worth observing, how *Montalto*, as soon as ever he was Cardinal, took the direct way to the Papacy: He became Humble and Patient, and kept so dexterously at the bottom of his heart his Natural Inclination, which was forward and sprightly, that whoever had seen him, would have said he was born with all that Sweetness and Moderation that appear'd: This was to be seen in his Dress, his Carriage, his Words and Actions, so much, that his old Acquaintance would tell him freely, He was so much altered, they hardly knew him.

Pius V. died in *March* 1572. and the Church, in him, lost one of the Greatest, most Zealous, most Holy Popes that had ever govern'd it. The Order of *St. Dominick*, which has done infinite Service to the Christian Religion, by establishing the Faith in the most remote Countries; by the Conversion of many Hereticks; by the Blood of its Martyrs, their Confessions and Sermons, and Charity to the Sick, did never any thing of so great Advantage to it self, or the Common Good, as furnishing the Church with such an Head.

The Cardinals went into the Conclave, as soon as they had done the last Office for this Holy Man, with the usual Ceremonies. *Montalto*, who made one of their number, seem'd not at all to meddle

in the New Election: He kept close in his Apartment, and liv'd like a little Monk in his Cell, never stirring out but to Mass: He continued silent, and ignorant of all the Movements of the different Factions; and when any of the Cardinals came to invite him to any Party, he answer'd with an unaffected Air, *He had nothing to do but to keep the Cloaths of those that were Bathing: That since he had never been in the Conclave before, he was afraid of making a false Step, and was rather for leaving the business to those that were more inclin'd.*

Thus he shun'd every Faction that would have engaged him. A Behaviour so contrary to what he had shewn before he was Cardinal, made 'em think he had hopes for himself. And Cardinal *Gambara*, who had endeavour'd to bring him over to his Side, finding he could not prevail, and that *Montalto* affected to be of no Party, told him bluntly, as they parted, *I would advise your Lordship to keep these Reserv'd and Demure Airs till another time, for I don't see you are like to do any thing for your self with 'em now.*

And indeed, People of very good Sence could not conceive how a Man, who had oppos'd the whole Senate of *Venice*, at the hazard of his Life, and had been ever Jarring with his Superiours, should, in Purple, not be able to come to any Determination, nor Interest himself in the Chusing a Pope. He was but very little concern'd what People said of him, and therefore acted without any regard to that liberty he knew they would take of Censuring. And again, when any One was propos'd to him, he made answer, *In his Conscience he could not tell whom to give his Vote for, he thought Every One of 'em so capable of Governing the Church, and wish'd he had as many Voices as there were Cardinals, that he might have out at every body's service.* Cardinal *Farneze*, to whom he had spoke after this

this manner; said, *You are mistaken in your Man, my Lord, One must be a Set indeed to be bubbled so.*

There was one thing happen'd in the Conclave extraordinary enough; that in Four or Five hour time, the Election of Cardinal *Buon Compagnon* was concluded upon, without the usual canvassing and intriguing of the Heads of Faction. This was upon the 13th of *May*: And tho' several Cardinals had refus'd him when propos'd to 'em, yet at this time it went for him as currently as if there had been no other Man capable of being chose. *Montalto* heard nothing of the matter till they were carrying him to the Chappel, to do Homage to him. Then Cardinal *Alexandria* knock'd at his Chamber Door; and said, *Come my Lord, the Pope is Chose.* He came out and follow'd the rest to the Chappel, where *Buon Compagnon* having had Homage done to him, and taken the Name of *Gregory XIII.* the Sacred College went out of the Conclave in Procession.

Montalto express'd abundance of Joy, and gave his Holiness assurance in private, that there was nothing in the world he desired like this Election, and that he should never forget his kindness to him in the Journey to *Spain.* Of this the Pope was well enough convinc'd, but yet shew'd him no distinguishing Favours, nor employ'd him much in the Affairs of the Holy See, but left him to his solitude and retirement. He made Court however to all his Family; and to get into his Holiness's Books, he set himself hard about his Commentary upon *St. Ambrose,* upon which he bestow'd a Years pains, and Dedicated it to him. The Pope accepted the Work with Respect enough, but without giving him any great marks of his Friendship, and during his Papacy, treated him with a Coolness that look'd very like slighting him.

Some were of opinion this cool Behaviour toward *Montalto*, proceeded from his having been so entirely devoted to the last Pope, and receiving so many Favours at his hands. *Gregory* look'd upon him always as a soure Man, tho' he made a shew of great Sweetness and unaffected Carriage.

Others imagined, the Pope knowing him in the Time when he was with him as Legate to be of a forward enterprizing Temper, did not judge it proper to commit his Affairs much to the Conduct of such a Man.

This confirm'd *Montalto* in his Resolution, to have nothing to do in the Intrigues of the World, and made him buy a house near *St. Mary Major*, in which he led a retir'd and obscure Life, amongst a small number of Domesticks.

He would not leave this House, and to make it more agreeable, was continually making some Addition to it: But when he was Pope, he made a Glorious Palace of it, and adorn'd it with Gardens, Fountains, Groves, and Orchards. And call'd it *the Vineyard of Peretti*, after the Name of his Family.

In the Year 1575. The Pope having open'd the *Jubilee*, *Montalto* did as many Acts of Charity as his Small Revenue wou'd admit of. He was Bountiful to the Pilgrims who had no where to betake themselves but the Hospitals: but chiefly to the Sick and Religious of his own Order, whom the Indulgencies had brought thither. He provided these with Lodging, and made 'em an Entertainment once or twice very heartily. He spent the greatest part of the Day in the Confessionaries, as if he had been nearly a Priest; and the People had a great opinion of his Zeal and his Piety. 'Tis very certain, there was none of the Cardinals shew'd so much as *Montalto* upon the

the occasion; for which the Pope thought himself oblig'd to thank him.

In the Year 1576. *Italy* was visited with a dreadful Plague, and there was a Congregation appointed at *Rome* to preserve the City from this Sad Desolation. *Montalto* was nam'd by some, to labour with other Cardinals for the Publick Safety: But the Pope urg'd, that none but those that were Active and Vigilant were fit to be employ'd in the Business; for *Montalto*, he was Lazy and Indifferent; tho' at the same time he perform'd his Duty very well, as an Officer of the Inquisition.

The Disorders that happen'd at *Genova* between the Old and New Families, were made up this Year by the Interposition of the Pope, who sent thither for that purpose Cardinal *Moroni*. He was as capable of transacting business of Importance as his Holiness believ'd him to be, and he restor'd Peace and Quietness in this great City. At the same time the Pope undertook to pacifie *Poland*, which had been put into a Flame by *Henry III.* King of *France's* withdrawing. This Prince left that Kingdom to go and take possession of the Crown, to which he Succeeded by the Death of his Brother *Charles IX.* This Business being of great Importance to the Christian Religion, oblig'd the Pope to hold several Consistories; at one of which it was said, *Montalto's* not being there, *We are as well without his Vote as with it.*

Gregory, in the beginning of his Pontificate, had cut short the Pension *Pius V.* had given to the Poor Cardinals; either intending to employ the Money for some other uses, of which he thought the Church stood more in need: or else that he had a mind to pull down what his Predecessor had set up. However it came to pass,
poor

oor *Montalto* had the Remainder of his taken from him, in 1577. Cardinal *Alexandria* mov'd the Pope to restore it him, but could get no better Answer than this, *If you will do any thing for me, I will give you my Blessing in Requit.*

Montalto did not express any Mortification upon being cut short, but on the contrary meeting one Day the Cardinal of *St. Sixtus*, *Philip Buon Compagnon*, the Pope's Nephew, he brought this into the Discourse. *He would freely part with all he had to his very shirt, in imitation of that Zeal with which his Holiness promoted the Quiet of Christendom. That he had never thought himself so Rich as since he had lost his Pension: That he was sorry he had not resign'd it voluntarily; And could not do better than give up all he had to the Wise and Charitable disposal of so Holy and Vigilant a Pastor.*

France and the *Low Countries* were this Year in a sorrowful Condition, by the great Advantage the Protestants had got over the Troops of his most Christian Majesty and the King of *Spain*. These Hereticks, who had met with a brisk opposition at first, now set up their Religion in those Countries, upon the Ruins of the *Romish Church*. The Pope being much concern'd at so mischievous a progress, appointed Prayers, and held several Consistories to remedy an Evil so destructive to Christianity: upon which *Montalto* said one Day, *That so great a Disorder required other Methods, besides Assemblies and Forty Hours Prayers.* This coming to the Pope's Ear, his Holiness had a mind to know *Montalto's* Sentiments upon the matter. But after a long Conference with him, he said to the Cardinal of *St. Sixtus*, his Nephew; *That he was not much edified by it, that he did not see any great reason in what Montalto offer'd.*

In 1578. *Montalto* sent for one of his Nephew to Rome, to whom he bore a very great Affection; tho' indeed he was not wanting in his Love to any of his Relations: Whilst he was Cardinal he did nothing for 'em. He wrote to 'em to work for their Living, and not depend upon his Preferment; that it would be most creditable for them to get their Livelihood by Labour. He put his Nephew into Mean Cloaths, but spared nothing to encourage him to Study, and was always saying to him: *If you are Wise and Couragious, You'll be the Support of your poor Family, and maintain it by your Merit; For my Part I have taken pains, Do you do as much as you can.* This Poor Boy was unfortunately murther'd before he had gone through his Studies. His Uncle was very sensibly afflicted at his Death, yet could command himself upon the Occasion, and made Answer to some of his Friends who pressed him to demand Justice of the Pope; *That it would be a Reflection upon the Zeal his Holiness express'd to all the World, if he urged him too much to get his Nephew's Death revenged.* He told a Cardinal that made him a Visit of Condolence upon this Account, that *He was much obliged to him for being more concerned at it than he was himself;* by such a Behaviour intending to make People believe he was insensible of the Passion common to Flesh and Blood. But what he said to another Cardinal that advised him to prosecute the Murtherers of his Nephew, was the highest Proof of his Patience; *I love, said he, my Family, but as Dear as they are to me, I shall not be brought to offend God for their sake: My Nephew's Death ought not to be revenged at the Hazard of my Conscience, and my Salvation.* The Cardinal could not forbear saying as he went out: *This is a Wise Man and a good Christian.*

In 1579. The Pope made several Hospitals at *Rome* and in other Parts of *Christendom*, to shelter those that were driven out of their Countries by Hereticks. He settled upon 'em considerable Revenues, but these new Foundations were not approved of by all the World; However *Montalto* spoke in Commendation of it where-ever he came. *Alexander Farnese* Duke of *Parma*, General of the King of *Spain's* Army in *Flanders*, obtain'd several times this Year a Victory over the Protestants, and took a great many Towns from them. There were Bonfires made at *Rome* twice, and all the Cardinals went to congratulate Cardinal *Farnese* upon the Success of his Nephew. *Montalto* was none of the last to make his Court to him, and to do it most effectually, in a full Consistory he mentioned the Obligations the Church had to the Valour of the Duke of *Parma*, who had exposed his Life against the Hereticks of the *Netherlands*; and took that Opportunity of speaking in praise of the House of *Farnese*.

This Year was remarkable for a Grand War in *Portugal*; which was ended by *Philip II.* King of *Spain's* getting the Crown from *Don Antonio* the Rightful Prince, whom the Barons and People of *Lisbon* had placed upon the Throne. The Great Duke of *Muscovy* at the same time sent an Ambassador to *Rome*, to entreat his Holiness would, as the Common Father of *Christians*, interpose and make Peace between him and *John* King of *Poland*, their Countries having suffer'd much by the War.

The Ambassador was magnificently received at *Rome*: He had Lodgings provided at *James Buon Campagnu's* House, the General of the Holy Church; And the Pope received him very kindly at his Audience.

At First he refus'd to kiss His Holiness's Feet, but they told him, That *No body of what Quality soever presented himself before the Pope: without paying that Respect, and the Emperor himself was excus'd.* He spoke *Latin* very freely, and before *Montalto* who was the most ready at that Language of all the Cardinals, was order'd to inform him in the Reason of the Things; Which he did to very good Purpose; the Ambassador submitting to this Duty without expecting the Return of a Courier he had sent to his Master upon the Difficulty he had been in.

The *Muscovites* were observed to put *Brand* into their Wine tho' it were never so strong; and tho' this sort of Liquor heated 'em so far as almost to throw 'em into a Fever, they bathed in the coldest Water they could get.

They went often to Church to see our Manner of Worship; but went out directly when ever they saw a Dog come in, saying, *Such Creatures are not to be suffered in Holy Places* For which Reason they took Care to keep Dog out of the Churches all the while the *Muscovite* were at *Rome*.

The Pope gave the Ambassador Satisfaction. He wrote to the King of *Poland* that he would listen to an Accommodation, and sent to him Father *Possevin* a Jesuit to treat about it. The Negotiation went forward, and was at length concluded; which restored Peace to *Poland* and *Muscovy*.

The Ambassador at his going home took Leave of several Cardinals, and amongst the rest *Montalto*: Whose Modesty and Frugality he was so much taken with, as to tell one of his People *This Man surely must be a Bastard, No body that sees his House and Furniture can believe him Brother to the Rest of the Cardinals We have visited*

The

The Difference there was between their Magnificent Palaces and *Montalto's* poor Lodging, Furniture of whose Chamber was but fit for a Monk's Cell, disturbed his Notions about their Brotherhood, by which he perceived the Revenue of the Church was but unequally divided; and they were forced to tell him the Reason of this Difference.

The Disturbances at *Malta* being composed in the Year 1581, and the Grand Master, whom the Knights had imprisoned, set at Liberty by the Pope's Interposition, he came to *Rome* with a Train of more than a Hundred of the Chief Knights of his Order. He was met by Eight or Nine Hundred Horse, and lodged in the Palace of Cardinal *d'Este*. In the next place he was conducted to have Audience of his Holiness, where were present Twelve Cardinals, and *Montalto* one of 'em, by whom he took his Place after he had kissed the Pope's Feet; He was so taken with his humble and sweet Behaviour, that for Two Months he was in Town nothing pleased him so much as *Montalto's* Company; For whom he sent, being fallen Sick, and desired he would teach him how to die well. He would say to his intimate Friends; *Every Time he look'd upon Cardinal Montalto, he thought One of the Holy Bishops of the Primitive Church before his Eyes.* *Montalto* was assisting to him to the last, and was remembered in his Will, which was soon proved and executed.

For several Years *Montalto* had been thinking upon a Reformation of the Calendar. He had ~~once~~ proposed it to *Pius V.* and had spoken of it to *Gregory* in his Embassy to *Spain*. But either because he would not trouble himself with it, or that he did not go much upon *Montalto's* Advice, he did not set about it. The Pretence was,

That the Alteration would not be perpetual, and that it would at the long run bring the Ancient Practice of the Church into Disorder.

In the Year 1582. *Antonio Lilio* a Physician by the Advice and Interposition of *Montalto*, presented to the Pope a small Treatise, of which his Brother *Louis Lilio* was Author; who had before shewed it the Cardinal and received his Eminence's Approbation. The Pope not at all doubting but *Montalto* had a Hand in it, appointed him to examine it.

This Work contain'd a new System, in which the *Epaet* was accommodated to the *Golden Number*, and the *Solar Year*; and the Calculation so exact, that the Calendar should for the future be free from any Alteration or Confusion.

Montalto approved of the Proposal, and pressed his Holiness to go speedily upon the Business: But he thought fit to propose a thing of such Consequence to the Consistory; The Account of which we shall give at length, because *Montalto* had a great Share in it.

Gregory after he had communicated his Design to the Sacred College, sent Copies of this Treatise to all Christian Princes, and to the most famous Universities in *Europe*; that he might have the Opinion of all that were concern'd. When he had received their Answers, he put them into the Hands of the greatest Mathematicians of the Age, whom he had sent for to *Rome* on purpose. After they had discoursed the Thing thoroughly at Cardinal *Montalto's* who presided at these Conferences, they found *Lilio's* Computation the most exact of any. They added something of their own, and pitch'd upon it to regulate the Calendar by, for the time to come.

They

They were to begin with fixing a certain Time for the Vernal Equinox; to find the Fourteenth Day of the Moon in *March*, which falls out at the Equinox, or presently after, and to fix the first *Sunday* after that Fourteenth Day, to be *Easter-Day*; in Conformity to the Judgment of the Fathers, the Regulations of *Pope Pius* and *Victor* the First, and the First General Council of *Nice*.

And to reduce the Vernal Equinox to the Twenty-first Day of *March*, according to a Canon of that Council, they resolv'd once for all to cut off Ten Days from *October*, in the Year 1582. And for fear of any Alteration for the future, it was Agreed, That every Fourth Year should be *Bissextile*, except the Hundredth Year, in which the *Bissextile* had been hitherto reckon'd, and which they left still for the last Year of the Sixteenth Century, that is, 1600. but which hereafter should be only once in Four Centuries. Thus they regulated the Mistake that was made in the Computation of the Course of the *Sun*, settled at the same time *Easter-Day*, and the Equinox of *March*.

The *Calendar* being thus reform'd, it was call'd the *Gregorian* Reformation; for the publishing of which, he gave out a Bull, beginning with these words, *Inter gravissimas Pastoralis Officij nostri Curas, &c.* But as this Reformation could not be establish'd all over Christendom at the same time, to prevent any Disorder that might happen upon its being set up sooner in one Place than another, it was Order'd to begin in the Year 1585, and so on.

The City of *Rome*, this Year, was afflicted with a sore Famine; at which time *Monte* being destitute of Provisions, or Money to buy any, was forced to apply himself to Cardinal *Colono*, who generously supplied him. When he heard the

poor People of his Neighbourhood were in distress, he reliev'd 'em very liberally. But the Scarcity, which was so great that a Man could hardly live upon a Crown a Day, reduced him to a Dependance upon Others: yet, in Requital, he gain'd so great a Reputation among the Poorer Sort, that it was said openly in the Streets, *The Cardinal de Montalto, who liv'd upon Charity himself, gave with one Hand what he receiv'd with 'eother: but for the rest of the Cardinals, whilst they eat the Good Things of the Church, they wou'd do no more for the Poor, than shew 'em the way to the Hospital.*

'Tis certain, the Covetousness of the Pope's Relations, was the Cause of this Scarcity: They hearing the Countries about *Rome* had no Wheat at all, carry'd out so great Quantities thither, to sell it for three times the Price it bore in the City, and so starv'd the Citizens; which it was beyond their Skill to redress. Several Cardinals made Complaint of this to the Pope; but *Montalto*, desiring to continue in the good graces of the Cardinal-Nephew, said what he could in Excuse of it.

There happen'd at the same time a Quarrel in *Rome* between some Gentlemen of the Town and the Serjeants, upon which a great deal of Blood was spilt. *Montalto* came in danger of his Life amongst 'em, one of his Men being wounded by his side; and therefore we may be allow'd a small Digression upon the Affair.

The Barigel, with a great Company of his Followers, came, the 26th of *April*, to the Place of *Sienna*, to Apprehend a High-way-Man, whom he was in pursuit of, and seized him in the Palace of *Ursin*. As he was carrying him to Prison, he met these Lords, *Raymond, Ursin, Sylla Savelli,* and *Octavian Rusticucci*, with two or three more of their Friends, and several Officers, who had been

been riding out to take the Air. *Ursin* com-
 manded the *Barigel* to Release his Prisoner, ha-
 ving taken him out of a Palace which was a San-
 ctuary. The *Barigel* refusing to do so, *Rusticucci*
 run at him, and gave him a Blow with his Cane.
 This put him into such a Rage, that he cried-
 out to his Men to fall on; who fired upon
 them, and mortally wounded the three young
 Lords: *Rusticucci* died upon the spot, and was
 dragg'd along by his Horse; the other two were
 carry'd off, sadly maim'd, who liv'd but till next
 Morning. *Montalto* was returning on foot from
 some Devotion or other, and fell into the Scuffle,
 either because he thought they would have a Re-
 spect to his Character, or because he could not
 avoid it: When he heard the Bullets whistle at
 his Ears, he got into a Shop, and his Man after
 him, who had receiv'd a Shot in his Arm. This
 Accident put the whole Town into a Consterna-
 tion, particularly the Friends and Creatures of the
 House of *Ursin*, who, to shew their Resentment, pur-
 sued the Serjeants, and massacred as many of 'em
 as they could meet in the Streets for two Days
 after, and even at the Door of the Pope's Palace:
 They kill'd four of 'em with Knives, driving them
 into Corners where they could not escape. It was a
 dismal sight to see the Fury with which they pur-
 su'd 'em. His Holiness wisely considering it was
 in vain to make any Opposition to the first Efforts
 of the Mobb, which were but the way to make 'em
 commit greater Outrages, let 'em alone to them-
 selves; but sometime after, had the Leaders
 of the Sedition Executed publicly upon pre-
 tence of other Crimes. The *Barigel* finding there
 was no Quarter like to be given him, made the
 best of his way from 'em in a Disguise: the same
 Night this happen'd: But the Pope believing him
 guilty, took so good care to have him seized,

that he was Taken, and brought to *Rome*; where he was Beheaded. His Punishment serv'd to appease, in some measure, the House of *Ursin*, and satisfie the People, who had been perpetually exclaiming against the Insolence of the Serjeants, who had fired upon Persons of that Quality.

His Holiness being afflicted at the sight of such Combustions in the City, thought upon some Method to set things to rights, and make these Massacres forgotten; he therefore resolv'd upon a Promotion, and to chuse out of different Places, Persons worthy of the Sacred Purple. This was done upon the 12th of *December*: The whole Town express'd a great deal of Joy upon the Occasion: It pleas'd his Holiness to hear 'em say in publick, *Never Pope had presented so many Great Men with the Hat at one time; and the Sacred College, and all Christendom were oblig'd to him for it.*

It's worth observing, as we go along, That four Cardinals of this Promotion came to be Popes; *John Baptista Castagna Romano*, Native of *Genoa*, call'd the Cardinal of *St. Marcellus*, of whom we have already spok'd; he was since *Urban VII.* *John Antonio Facquinetti*, a *Bolognez*, by the Title of the Four Crown'd Saints; he was *Innocent IX.* *Nicholas Sfondrato*, a *Milaneze* Cardinal, by the Title of *St. Cecilia*; afterwards *Gregory XIV.* And *Alexander de Medicis*, Archbishop of *Florence*, by the Title of *St. Cyriacus*, who went commonly by the Name of Cardinal of *Florence*; he was afterwards *Leo XI.* The Shortness of their Pontificate is no less remarkable: *Urban* was Pope but Thirteen Days; *Gregory* but Ten Months; *Innocent* not full Two; and *Leo* enjoy'd the see but Twenty-five Days: So that all four of 'em together reign'd not much above a Year. Since *St. Peter's* time, his Successors never went off so fast,

As soon as the Promotion was over, the Streets of Rome were full of Princes, Prelates, and Cardinals, that went to Complement those that had received the Hat. *Montalto* had been now for three Years Infirm and Drooping, and made his Visits more leisurely than the rest: He was above Two Months before he had Visited the Nineteen New-created Cardinals: He made but one Visit in three Days, and ask'd Pardon for being so slack in the discharge of his Duty, saying, *The Decay and Weakness of his Limbs, occasion'd by his great Age, wou'd not permit him to be so Exact as he shou'd; and besides a Good-will, he had nothing free left about him.* Whatever Reason he had for it, 'tis certain he affected to be thought Older, and more broken than really he was: He reckon'd too many Years, whenever he was ask'd his Age; though, when he was Pope, every body knew he was born in the Year 1521.

Once when he made a Visit to the Cardinal of Austria, who was kept at Rome by some Business of Importance, the Cardinal being vexed at the Disturbance, said to him that came to tell him he was there, *What does this Picture of Lazarus come hither for?* The same Cardinal, another time, had a mind to bring him over to the Spanish Faction, and make sure of his Vote. *Montalto* being unwilling to engage himself, and, on the other side, to displease that Prince, after he had made abundance of Excuses, gave this Reason among the rest, *That a Man of his Age had nothing to do in this World, but to think seriously of leaving it.*

Several Cardinals of the New Promotion begg'd he would spare himself the fatigue of ordinary Visits, assuring him his Years and his Infirmities were but too just an Excuse. The Cardinal *de Torri* meeting him upon the Stairs quite spent and

and blown up, took him under the Arm, and said *Indeed, my Lord, your Complaisance will be the Death of you; 'tis but reasonable you should consult your Health more.*

Paying a Visit to Cardinal *Casagna*, who lov'd and honour'd him much, they were talking of the Journey they took together into *Spain*; *Casagna* said, *My Lord, you are mightily alter'd since that*; *Montalto* answer'd, *Old Age weighs upon my Heels faster than I could wish.* The Cardinal, who had often heard him say they were both of an Age, told him, *After all, he had not such wonderful reason to Complain.* *Alas,* reply'd t'other, *What does Ten Years time bring a Man to, that's oppress'd with Infirmities as I am!*

The *Lutherans*, failing in their Design to make *Jeremy*, Patriarch of *Constantinople* embrace their Novelties, in the Year 1584. accused him of joining in a Conspiracy with the Pope, against the Grand Signior, *Amurat III.* by whose Order he was made Prisoner: but his Confinement being changed to Exile, there was one *Macarius* placed in his See. His Holiness fearing this Business would, in the end, prove prejudicial to the Church of *Rome*, appointed a Congregation to consider what Remedy there was for it: He would have Cardinal *Montalto* be of this Congregation, because of his Experience in Religious Affairs; who excusing himself by reason of his Weakness, the Pope Ordered the rest of the Commissaries to Meet at his House. When they found him incapable of assisting 'em in the Business, and to offer nothing of his own, but to say as they said, they came to a Resolution amongst themselves, to go home to him no more; besides, his having a Fever, absolutely hindred him from seeing an End of the Matter.

This Year several Protestants return'd to the Bosom of the *Romish Church*, by the Endeavours of some Missionaries that had been dispatch'd to *France* and *Germany*. The Quality and Deserts of some of these New Converts, occasion'd a Publick Thanksgiving to God for their Recovery in all the Churches of *Rome*. *Montalto* who together with the Warden of the *Holy Apostles*, had taken Pains to convert a *Lutheran Baron*, would himself introduce this Nobleman to kiss the Pope's Feet. Cardinal *St. Sixtus* forc'd him to stay Dinner, which he desired mightily to be excus'd from, saying, *He was not a fit Person to appear at Feasts*. However no Refusal would be taken; And when he was set down, He had like to have fainted away twice. The Cardinal Nephew said, *If your Lordship does not Eat, You'll die before you're Pope. Did they ever put into that Place,* answered *Montalto*, *such a Decrepid Worn-out Wretch? I thought,* continued he, *I should have been quite stuff'd up with my Distemper in my Lungs, which sometimes perfectly takes away my Breath.* Upon which Cardinal *St. Sixtus* advis'd him, as is usual, to take something to strengthen his Stomach. *Alas,* said he, *A Medicine may perhaps give a little Ease, but can't make one Young again.*

In 1585. He went to the *Apostles Convent* to spend a Week there; it was *Lent*, and he had a Desire to hear a Preacher of his Acquaintance, and pay his Devotion there. He might, its probable have a Mind also to let People see, that all the Opposition he had formerly met with in the *Cloyster*; had not made him otherwise than a Religious Man should be. Some said upon the Occasion, *Montalto surely, now he is not amongst the Brothers again, is going, He has but a little time to be above Ground.*

Those

Those that had know'n him when he was but a Monk, or when he was General of the Order, could not understand the Alteration of his Temper. There was a Prelate a Friend of the Wardens as they were sitting one Day together asked him, *How this Cardinal de Montalto behaved himself in the House, and if he were not troublesome to the Society?* The Warden made Answer, *Nobody could perceive he was there.*

Some time after he was gone home again, The Pope died after this Manner. He said a private Mass on *Sunday* the Seventh of *April*; and would afterwards assist at the Solemnity of a Publick Mass in *St. Sixtus's* Chapel. There happened also to be *Montalto* whom the Cardinal *Castagna* had lugged thither whether he would or no; but yet was not at the Consistory which the Pope held next Day, in which his Holiness called another to meet the Day following, when he intended to be present, but he was prevented by a great Weakness that came upon him. My Lord *Blanchetti* his Chamberlain Countermanded the Meeting, upon which it was talk'd about Town, that His Holiness was fall'n Sick.

Gregory not finding himself much out of Order, and having a Mind to dispatch some Business of very great Moment, was sorry that the Appointment was put by. He rose a little of the Latest on *Wednesday* the Tenth Day of the Month, and having taken a Turn or two in his Chamber between Cardinal *S. Sixtus* and the Lord *James Buon Campagnon* his Nephews, he eat his Breakfast heartily enough before 'em, who not seeing any thing extraordinary in his Illness, took Leave of him and with-drew to their places.

My Lord *Blanchetti* was surpris'd to see the Pope Pale and Faint, and observing him to be much altered

Altered, sent for his Physicians about Two Hours after. They finding his Pulse very low, thought he had not long to live: They ordered him to be put to Bed, and gave him an Account of his Illness, which he did not believe to be so dangerous, though he found his Spirits sink apace.

He had sent for Cardinal *Farnese*, Dean of the Sacred Colloge, and most of the other Cardinals, to exhort 'em to choose him a Successor Worthy to take his Place. Amongst the Rest he desired *Montalto* might come, Who no sooner received the Message, but he went out intending to go to the *Vatican*: But being inform'd by the Way His Holiness was dead, he return'd. Another Cardinal that met him, would have him go on to be better inform'd of the Truth, saying, *Let us go, My Lord, however; if we don't find the Pope a-live, at least we shall have the Satisfaction to see him Dead.* To which *Montalto* made this Return; *I shall do better to go home and think of my own Affairs being very confident I shall follow his Holiness close.*

The Pope did not see any of the Cardinals he had sent for, and his Nephews themselves came too late to speak to him; For in a Minute after the Physicians were come, his Throat swell'd, and No body understood what he said: They told the Chamberlain it was a Quinsie.

His Physician in ordinary told him what Danger he was in, being ask'd how long he thought he could continue, he said in plain Terms, *He could not answer for't that his Holiness would live Two Hours.* The Pope turn'd about to his Officers that stood by saying, *Since I have no more time to think of the Affairs of the World, give me my Crucifix that I may employ my Thoughts that Way.* After he had spoken these Words he cross'd himself several times, and recommended himself to

to God Almighty in most ardent Prayers: He called for the Holy *Viaticum*, but his Physicians did not think him able to receive it: They only gave him extreme Unction; in a little time after he died.

This Pope was of a strong Constitution, which he maintain'd to the last, by his Temperance in Eating and Drinking. Toward the latter End of his Life his Physicians advis'd him to drink out of a Gold-Cup. *Montalto* was directed to the same, which he could not but make a Jest of, telling 'em, *In truth Gold had a Virtue of keeping the Body in Health; but not of restoring it when it was ruin'd, and that he knew no Remedy but Death for his Misfortunes.*

Gregory had sometimes a Looseness upon him, which secured him from other Distempers. He was also subject to Stoppages, for which he found no Relief but Country-Air, which put him upon going often to *Frescati*, the ancient *Tusculum* of the Romans; and spend some Time there. He took great Pleasure in riding out on Horse-back, sometimes within the City and sometimes out of it, and got up and down with so much Ease and Nimbleness, tho' without Advantage of Ground, that *Montalto* said one Day when he saw him, *Would to God I had Strength and Skill to do as much.* Not that he desired to have made Use of it so, for he never got on Horse-back but in Case of Necessity, and then he was an Hour making Preparation for it, and was helped up by his Servants, to whom he said Sighing; *It wou'd become me better to be carried upon the Ground by Four Men, than to walk my Mule round the Walls of the Town; and indeed I am fitter for a Litter than a Steed.*

Some People believed, the Pope finding himself near his End, repented his having cut off
the

the Pensions of the poor Cardinals: and that he sent for the Cardinals, with a design to restore 'em; intending to give it in Charge, to the Sacred College. Besides this, that he design'd to pay the Arrears. The Cardinal of St. *Sixtus* declar'd this afterwards: It's true, he should have thought of it a little sooner, to have prevented those who would have it pass for a piece of spite, the taking them away. It could not be believ'd a Man so good and charitable as *Gregory* was to all the World; should be guilty of such a piece of Injustice; and should expose himself to be thought Covetous, only that he might overthrow the Liberality of his Predecessor.

He was a great Lover of his Native Country and of his Country-men, several of whom he rais'd to the Degree of Prelates, and some he made Cardinals, perhaps for no other visible Merit. *Montalto* follow'd his Steps in this, when he came into his Place, as we shall see hereafter, and would often say, *He had observ'd nothing greater in Gregory's Behaviour, than the strong affection he bore to Bologna his Native Place.*

Thus this Pope Died, after Thirteen Years Possession of the Holy See. He left his Heirs vastly Rich, tho' he had often declar'd, that as much as he wished to make 'em Happy, he should never attempt it by depriving others of their Right, or squandering the Revenue of the Church. And in truth, he did not make his Relations Princes at the Church's cost; as some of his Predecessors had done, who would with all their heart have given *Rome* and the whole *Ecclesiastical State* to their Nephews, if they could have made a Title. The Reader must excuse this Digression, since he that Writes it, was mov'd to do so out of zeal to the Truth.

Tho' *Gregory* was well enough beloved of the People, yet they had not respect enough for his Memory, to keep 'em from committing those Disorders which usually happen in a Vacancy of the Holy See. The Mob, the very next Day after his Death, were guilty of Riots which ended in Massacre.

And through the *Ecclesiastical State* they took a greater Liberty to Act their Villanies than at *Rome*. As soon as ever the News of the Pope's Death came to 'em they made but an Ill use of the goodness which had appear'd in his Government. All manner of Respect to Judges and Magistrates were at an end, they stood no longer in awe of Laws either Humane or Divine: People Liv'd without acknowledging any Authority either of God or Man. 'Tis observable that this abominable Licence they had indulg'd themselves in, made the Government of his Successor, *Sixtus V.* appear more Tyrannical than it was. It's true, the Subjects of the Church, when they chang'd their Master, chang'd their Joy to Sadness; their Debauchery to Abstinence; their Freedom to Slavery; their Quiet to Uneasiness; and were brought under Laws so exact and severe, that never Pope kept such a hand over 'em, as this Terrible *Sixtus*.

The Governours, the Vice Legates, the Lieutenants, the Auditors, and the rest of the Judges of the *Ecclesiastical State*, committed many Acts of Violence during this Vacancy. They took Money at all hands, they set Prisoners at Liberty, let those Escape out of their hands that greas'd 'em well: There was a great many Criminals dismiss'd at Night for Crimes they had been Taken up for in the Morning. They paid dear indeed for this in the Poppedom of *Sixtus*, and confess'd if they had known who was to have succeeded *Gregory*, they had behaved themselves better.

The *Banditti* out of madness that *Gregory* toward the latter end of his Days; had ordered some Troops to keep a hand over them, began at this time to commit great Outrages. That which was worst of all, those who should have clear'd the *Ecclesiastical State* of these Vermin, did more mischief than the Rogues themselves; for they were in Confederacy with 'em. These Villains were not satisfied with Plundering the Country as soon as the Pope was Dead, but they went into the Great Towns and liv'd there with so great Insolence, that People could not keep their Daughters safe in their own Houses: The Governours Assisting them openly, and upholding them in their Wickedness. These Disorders were grown to such a pass, as may very well justify the Memory of our Great *Sixtus*; whom some would charge with extravagant Severity.

 The FIFTH BOOK.

THE Cardinals held a Consistory the same Day *Gregory* Died, to give Order for the Government of *Rome*. They met the *Thursday* and *Friday* after, and began the Usual Ceremony of the Pope's Funeral. Cardinal *Gambara* said Mass the Day following, after which the College met, to give Audience to the Count *de Olivarez*, Ambassador from the King of *Spain*; he made an Harangue with which the Company were all very well pleased. Cardinal *de Cosmo* said Mass the next Day, which being ended there was another Consistory held, to which the Emperour's Ambassador was admitted, and the Cardinal *de Este* in the Name of his most Christian Majesty.

The next Day being *Palm-Sunday* pass'd without any thing of business, and there was no Consistory held. The Cardinal of *Arragon* arriv'd at *Rome* from *Naples*. On *Monday* the 15th, Cardinal *Alexandria* sung Mass, and there was a Consistory held; as also for Three Days following. At the last of which, the New Ambassador of *France* had Audience who arriv'd the Night before. The Cardinals *de Guise* and *de Medicis* came to Town the same Day, the First from *Naples*, the Other from his Archbishoprick of *Florence*.

On *Saturday* the Twentieth, The *Spanish* Ambassador had Audience in the Consistory, where he spoke with a great deal of Wit and Eloquence. The Cardinals *Paleotti* Archbishop of *Bologna*, and *Castagna* the Legate came to Town together that Day.

For Ten Days, whilst the Ceremonies of the Pope's Funeral were performing, those that put in to succeed him were intriguing with their Friends to bring it about. *Montalto* was the Man that made the least Stir, tho' he had some Thoughts of obtaining the Dignity. The Way he took to attain it was so particular, that No body would have thought he had any such Design.

One Part that considered his indifferent and careless Temper, which was so Remarkable, as to make him called at several Congregations, *The Ass of the Marquisate*, could not imagine he made any Pretensions. Others would not believe such a Man should be pick'd out, who was loaded with all those Infirmities he complain'd of. He seem'd to be the most infirm and broken of all the Cardinals. Yet was he the Youngest of all that made Interest for the Popedom, tho' he would freely say, *A Man of Threescore and Ten was fit for very little*; 'tis certain he was but in his Sixty Fourth Year. These One would have thought Reasons sufficient to have diverted the Cardinals from any Design of placing him in the Holy See (which requires a Man both of Experience and Resolution) they themselves taking him to be very little skill'd in the Affairs of the Papacy, and so weak too and worn-out that he could not stand upon his Legs. Yet these were the very Considerations he was obliged to for his Exaltation.

He carried himself very slyly, lyeing as it were at Anchor, whilst the Rest of 'em with full Sails were steering towards the Popedom. His Behaviour was directly the Reverse of theirs; He spoke much in Behalf of the other Competitors, and very meanly of himself. He made several Visits before he went into the Conclave, and waited upon Cardinal *Farnese* who slighted the Poor Cardinals, and *Montalto* among the rest, calling him frequently The Ass of the Marquise, and the Beast of *Rome*. He told this Gentleman with all the Respect due to the Dean of the College, *That if he apprehended the Conclave was like to last long, he shou'd make bold to stay away for fear he should die before the Election was over.* Cardinal *Farnese* advised him not to forsake the Interest of the Church at a time when all *Christendom* was so highly concern'd. To which *Montalto* answer'd, *The Hope I have my Vote may be of Service to your Lordship, will encourage me to look Death in the Face at the Conclave.* My Lord, replied *Farnese*, *Pray don't think of any body but your self; for I believe you are as well dispos'd for the Pontificate as Another Man.* At which *Montalto* was much surpris'd, and said, *The Cardinals must be blind indeed, if they prefer one of no Merit and Experience, to so great a Man as your Lordship; if they take one that has nothing good in him but an Inclination to serve his Patron and Friends.*

This was his Cant to all the Cardinals that had any Expectation, and to the Heads of Factions also. He spoke much in their Praise, acknowledg'd his Obligations to 'em, and assur'd 'em of his Readiness to do 'em Service, that he was sorry he had not as many Votes as there were Cardinals. This was his Way of talking before in the Conclave when *Gregory* was chose, he

he directed himself to those that had a good Preference to the Holy See, telling 'em *The Church would manifestly be a Sufferer if the Government of it were put into any other's Hands.*

One thing that made the Observers of Signs conjecture he would come upon the Stage was this, that in distributing the Chambers of the Conclave, which is done by Lot, His was in the Middle of those that fell to the Pope's chief Officers. Cardinal *Farnese* Chancellor of the Church had Lodgings on the left hand of him, *Contarelli Datario* on the right, and *Guastavillano Camerlingo* had the next Room to *Contarelli*. As soon as the Master of the Ceremonies had made an End of fixing the Lodgings, *Montalto* was complimented as if his Chance were an Omen the Election would go for him.

At length upon the One and Twentieth of *April* being *Easter-Sunday*, there was Sung by the Choir, The Hymn to the Holy Ghost set to very fine Musick: All the Cardinal-Priests having first said Mass, Every one by himself; at an Altar erected for that Purpose. *Montalto* rose very early that Morning to go say his Prayers in the Church of the *Holy Apostles*, after which he return'd to *St. Peter's*, abundance of the Religious the chief of the Convent following him. *Mureto* one of the best Orators of the Age made a Speech after the *Gospel* at Publick Mass concerning the Election of the Pope; but the Noise and Crowd was so great that No body knew what he said. After Prayers all the Cardinals in *Rome*, who were but Thirty Nine, enter'd the Conclave in Procession. The Cardinals of *Austria*, *Mandrucci*, and *Vercelli*, who came thither Post the same Night went in immediately, and made up the Number Forty Two.

Two Accidents at the Cardinal of *Austria's* going into the Conclave must not be forgot, for they were such as put all things into Confusion for Two Hours. The first was, the Minute he demanded to be let in, the Cardinals were making the first Scrutiny, and they were just going to count the Votes. They sent the Master of the Ceremonies to him, to desire he would put off his Entry till after Dinner, that it being requisite the Bulls should be read over to Every One that comes in, that would take up so much Time as to disorder the Scrutiny, and be a great Disturbance to the Cardinals. The Cardinal of *Austria's* Friends were of the same Mind with the rest, because they would not have the Election made at this first Scrutiny: But he not knowing what pass'd in the Conclave, was afraid he should not have the Honour, of bearing his Part in the Election; and which would have grieved him more, that they should place One in the *Holy See* that was not well affected to *Spain*. This made him stand continually knocking at the Door, to hinder their going any farther before he was let in; and protest against whatever that Scrutiny came to as Null, because he was not allowed to be at it. The Cardinals out of Inclination to show their Complaisance for a Prince of that Desert, and to remove all manner of Scruples that could be rais'd upon a Vote which He had protested against, agreed without any Opposition, to adjourn the Scrutiny. This Expedient served to set the first Difficulty right.

Cardinal *Gambara* a Native of *Bressa*, a Man of great Worth, and well known was the Occasion of the Second: For just as it was resolv'd in the Conclave to let the Cardinal of *Austria* come in, he moyed that an Enquiry should first be

be made, whether that Prince who was Cardinal Deacon was in Deacon's Orders, according to a Bull of *Pius IV.* which excluded all those Cardinals from the *Conclave*, and having a Voice there as Members, before they had received those Orders to which their Title obliged 'em. *Garnvara* had no other End in this, but to prevent any scandal that might be given, by any discontented Persons after an Election, according to the *Canons*, pretending to prove it invalid, as not being agreeable to that Bull.

Cardinal *de Santa Cruz* stood up and said, *The Cardinals were not obliged to shew the Instruments of their Orders; that it was sufficient if they had been reported to the Consistory as Bishops, Priests, or Deacons.* This Answer seem'd the less considerable, because *Pius IV's* Bull had already the Approbation of the Consistory. Upon this the Dispute grew stronger, and the Cardinal-Dean was forced to bring on a Debate upon it.

• Whilst they were examining into the Business, the Cardinal of *Austria*, who had been a long time knocking at the Door, and had been told what had passed within, introduced himself easily by producing a Brief he had obtain'd of *Gregory XIII.* which he had luckily brought, foreseeing perhaps what happened. This Brief was read in the Chapel before all the Cardinals; by Virtue of it he had a Dispensation for being Deacon, and was declared capable of going into the *Conclave* with both Active and Passive Voice (as they term it;) upon which he was admitted to their great Satisfaction. His Friends went to receive him at the Door, and conducted him with Joy into the Chapel, where the Master of the Ceremonies read Three Bulls to him. The Two First were against Alienation of the

Revenue of the Church; the other related to *Simoniackal* Persons.

The same Day all the Cardinals took an Oath, that Whoever should be chose Pope, would put in Execution some Orders that were for the Advantage of Christianity, for the Grandeur of the *Holy See*, and the Glory of the Sacred College. This Practice of taking an Oath was set up above Two Hundred Years ago, but they did not always keep to the same Form and Rules. These Articles following are what was agreed on at this *Conclave*.

First: That He who should be advanced to *St. Peter's Throne*, should labour to the utmost of his Power in maintaining Peace amongst all Christian Princes; And should encourage them and their People to Union, and to employ their Forces against Infidels, Hereticks, Schismaticks, and in general, against all the Enemies of the Christian Name.

Secondly: That he should not remove the *Holy See* from *Rome* to any other Town or Province, unless upon a Case of manifest Necessity, or which would be an Advantage to the Church, and according to Law, and confirm'd in the *Consistory* by the Major Part of the Cardinals.

Thirdly: He should bring all Judges and Officers of the *Ecclesiastical State* to Account, when they were out of Office, in the same Place where they had exercised their Authority; and a Commission should be given out to continue for several Days, in which time all Complaints should be received from any that had been unjustly dealt with, and publick Notice given of the Commissioners Sitting.

In the Fourth Place: That He should raise none to the Dignity of a Cardinal but Persons of a good Life, who were well recommended, as
Men

Men of Virtue and Learning; and that in Obedience to the Decree of *Julius III.* made in a full *Consistory*, he should not give the Hat to two Brothers upon any Pretence, whether Spiritual or Temporal.

Fifthly: That he apply himself to preserve the Revenue of the Church, and not alienate it on any Pretence whatsoever, unless by Consent of the *Consistory*, and that the Overplus of what was allotted for the Ordinary Expence, should be laid up in a Place by its self for the greatest Exigencies of the *Ecclesiastical State*.

Sixthly: That he should not have a Power of Declaring War against any Prince tho' never so Just, without first proposing it to the *Consistory*, and afterwards asking the Cardinals Opinions in private; and not to undertake it unless there be a Majority of 'em for it. And also, That he should have no more Power to make Peace without the Advice of the *Consistory*, and by a Majority of Votes in private.

In the Seventh Place: That he should engage to preserve all the Rights and Privileges of the Cardinals: That he should not have Power to take away the Life of a Cardinal, or degrade him from the Purple; but that a Process should be made against 'em by the *Consistory*, who alone had a right of giving Sentence upon 'em: Except in Capital Crimes, where the usual Methods of Law were to be observ'd, but always with Consent of the Sacred College.

The Two and Forty Cardinals who made up this *Conclave* were divided into Five Factions. Cardinal *Farnese* was at the Head of the First; Cardinal *d' Este* of the Second; The Third was led by the Cardinal of *Alexandria*; The Fourth by Cardinal *Altoms*; and the Fifth, which of it

it self, was almost as numerous as all the rest, by Cardinal *Buon Compagnon St. Sixtus*, Nephew to *Gregory XIII.*

There were Fourteen Persons which had Pretensions, *Farnese* and *Savelli*, Creatures of *Paul III. Santa Cruz, Paleotti, St. George* and *Sirleto*, made Cardinals by *Pius IV. Montalto, Cesis, St. Severini*, and *Albano*, of *Pius Vth's* Promotion. *Fachinetti*, commonly call'd Cardinal *de Santiquati della Torri*, Native of *Udina*; *Mondovi* and *Castagna*, Creatures of *Gregory III.* However the publick Talk made 'em all Candidates, there were not half of 'em brought upon the Stage.

They were supported by the Heads of Partics more or less as they had an Inclination for them: For tho' the Leaders of a Faction shew abundance of Zeal for all their Creatures, for fear a Distrust should divide 'em, and ruin their Party; Yet there is always One more favour'd than the Rest, to whom they lend a helping Hand more heartily than to his Companions.

The Cardinals *Altoms, Medicis, and Alexandria* from their entring the *Conclave*, had join'd Forces to get *Peter Donato Cesis* a *Roman* chose: And thus they had laid their Design. Whereas all the Cardinals have a Liberty to go out of the *Conclave* after the Bulls are read, upon condition they return'd at Night; It was usual for some of 'em to take a Turn in the Town. It was resolved by the Three Chiefs just now mentioned and their Creatures, as soon as those that were against *Cesis* should be gone out, to go immediately into the Chapel, choose him at the first Scrutiny, and do him Homage. But the Design having taken Air, Cardinal *St. Sixtus* who had declared himself violently against the Election of *Cesis*, heard of the thing that Minute he was

going away to give Direction about some particular business; he turn'd back again, and made an Agreement with those that were as much concern'd as himself, to keep out *Cesis*, and so the matter went no farther. Those that had contriv'd it seeing their measures broke, there was nothing mention'd that Day, nor the Night after. This Attempt did Cardinal *Cesis* so much prejudice, and set so many against him whom he thought before to be of his Side, that his Friends durst no more propose him, or so much as name him in the Conclave.

On *Monday* the Cardinals met pretty Early in *St. Paul's* Chapel, where having received the Communion at the Hands of Cardinal *Farnese*, who Officiated as Dean, they proceeded to a Scrutiny, in which the Cardinal *de Albano* had Thirteen Voices. After this the Cardinals withdrew to their Cells to Dinner, and then there was Interest made for several Persons, chiefly for *Gulielmo Sirleto* of *Calabria*, for whom Cardinal *Altoms* was very earnest, and was joined by the Cardinal *de Medicis*, with the Creatures of *Pius IV.* who together, concluded themselves Strong enough to carry it. But the Cardinals *de Este*, *Farnese* and *Sforza* declar'd against 'em, and kept out *Sirleto*, who had been put by once before. And it is a Rule among the Cardinals, not to put up a Man that has been already Excluded. Not but that *Sirleto* was a Man of a good Understanding, and a Virtuous Man, and who would have been a Disinterested Pope, having no Relations: but besides that, he had not all those Accomplishments that are requisite to Govern the Church in the sad condition it was then in: they were afraid of his reserv'd sullen Temper, and most of his Acquaintance with the Cardinal *Cesimo*, who was hated by the whole College, because

because he had been a sort of Governour for Nineteen Years, whilst Principal Secretary to *Pius* and *Gregory*, and had done Ill Offices to almost every one of them. They were aware, and with good reason, too, of putting the Pontificate in such Hands, as would again raise a Man to power and credit, who was equally disagreeable to them all.

Cardinal *Altoms* was blamed for mis-timing the setting up of *Sirleto*, his own Friends disapproved of the Juggle and Precipitation with which he had brought it upon the Board, at the opening of the Conclave. All the Candidates being desirous to know at first what they had to trust to, labour'd hard from the Beginning to promote their Interests. Such a croud of Pretenders oftentimes ruins the Business, which might have gone on singly with Success; and sets up another whom No-body thought of. Sometimes indeed it falls out, that a Man is propos'd in which all agree in General: As it was in the case of *Gregory XIII.* when the Faction were in their first Heat; but this happens so rarely, that it could not excuse the conduct of *Altoms*. If he had kept his Design secret, and amus'd those with fair Words that were against him, he had gain'd time to throw out all *Sirleto's* Competitors; and had not fail'd in his hopes, and ruin'd his Friends Interest. *Farneze*, who had a great mind to be chose, was the First that stood in his way: He labouring to get himself in, as a Man of much greater Desert than Cardinal *Sirleto*, fell foul upon the Faction of *Altoms*, and said publickly in the Conclave: *I don't know what those that are Intriguing for Sirleto think of him.* Some were of opinion he intended to make him believe he was in his Interest; but under-hand did his best to get Cardinal *Ferrari* of *Piedmont* chose; he was Bishop of *Verceil*,

his Relation and particular Friend. *Altens* pleas'd himself with the Thoughts that the Cardinals *Farneze* and *Este*, who lov'd and valued *Ferrario* highly, would be of his Side as soon as the Business was propos'd to 'em. But he found at length, they had cast their Eyes upon somebody ~~else~~

There being no more hopes for *Sirleto*, Cardinal *St. Sixtus* employ'd his Interest for Cardinal *Castagna*, the man he was the most beholding to of all his Creatures; his Merits and Reputation seem'd to promise the Election should be in his Favour: But his Time was not yet come, Fortune declar'd for him only at the first Conclave; the Old Cardinals could not think of giving their Voices for him, tho' he deserv'd it upon a Thousand Accounts, because he was a Cardinal but of the last Promotion.

Some made Interest for Cardinal *Savelli*, and *Medicis* amongst the rest employ'd all his Credit to bring it about, but it fail'd. The Cardinals *Colono* and *Cefis*, profess'd Enemies to *Savelli*, made a vigorous opposition; and taking advantage of the misunderstanding there was between the Roman Cardinals, told *Medicis* plainly, if he had any farther thoughts of bringing in *Savelli*, they would the next minute go over to *Farneze's* Party. *Medicis* chose rather to give up the Business than lose his Friends and creatures; he was for any body rather than one of *Farneze's* Setting up, to whom he had a natural Aversion. *Savelli* was indeed a very worthy Man, and in great esteem with the Sacred College; he had given proof of his Integrity and his conduct, whilst he was Chief Inquistor and the Pope's Vicar: He shew'd a great deal of Heat in all his Actions, which made every body afraid of him, and they judg'd of the haughty behaviour they were like

to find in him after he was Pope, by what they saw in him when he was but Cardinal. His Sickly Looks, which the People had long observ'd, made 'em say, *His great Passion for the Popedom was the true Reason of it.* But what was the greatest Rub in his way to the Throne, was, the Prodigious Number of his Bastards. While these things were doing, Intrigues went forward in Favour of Cardinal *Torres*, a Man of a great Reputation, who had been propos'd first of all, if he had been at the Opening of the Conclave, and lost it but for want of being at *Rome* sooner.

The Cardinals *Farneze*, *de Este*, and *Sixtus*, being in daily expectation of him, were resolv'd to keep matters back to give him time to get to *Rome*. *Medicis* smocking this design, was very uneasie upon't, and therefore consult'd his Friends how to defeat it; but not being able to disappoint their Intention, he was more and more vexed: For he knew if *Torres* was chose Pope, *Farneze* would be all in all, and have power enough to get several Cardinals made, who should be at his Devotion, and choose him if he out-liv'd the New Pope, who being Older and more Infirm, was like enough to happen. The Heads of Factions who secretly manag'd for *Torres*, had resolv'd to choose him as soon as ever he came into the Conclave, which was a proper Juncture to do it: For when a Cardinal makes his Entry, all his Brethren go to receive him at the Door. They had agreed among themselves, that at the time when the Cardinals were making him their Compliments, they would cry out, *Long Live the Pope*, and would carry him to the Chapel to do their Homage, which none of the Cardinals would oppose.

There had been before this, some endeavours in Favour of *Montalto*, and the Cardinals *Alexandria* and *de Este* had a design to get him chose: The First of 'em expected to have a good share in the Government of Affairs, under a Pope that was the Creature of his Uncle *Pius V.* and was besides, under particular Obligations to him. The Second was engag'd by Cardinal *Rusticucci*, who had a great Influence over him. *Medicis* and his Friends to rid themselves of the apprehensions they were in upon *Farnese's* Intrigue for *Torres* went privately and offer'd their Service to the Cardinals *Este* and *Alexandria*, and struck in with 'em for *Montalto*. This Declaration was acceptable enough to 'em. *Medicis* having a good Interest in the *Spanish* Court, was sure of the *Spanish* Faction, in which *Alexandria* too had many Friends. And the Cardinal *de Este*, Head of the *French* Faction, could Answer for their consent. And thus the Two Crowns concurr'd in the Election.

Alexandria, *Medicis*, and *Este*, having given their Word to one another, went in the Night to see *Montalto* privately, and told him their Design, to make him Pope. *Alexandria*, who was to accost him with the News, spoke very Low for fear of being over-heard by *Farnese*, whose Chamber join'd, to *Montalto's*; and said, *Courage my Lord, we are come to tell you good News, and that is, We have resolv'd to make you Pope.* *Montalto* you must know kept himself shut up in his Chamber so close, as if he had not been in the Conclave. He seem'd to be forgot, and forsaken by all Mankind; like the Man in the Gospel, Sick of the Palsie, who had no-body to throw him into the Pool. He went out but seldom, and when he did go to Mass, or to St. Peter's Chapel, to assist at any Scrutiny, he seem'd

so free from all Intrigue, one would have said, He never concern'd himself at all with what pass'd in the Conclave: But he took pains to carry on his Business, tho' he did not appear to think of it. Seeing a Cardinal that was in the Interest of St. *Sixtus*, he said, *The Cardinals ought to make choice of a Person that he should approve of. The Sacred College should shew that Respect to his Merit, as well as to the Memory of his Uncle Gregory XIII. who had shewn so great Zeal and Charity in the Government of the Church.* And when he met one of *Farneze's* Friends; he wou'd speak very much to that Gentleman's Advantage, and say with Admiration; *He could not comprehend why he was not chose yet.* To the Domesticks of Cardinal *Medicis* he spoke of their Master as the Man who deserv'd the best of any of the Sacred College. In short, he spoke well of all the Cardinals, and run out most in commendation of those he did not reckon his Friends, and those he look'd upon to have the greatest Stroke in the Conclave. *Montalto* no sooner heard from Cardinal *Alexandria's* Mouth, in presence of *Este* and *Medicis*, their Intention to choose him, but he was taken with such a Fit of Coughing, wou'd have made one believe he was giving up the Ghost: which forc'd him to tell them, *His Reign would last but a few Days, and besides the continual difficulty of fetching his Breath, he could not believe himself able to undergo so great a Burden; that his small experience in Affairs of Moment, made him absolutely unable to Discharge the Business of the Church, unless he had the Assistance from others.* These Cardinals made Answer, *That God would enable him to Govern the Church.* He went on thus, *That he could never persuade himself to take upon him the Pontificate, of which he was unworthy, except he would promise before-hand not to forsake him,* and
tha

that they would join with him in the Government of the Church, which he could not in Conscience undertake singly. The Cardinal de Medicis saying, Well we will assist you; he made this return; If you make me Pope you will but place your selves in the Holy See, and we shall share the Pontificate amongst us; I shall have only the Name and Title, I shall be Pope in appearance, and you will have the Authority and the Power.

This Talk engaged the Three Cardinals more heartily in Montalto's Interest, and put 'em upon pressing the harder for his Advancement. They were no sooner gone out of his Chamber, but they withdrew to a Place where No body could observe 'em, and there amongst themselves spöke of the Advantage such an Election would be to 'em; to this Effect, What can fall out more happily for us, than to have a Pope at our Devotion? We were downright Fools to let such an Opportunity slip. Montalto laid his Heart open to us, with a Freedom vastly different from the insinuating sly Language of those that stand for the Papacy. As he has had nothing to do in Affairs of Government, but of his own Order for a few Months Time, and that too without any great Success, He will be utterly to seek in Affairs of the Church, and in Course stand in need of our Assistance. How can One believe he will venture of himself to guide a Vessel which he does not understand the Management of? There's not One of his Family capable of assisting him. His Nephews are but Children, and fitter to plough the Ground, than govern a State. He knows we are thoroughly acquainted with the Business of the Holy See, that we can help him with our Counsel and our Endeavours: And as he is beholding to us for his Good Fortune, 'tis but reasonable to believe he confide wholly in us. Thus we may be sure to have the greatest Share in the Pontificate: For if

he had so great a Mistrust of himself when he was but Cardinal, as to act always by Advice, this Mistrust will increase by the Multitude of important Affairs which he will have every Day under his Care.

The Matter appearing thus to 'em, they set themselves to work to surmount those Difficulties which stood in their way. They begun with engaging all *Farneze's* Friends to declare for *Montalto*. They set it about that Cardinal *Torres* would be at *Rome* in Two Days; and *Rusticucci* who was let into the secret, shewed some Letters to confirm the Report. They said, That if *Farneze* could not bring it about to get *Torres* in, he would do what he could to gain Time that he might find some way to be chose himself.

And to fright those Cardinals the more who were against *Farneze's* coming to the *Holy See*, they spread abroad; That he waited for the Return of Couriers from *France* and *Spain*, who in all Likelihood would bring him News that would help forward his Designs; and particularly from the King of *France*, to whom he had mention'd the good Inclinations his House had ever bore to that Crown, and the faithful Service they had perform'd to his Predecessors. There were some much surprized to see *Medicis* declare for *Montalto*: They could not conceive he would bring one in to be Pope who was so bent against My Lord *Paul Ursin* his Cousin; but his own Ambition, and Desire to exclude *Farneze* and *Torres*, transported him beyond all Respect to his own Family; There was not one of the Cardinals that pursued *Montalto's* Interest more earnestly. He was afraid of *Alexandria*, who was naturally wavering and unsettled, lest he should go off from his Party, and be drawn in by *Farneze*, who had a great deal of Cunning and a good Reputation.

It was thought that *Medicis* took that Side because he was confident *Montalto* look'd as if he would out-live *Farnese* and all the rest of his Faction; and that so he might be deliver'd from those who would stand most in his way to the Popedom. But one can't well believe *Medicis* acted upon this View: For tho' *Montalto* was but Sixty Four when he was made Cardinal, he appear'd to be much older, by letting his Beard grow, and going always so slovenly. Most of 'em wondered *Alexandria* should be for *Montalto* rather than for *Albano*, who had been very serviceable to him, was One of the Oldest of the Sacred College, and the Man that his Uncle had upon his Death-bed particularly recommended to him: And he was indeed a Person of Eminent Worth, well experienc'd in Business, and of an extraordinary Good Nature. Cardinal *Alexandria* had in truth given him hopes he would declare for him, but this was only to secure him; and he said to those that were for setting him up, *Albano had a great many Children, and a large Family of his own, as well as his Wife's who was dead, and for whose sake he had a great Kindness for them. That he was a Man of an ambitious Temper, which would push him forward to great things; and this was enough to make the Spanish Faction oppose him: For that Nation will never bear a Man of his Great Merit in the Holy See; and at last, The Sacred College were much better affected to Montalto than him.*

It's a common thing to see those that put up for the Popedom, labouring to undermine one another. The Intrigues of *Montalto* and *Albano* thwarted sufficiently: But in time these Difficulties were conquer'd. Cardinal *Alexandria* broke the Measures of *Albano's* Party to get *Montalto* the Pope: Not that he loved *Montalto* best, for he

had often said, *He was much more oblig'd to Albano than him*; but his Interest prevail'd against his Opinion. He fancied he should be the sole Manager of all under the Pontificate of *Montalto*; But that he should have nothing to do in the Government if *Albano* were Pope: For besides his being well qualified to govern the Church himself, he had a great many Children and other Relations capable of serving him, if he wanted their Help. *Montalto's* undesigning Behaviour, who had no Relations, was the thing that made him the more acceptable of the Two: But our Cardinal repented at length, as we shall see, his having been deceived by a Counterfeit.

Men of the best Experience and penetrating Faculties; blamed Cardinal *Albano* and *Alexandria* a-like. They censur'd this latter for depending so much upon sharing the Power with *Rusticucci* if *Montalto* were Pope; upon which he brought over this Cardinal to his Party, in Prospect that *Montalto* was not able to govern the *Ecclesiastical State*, and had no Nephews of Age to assist him. They should not have been so confident of a thing which was no more than probable, and which had fail'd in many Instances; It being no Miracle to see a Pope quite another Man than he had been whilst a Cardinal. The Alteration was so extraordinary and sudden in *Montalto*, that those very Cardinals who had taken the most Pains in his Election, repented it before ever they went out of the *Conclave*.

Albano for his Part was in the wrong for not doing all he could to get into *Alexandria's* Favour, and to make the other Heads of Parties for himself; his Experience being sufficient for understanding the Practices of the Court of Rome and the way of securing Friends. Perhaps
 cording

according to the good Opinion his Country-Men have of themselves, for he was a Native of *Bergamo*, he trusted too far to his own Merit. Or that he thought it below a Cardinal as he was, to aim at the Papacy by indirect Means, which he reckoned of ill Example, as well as unlawful. But thus it was, when his Friends put him upon Ways and Means, such as generally are made Use of, he answer'd, *That a Cardinal should not desire the Papacy too earnestly, much less raise himself to it by Tricking and Dissimulation. But that he should behave himself so as to let the World see he is fit to be advanc'd to the Holy See.*

All this while, *Alexandria* and *Rusticucci* being flush'd with hopes of Governing the Church, under *Montalto*, did all that lay in 'em to get him chose; and thought every Minute this was delay'd, depriv'd 'em of a Year's Favour from the New Pope. To bring the Cardinals to join with them, they represented him with all the Qualifications a good Pope should have. They set him out for a *Man of a sweet and quiet Temper, and grateful to his Benefactors; One that mistrusted no-body, that had no Relations, that was very Zealous in the Service of the Church; A Man that was dispos'd to Peace and Order, and hated Noise and Confusion: in short, that bore a good Will to all Mankind.* Tho' they were sure of *Medicis* and *de Este*, yet their business could not go on without the Creatures of *Gregory XIII.* came in to 'em: And the Cardinal *de St. Sixtus* in particular, who was at the Head of them. He had profess'd himself entirely in the Interest of *Farnese*, *Montalto's* great Opposer, tho' *Montalto* had never been wanting in respect and submission to him.

After long consultation, they agreed amongst themselves to gain the Votes of some of *St. Sixtus's* Friends,

Friends, whom they look'd upon the easiest to change Sides. They tempted 'em with a Bait of Interest, and prevail'd by the influence some of the chief of the Party had over them, such as *Medicis* and *Alexandria*. Cardinal *Alexandro Riaro*, a *Bologneze*, a Creature of *Gregory* and *Montalto's* Party, persuaded Cardinal *Philippo Guastavillano*, who was also of *Bologna*, to join with them in the Election: And he was pretty easily brought over, having more Inclination to *Medicis* than *St. Sixtus*; and it was the more agreeable to him to be of that Side where his Friend and his Countryman was engag'd.

They secured without any great difficulty the Cardinals *Spinola*, a *Genouese*, *Gonzaga*, of the House of the Dukes of *Mantua*, *Antonio Maria Salviatti*, a *Roman*, *Julius Cavanio* of *Ferrara*, and *John Baptista Castagna*, all Creatures of the last Pope, and chief of the Faction of *St. Sixtus*. But there were against 'em, the Cardinal of *Florence*, of the House of *Medicis*, and *Francisco Sforza*, a *Roman*, both of 'em Persons that bore a great sway in the Conclave. The First at length came off to the Side that his Relation Cardinal *Medicis* had struck in with. The other made some difficulty to follow him, because of the Relation there was between his Family and *Farneze's*. However, they manag'd the matter so dextrously, that they gain'd him, and it was upon this Score that his Uncle, Cardinal *Alexandro Sforza* had a great esteem for *Montalto*, and was his particular Friend. And when he was reflected upon for quitting the Interest of his Family; he Answer'd in plain Terms, *He had rather please himself than any body else*.

To make the Game sure, there was still one Rub to get over, and that was, to make Cardinal *Aleims* on their Side, a very deserving Man, and

and only who was at the Head of the greatest part of the Cardinals of *Pius IV*'s Promotion. They committed it to the care of the Cardinals *de Medicis*, and *Jesualdo*, a *Neapolitan*, a Creature of *Pius IV*. who had an Interest in *Altems*. He could not deny his Vote to Men that had so great Influence over him as *Medicis* and *Jesualdo*: And besides, he was glad of an opportunity to be reveng'd of *Farneze*, and to make a Pope in spite of his Teeth; never forgetting what *Farneze* said Publickly, when he propos'd the Election of *Sirlesso*; That he could not imagine what they meant that were for making him Pope. This Opportunity of shewing his Resentment made him the more willingly engage on *Montalto*'s Side.

There were more Nights than Days spent in managing this Affair; in which Cardinal *Alexandria* shew'd a great deal of Skill, and was Seconded by *Rusticucci*. *Medicis* favour'd it with the help of *Jesualdo* and *Simoncello*. Cardinal *Este* acted in concert with *Gonzaga* and *Cassano*; and *Alexandria* with *Cestis* and *Caraffa*, all Persons of experience and capable of conducting such an Affair. *Rusticucci* went from one Side to the other, as well to get new Votes, as to confirm those he had already engag'd. After all he was in some Apprehension the opposite Faction might draw away the Cardinal *de Este*; and it was probable enough that *Farneze*, who laid about him to break the design, as soon as he heard of it should gain him over to his Party: yet because he did not take the Faction to be so powerful, he did not trouble himself much to oppose it; aiming at the Cardinal *de Este* only.

All this while *Montalto* kept close in his Chamber, without any Signs of thinking to be Pope, nor there was not one of the Cardinals had so

much reason to expect it as himself, after what had been said to him. The Heads of Parties never pass'd by his Door, but they gave him an Account in what Posture matters stood, and how many there were that had declar'd for him. He Answer'd them with his usual Modesty, *Do'nt let the Difficulties in the Conclave fright you, You'll find a great deal worse in the Vatican.* And then went on, *Let me entreat you not to think of Choosing me, unless you'll promise to undertake the Government of the Church entirely.* These Speeches were not a little serviceable to help on, and afterwards to bring about his Exaltation; but the greatest Rub in their way was still to be got over: Cardinal St. *Sixtus* was to be secur'd, who with all his Creatures was ready to put *Montalto* by. And this was the Motive he said that inclin'd him, *Montalto* had cause to complain of *Gregory XIII.* his Uncle, who had taken from him the Pension allow'd the Poor Cardinals, tho' he Dedicated a Commentary upon St. *Ambrose* to him, which cost a great deal of time and pains, as we have taken notice already. St. *Sixtus* being a Man of no great Constancy in his Resolutions, the deference he had for Cardinal *Riaria* was made use of to manage him. This Gentleman being then Ill of the Gout was carried to St. *Sixtus's* Chamber, and talk'd to him thus; *The Faction, my Lord, that sets up Montalto is so strong, and his Election so far advanc'd, that he will infallibly carry it. 'Tis but time lost to make any Opposition to a thing that will come to pass, to the prejudice of those that declare against it; and therefore let me advise and entreat you to consent to it with a good Grace, since you are not capable of binding it.*

St. *Sixtus* was mightily surpriz'd at this Discourse; but more when *Guastavillano* came into his

his Room just as *Riario* went out (for the business had been concerted between them Two) and Talk'd after the same manner, advising him earnestly to be of their Side, and telling him, *that he was out of his Wits, if he oppos'd it.*

There was one thing would effectually have ruin'd the design, if the contrary Party had found it out. Cardinal *Alexandria* appear'd by Night in the Conclave, in Disguise: But *Montalto's* good Genius which took care of his Election, would have it so that his Enemies never discover'd this Irregular Proceeding. And the Heat of their Faction against him began to dwindle, at the Head of which was *Farneze*, who did not imagine this Election would come to doing Homage. He thought indeed *Montalto* might have most Voices at the first Scrutiny, but apprehended no more: For Cardinal St. *Sixtus* had pass'd his word not to join in any Election but what they Two should agree upon.

As we have yet but slightly and by chance taken notice of *Montalto's* way of behaving himself both in the Conclave and out of it, it's fit we should speak a little more at Large, and give an Account of his Conduct. He lived very quietly in the House he had purchas'd near St. *Mary Major*, with an Equipage agreeable to the humility he had made profession of: He went to the Congregations and Consistories he was Summon'd to, with an Air of Sweetness and Submission. He would never go upon his own Opinion and impose it upon the other Cardinals, but always gave in to the Sentiments of some of 'em.

He knew so well how to conceal his Resentment, and put up Affronts and Injuries with such patience, that tho' he was call'd in the Consistory, *The Ass of the Marquisate*, he made as if he did not

not hear it; and turning to those who had us'd him with the greatest scorn, he return'd 'em thanks. This was like some of the Popes who boasted of attaining the See by doing good to such as had done them mischief. He went to the Consistory the very Morning after his Nephew was Murther'd, and tho' he look'd more out of Humour then, than at other times, that was all he would not demand Justice of the Pope: and one would have thought his Nephew had been very indifferent to him, if before he had not shewn the contrary.

When he was to treat with Princes, or their Ministers, he laid a great stress upon the Reasons they gave and the shifts they made, but still without prejudice to the Honour or Interest of the Holy See, whose Rights he ever maintain'd with Zeal and Resolution; but most of all after he was Pope. He was complaisant and kind to every body, even to his own Domesticks; and particularly to the Brothers who had ever been his Tormenters, and had declar'd themselves his Enemies: He embrac'd them when they went to see him, as if they had been always Dear Friends, which made 'em say when they had taken leave; *The Cardinal de Montalto is really a Good Man, to forget how we have been his Enemies.*

He was perpetually, both in Publick and in Private, speaking of his great Obligations to Cardinal *Alexandria*; *If he had the World at command, he could not sufficiently requite the Favours and Honour that his Uncle Pius V. and Himself had heap'd upon him.* In this he spoke true; and *Alexandria*, who was deceiv'd like the rest, had reason to expect great things under his Pontificate. By this Method he recommend himself to the *Spaniards*, who out of Policy are better pleas'd with

with a Pope of Moderate Endowments, than if he were too Quick-sighted: They thought too penetrating a Genius would disturb the Quiet of *Italy*, which they would have maintain'd, because of the Estates they have in the Country. They were so much taken with the retired Life of *Montalto*, that they were the forwardest to get him chose, setting it about, that the King of *Spain* had a Respect for him because he was so much inclined to Peace and Quietness.

He did not betray one Spark of Ambition in the *Conclave*, but engaged to serve all that had Occasion for him, and particularly the Leaders of Parties, as we have observed already. The same Morning that he went into the *Conclave*, he waited upon Cardinal *Altoms*, and mentioned the great Obligations he was under to his Lordship, and to the Marquess of *Altoms* his Eldest Son: That he was upon that Consideration unalterably devoted to them, and that he pleas'd himself with the Thoughts of having no other Benefactor, but his Fortune was wholly owing to his Favour. It was reported, that *Altoms* was so thoroughly persuaded of his Sincerity, that all of a sudden he engaged to make Interest for him, and said, *If my Vote would do the Business, you might be sure to be Pope.* To which *Montalto* made Answer, *I call God to witness how little Desire I have for that Dignity, which I think my self unfit for and unworthy of. If I have any Reason to wish for it, it is that I may have Opportunity to give my Friends, and particularly your Lordship, undeniable Proofs of the Value I have for them.* The same Speech he made to Cardinal *Madrucci*, when he entered the *Conclave*. This Cardinal had the King of *Spain's* secret Instructions about the Choice of a Pope committed to him, which was an Eye-Sore to *Medicis*, for he as Protector

.of

of the Country expected to be entrusted with all things relating to that Crown. It was thought that *Madrucci* had by his Instructions promoted the Interest of *Sirleto*, *Montalto*, *Castagna*, and *Mondovi*; and for *Montalto*, he had besides his own Vote employ'd all his Friends, and had acted in concert with Cardinal *Altens* his particular Friend to bring about the Business.

But to go on with the Intrigues of the *Conclave*, whilst the Cardinals who declared for *Montalto* impatiently waited for the next Day to compleat his Exaltation, *Peter Francis Ferrario* of *Piedmont* Cardinal of *Vercelli*, came luckily to the *Conclave*. Almost all the Cardinals met in the great Hall to receive him, which was a good Opportunity for *Montalto*. As soon as he came in, Cardinal *Medicis* and *Jesualdo* pressed him to declare for *Montalto*, and presently after the Chaplain said Mass in *St. Paul's* Chapel, which the Cardinals generally are at, and then go to the Scrutiny. When the Service was over, the Cardinal-Dean ordered the Master of the Ceremonies to read the Three Bulls to the Cardinal *de Vercelli*. Whilst these were reading, the Heads of Parties that were for *Montalto*, thought fit to give the last Stroke to their Business.

When the Bulls were begun to be read, Cardinal *d'Este* nodded to *Alexandria* who was over against him, to go out of the Chapel. *Alexandria* taking the Hint got up, and lean'd upon the Bench, as if he had been writing his Vote, but it was only to get him to call out *St. Sixtus*, and when he had time spoke out to him thus, *Be assured, My Lord, that Altens and Medicis concur in choosing Montalto immediately, that Guastavillano and abundance of our Friends are in the same Interest, and in short it is a done Business. But we would not conclude the Affair out of respect to you without*

without allowing you a Share in it, and engaging the New Pope to own himself beholding so you for the Pontificate. Consider whether you will be better pleased to join with us, or to see us do it without you.

This Discourse being spoke earnestly, and being unexpected too, surprized St. *Sixtus* so much that he had no Power to recollect himself. It brought to his Mind what *Riario* and *Guastavillano* had been infusing, but made him absolutely forget the Engagement he was under to *Farneze* to Vote for No body but whom he should approve of. He never thought of the Reasons which should have moved him to set up None but One of his own Creatures: And fail'd in that Resolution and Prudence which would become the Head of a Party so considerable as he was; which too he had given Instances of, as unsettled as he was, whilst he govern'd the Church under his Uncle *Gregory XIII.*

There's no doubt, if he had been constant to *Farneze's* Party, and they had concerted Measures with their Creatures to stand the first Shock of this Intrigue, they might have very much perplexed the Matter. But his Reason and his Courage both failing him upon the Occasion, he sent for his Creatures who were Twelve in all, and calling 'em together in the Hall, spoke to 'em thus; *I thought it proper, My Lords, to ask all your Opinions what is to be done at this Conjunction when Cardinal Montalto is proposed to us, and to advise with you what may be most for the Advantage of the Church and the Service of God.*

The Cardinals that were in with *Montalto's* Friends, and knew the Intrigue from the Bottom, those were, *Florence, Cananio, Jesualdo, Salviatti, Spinola, Riario, Sforza* and *Castagna*, took up the Business and said, *they could not make Choice of a more worthy Man, and fill the Place better.* Not one of the other

dared

dared say a Word to the contrary. *John Antonio Fashinetti*, Cardinal by the Title of the Four Crown'd Saints, a Man of great Judgment, and extream good Nature, contented himself with telling *St. Sixtus*; *We shall approve of whatever your Lordship does, and rely wholly upon your Experience and Wisdom.* None of these Cardinals return'd to the Chapel but *Austria*, who desired to know of *Madrucci*, as having the King of Spain's Instructions, if he should Vote for *Montalto*. He answer'd him, *He ought to be of that side, and Cardinal St. Sixtus would look upon it as an Obligation.*

This of *Alexandria* and *St. Sixtus*, going out, was a thing without Precedent, and which kept back the Scrutiny for some time. It seem'd strange that *Farneze* who had govern'd in several Elections the Man that *Pius IV.* *Pius V.* and *Gregory XIII.* were beholding to for their Popedom, could not bring it about to exclude *Montalto*. He was Dean of the Sacred College, and Head of a Party that gave him great Power in the *Conclave*. He was thorough-pac'd in this sort of Intrigues, for which he had a Foundation of Good Sense and Penetrating Wit. In short, there's no Account to be given why he did not go out of the Chapel too to secure *St. Sixtus*, whom he knew of an irresolute Temper, from being drawn away; and put him upon Methods of ruining their Design by proposing some Creature of his Own; Or by joining with *Altems* to get *Sirleto* or *Vercelli* chose, or *Paleotti*, rather than a Man he had ever opposed with the greatest Violence.

— We must take this Failure in his Conduct for Infatuation. *Farneze* was no longer himself when he saw the Leaders of Parties, acting in Opposition to him; and among the rest the Cardinal d' *Este*, who had beckoned to *Alexandria* to go out

out of the Chapel, saying, *It was to no purpose now to read the Bulls, since the Election was concluded upon.* After they came in again, *Alexandria* went to him in a Concern to tell him *Montalto* was chose, and to desire he would not be against it, assuring him he should have the same Favour and Fortune under him, as he and his Family had under the Pontificate of *Paul III.* It was attributed to Two Reasons that *Farneze* did not oppose the thing: First, The Infirmities of *Montalto*, who had been drooping many Years; and then his undesigning Temper, which seem'd incapable of Resentment: And therefore it was indifferent to him, whether a Man so far decay'd and stupified as *Montalto* seem'd to be was made Pope, or continued Cardinal. So it was that he barely asked St. *Sixtus* what Reason he had to be for this Election; who made Answer, *Because he knew him to be of an obliging complaisant Humour, and that under his Government they might enjoy a great deal of Freedom. I am much of your Mind,* replied *Farneze*, *for he is a Man that has not wit enough to do either good or hurt.*

'Tis no Wonder that the Cardinals were of a different Opinion from the People, who were for *Farneze* before all Men Living. These prudent Gentlemen were under Apprehensions of the Grandeur of his Family, of the Valour and Good Fortune of his Nephew *Alexander Farneze*, who commanded the King of *Spain's* Forces in *Flanders.* What fell out under *Paul III.* their Uncle was too great an Occasion of Jealousie to the Sacred College. *Farneze* might have ventured upon great Matters, being seconded by a Nephew who could have put 'em in execution, to the Destruction of the Peace of *Christendom*, and the Quiet of the *Ecclesiastical State.* They had been sufficiently instructed by Experience, that such Designs

signs were of ill Consequence to the Church, and indeed to the whole World besides; particularly when the Ambition of Nephews imposed upon the Kindness the Popes had for their Families.

It was the Opinion of some, that *Farnese's* slighting the Poor Cardinals as he did, was a considerable Help to *Montalto's* Exaltation. He had a Maxim which was very particular: He took it to be the nearest way of coming at the Popedom to put on a haughty unfociable Behaviour, to have little to do with the other Cardinals; but he was as much out in this, as in reckoning so much upon his own great Interest, without which he thought No body could be Pope, but all that stood for the Dignity must make their Court to him, and continually depend upon him.

One thing must not be passed over in silence, since it surprized those who understood all the Movements of this Conclave: And that is, That No body named the Cardinal of *St. George*, or the Cardinal *dé Santa Cruz*, the last of 'em a *Roman*, and indeed both Men of Worth, who had considerable Expectations. That *Santa Cruz* was not thought of, was the most wondered at, because he was not only a Creature of *Pius IV.* but hoped to be brought upon the Stage before any of 'em, by Cardinal *d' Este*, having been Nuncio in *France*, and made Cardinal at the Desire of that Crown. He carried it also very fair with *Spain*, and acted in that Interest whenever it did not interfere with the *French*. His circumspect and diligent Conduct gave People to understand he had a Mind to be chose; but he never arrived at the Reward of his Pains.

The little notice that was taken of these Two Cardinals in the Conclave; was interpreted different ways; some attributed it to the present Juncture

junction of Affairs, and the unlucky circumstances which humane Prudence could not have guarded against. Others said the Heads of Parties did not propose 'em to spare the shame and confusion they would have been in upon a disappointment. And they were neither of 'em unexceptionable; *St. George* had the character of a Man; Ignorant and Selfish, who was most inclined to Martial Affairs, (and that were enough to set the *Spanish* Faction against him, if he was otherwise never so acceptable) and made People shy of him. *Santa Cruz* on the other Side, tho' a Man of good Understanding and an Honest Gentleman, was reckoned Revengeful and Assuming. *France* and *Spain* could never have relied upon him; He was mistrusted by his own Relations; and the *Roman* Cardinals would have oppos'd him if it were but for this Reason, That no Man is a Prophet in his own Country.

Paleotti, tho' much in Vogue, and by the Court and the whole Town thought to stand as fair as any body, was never propos'd in the Conclave. Not that there was any thing to be said against him; but the College was weary of the Government of *Gregory XIII.* which lasted so long, and therefore would not venture upon another from *Bologna* lest he should prove as long Liv'd. The Nephews could not bear the thoughts of having a Pope from their own Country who might eclipse the Glory of their Family. And besides, *Paleotti* was not well look'd upon by several of the Cardinals because there was no good Understanding between him and *Farnese*.

On the other side *Fachinetti* was not propos'd, being liable to this exception, besides his coming from *Bologna* too, that he was too great with *Farnese*. He was in truth a Man of eminent

Virtue, well Vers'd in the Affairs of the Church, zealous for the Service of the Holy See; and his Exaltation, would have prov'd beneficial to all *Christendom*.

Augustin Valerio, commonly call'd Cardinal *Verona*, because he was Bishop of that See, was one of those who during the Vacancy were much talk'd of: and tho' he was but Fifty Years old, or thereabout, he had been propos'd at least, if not chose, but for his Quality of a Noble *Venetian*: For the *Spaniards* would not hear of a Pope, whose strict austere Life came up to the Example of *St. Charles Borromeo*. This great Prelate had the Character of a good-natur'd and obliging person, but not appearing at the Conclave he was not mention'd there.

Mondovi was also absent, who was a new made Cardinal, he was never brought upon the Stage tho' able to have push'd vety fair for the Popedom, and to have carried it from 'em all if *France* and *Spain* had been for him. *Julius Antonio Santorio*, call'd Cardinal *de St. Severino*, was only propos'd by the Bye. *Rusticucci*, his particular Friend, waited a more favourable opportunity to move in his behalf, had not the Intrigues for *Montalto* diverted him. This Cardinal was in great Esteem for his zeal and devotion, and his Good-will to the Publick. *Spain* did what they could for him, he was a Friend of *Farneze*, and much belov'd by *Alexandria*.

As soon as *St. Sixtus* perceived his Creatures dispos'd to give their Voices for *Montalto*, he put himself at the Head of 'em and led 'em back, to the Chappel, resolving to come to an Election; and this Remove made several Cardinals change countenance. When they had taken their Place it was propos'd that the Scrutiny should be made. But *St. Sixtus* either being out of patience, or fear-

ing

ing things should turn about, or that he would have the greatest share in the business, got *Alexandria* away, and took him to embrace *Montalto*, both of 'em crying out, *A Pope, A Pope*. Most of the Cardinals follow'd their Example, and commended 'em for what they had done.

We shall here give a short Account of some particular Customs at the Election of a Pope, which perhaps will be acceptable. They proceed to an Election Three different Ways, by Scrutiny, by Access, by Adoration. There was a Fourth Method, which was call'd *Compromising*, but that is long since laid aside. They never make use of it but when the Conclave is so Divided that 'tis impossible a Pope should be chose.

In case of this Disorder the Cardinals are obliged to pick out Two or Three of their Number, and agree to stand to their choice.

In this manner they proceed to a Scrutiny. Every Cardinal has a Sheet of Paper made up into Five Folds by his Servant that waits on him in the Conclave, in the Innermost of which the Cardinal writes his Name; the Servant Rolls up the Three next and Seals 'em up with Wax or a Wafer, putting on Two Seals with different impressions, which are made on purpose for these Occasions. Then he Writes in his own Hand the Name of him that his Master Votes for, after this Form; *I choose the most Reverend the Lord Cardinal Peretti to be Sovereign Pontiff*. The Cardinals unless they Counterfeit their Hand never write their Votes themselves, for fear if their Hand be known it should give occasion to mistrust, and unkindnesses from the opposite Parties. The Paper being Folded up after this manner, a Sentence is writ upon it, such as the Cardinal chooses, which sometimes he Dictates. The same method is used when they would go

from a Scrutiny to what they call Access or Approach: because they are not allow'd to Vote for the same Cardinal again, that they had been for at the Scrutiny. They Write something else this Second time, as, *I am of this Side of such Cardinal, and I have Liberty of being so, and my Billet will Justifie me which has these Words writ upon it.*

These Papers are all placed in a Golden Cup that stands upon the Altar in the Chappel, by the Cardinals themselves who meet there. And the Three Principal Cardinals who have a right to be Presidents at the Scrutiny, and to take care every thing be done in Order, to the Chambers of those that are Sick, to receive their Billets, which are made up with the same exactness and secrecy as the rest.

When they are all in the Cup, One of the Three Cardinals pours them out upon the Table which is before the Altar. And if it falls out, as sometimes it does, that two Thirds of the Cardinals are for the same person, He is undoubtedly Pope, by the Rules of the Scrutiny. And then the Papers are open'd, and the Name of every one seen that was for the Election. But this happens so very rarely, that when *Adrian VI. Præceptor* to *Charles the Fifth* was chose, it was look'd upon almost a Miracle.

The second way of choosing a Pope, and a very ancient Practice, is this; It is called the Approach or Access, with manifest Relation to an old Custom of the Senators who left their Places and approach'd the Person whose Party they were of: Or at least stood up and cryed aloud, *I approach such a One*, which gave Occasion to this Expression, *in Sententiam ire*; not much differing from the third sort of Election which

which goes by the Name of Adoration, and is thus; Every Cardinal goes to him that is chose, and makes him a very low Bow, Who may be certain of the Election if Two Thirds of the *Conclave* salute him so: But he must have the Confirmation of the Scrutiny for Form's sake only; and the Cardinals that choose him take care that it proceeds without Prejudice to the Homage, which they term Adoration. Though this Method of choosing a Pope has been long since reckon'd by some the true Inspired Way; Others have thought it a violent and dangerous Practice. Three or Four Young Cardinals may be at the Head of the Factions, and so Tyrannically rule the *Conclave*. For which Reason the Popes were forced to settle the Scrutiny as the only fair Way of choosing: According to which the Cardinals have no Dependance upon one another, but give their Votes according to their Conscience without any Compulsion.

Whilst the Cardinals were crowding about *Montalto*, the Dean order'd 'em to their Places again, that he might go upon the Scrutiny. *Montalto* before it was begun stepped to St. *Sixtus*, and whisper'd him, *To take care the Scrutiny may be without Prejudice to the Adoration.* St. *Sixtus* and *Alexandria* both did him this good Office, and cried out two or three times: *Without Prejudice to the Adoration.*

Montalto when he saw above half the Votes for him, no longer doubted but he should carry it; and without staying till the Scrutiny was over, went out of his Place, and throwing down his Staff upon which he had lean'd, into the Middle of the Floor, he stood upright, with a Presence so great as he had never shew'd before: But what surpriz'd 'em all most was, that he spit with as much Strength as a Man of Thirty

Years Old; Upon which the Cardinals look'd upon one another with Amazement. The Dean perceiving St. Sixtus and Alexandria by some Signs they made, repented of what they had done, said aloud, *Don't let us go; lest, there's a Mistake in the Scrutiny.* Montalto answer'd him briskly, *The Scrutiny is right and in due Form.* And then the same Man, who but two Hours before could not speak without Coughing fung out the *Te Deum* with so loud and strong a Voice, as made the Chapel Echo again.

He kneel'd down before the Altar, as the Custom is, to say some short Prayer; they observed that he never opened his Mouth, but only look'd upon the Crucifix. 'Tis usual for the Master of the Ceremonies, whilst the New Pope is on his Knees at the Altar, to ask him if he be willing to accept the Pontificate. One of 'em came to Montalto and put the Question to him, who with a grave and Majestick Air made Answer, *I cannot accept what I have already, I did accept it willingly, finding my self, by the Grace of God, strong and vigorous enough to govern the Church.* These Words being spoke in the hearing of all the Cardinals, Farnese turn'd to St. Severini and said; *These Gentlemen thought to have got every thing into their own hands by placing an Ideot in the Holy See; but I see plainly enough, We have made a Pope that will use both them and us too like Beasts and Ideots.* This went to St. Severini's Heart, who was a Nice Man; he shrugg'd up his Shoulders, making no Answer but, *God in his Mercy will take care of all.*

It was observed as the Masters of the Ceremonies were putting on the Habit, he turn'd himself and stretch'd out his Arms with a great deal of Strength and Nimbleness. Cardinal Rusticucci, who could not understand his great Metamor-

tamor.

tamorphosis, said to him in a familiar Way: *The Pontificate, Most Holy Father, is a Sovereign Remedy, since it restores Youth and Health to Old and Sick Cardinals.* To which he replied, with a Voice well becoming the Majesty of a Pope; *I find it by Experience.* He took up this Gravity in the Room of that Submission and Humility (which he had so long shewn) the Moment the Scrutiny was over. He forgot the Complaisance with which he had used all Mankind whilst a Cardinal: He made himself familiar with No body any more, and carried himself with greater Reservedness toward those he was beholding to for his Exaltation, than to others.

He took up the Name of *Sixtus*, in Memory of *Sixtus IV.* who was also a Monk of the Order of *St. Francis.* Some have told us he did it in Complaisance to the Cardinal of that Name: But it's hard to believe that, considering the little Notice he took of those that rais'd him to the Holy See. If he did this in Honour of the Cardinal, 'twas the only Favour shewed him: They say, too, if it had not been for *St. Sixtus's* Desire, he had called himself *Nicolas IV.* who had been also a *Franciscan,* and afterwards govern'd the Church with a great deal of Zeal. Whilst he was Cardinal he had set up a fine Monument for this Pope in *St. Mary Major's* Church, to which he made Additions when he came to the Papacy.

This sudden Change in the Pope is by some reported to have struck the Cardinals *d'Este, Medicis,* and *Alexandria* so much to the Heart, that at a Conference which They three had presently after the Election, they were observed to give Intimations of their repenting it. Cardinal *Farnese,* who watched all the Steps of these Brethren, said to *Sforza* as they came out of the *Conclave:*

Charles V. abdicated in the Morning and repented before Night, and I believe these Gentlemen, pointing at them Three, are overtaken by Repentance for choosing Montalto something sooner. They are happy enough, answer'd Sorza, their Repentance go off as quick as that Emperor's did.

It was Publish'd to the People with the usual Ceremonies, that Cardinal Montalto was Head of the Church, by the Name of Sixtus V. And the same Day, which was Wednesday the Twenty-fourth of April, always lucky to him, he was carried at Three of the Clock into St. Peter's Church, and received by the Canons who waited for him in the Portico singing the Antiphon, *Ecce sacerdos Magnus*, &c. He gave his Blessing with his Right Hand as he came out of the Conclave with so much Address and Easiness, that the People who were got together from all Parts asked in a kind of Surprize; *But where's the Pope?* They could not think Cardinal Montalto was the Man they saw. Every body said, *This can never be Cardinal Montalto that we see tumbling down as he goes about the Streets. This can't be he that was so weak his Legs would not bear him; that went with his Head hanging down upon one Shoulder. Who could have thought he'd ever make the Figure he does?*

The common Talk was, that the Cardinal de Medicis going to do Homage, as the Practice is, with the other Cardinals, when he saw him sit bolt upright against the Back of his Chair, said; *Your Holiness has quite another Air and Mien than when you was Cardinal: To which Sixtus made this Return, I was then looking for the Keys of Paradise; and that I might find 'em the better I stoop'd and hung down my Head: But since I have 'em in my Hand, I look only toward Heaven, having no farther need of any thing upon Earth.*

As he was going from the Conclave to St. Peter's, the People cried out without ceasing, *Long live Sixtus*. And as is usual in their Publick Acclamations add, *Holy Father, Pious and Justice*. He answered two several times: *Ask nothing but clemency, for Justice I have of my self Inclination enough to it.*

So impatient he was till he could exercise his Authority in Rome, and reform abuses, that he was loath to put off the Ceremony of his Coronation so long as his Predecessors used to do; because the New Pope's don't go out of their Palace upon any business whatever till that be over. He said to the Cardinals that were in Company with him, *To Night I will take an Account of the Wants and Grievances of the People, and therefore I wou'd have the Crown Fetch'd, and lose no time, by putting off my Coronation.* These words struck those like a Flash of Lightning who thought to make an ill use under his Pontificate, of that Meekness they had imagined so natural to him. There was much ado to persuade him to defer the Ceremony: At length he was prevail'd upon to go by the Ancient practice, when he was inform'd it was no essential point, but he might use the same Authority as if he had been Crown'd. A Cardinal that had a pretty good insight into matters, standing by *Sixtus* whilst this business was talk'd over, said; *he never saw a Pope so forward to shew his Authority: And in truth there was never more need of shewing it.*

They brought him from St Peter's to his own Apartment, and when the Cardinals were withdrawn some sweet-meats were set before him, of which he eat a little to refresh himself after the Fatigue of the Day. *Alexandria* and *Ruffinucci* follow'd him into his chamber, and used a great

a great deal of Importunity to make him lie down to rest. He Answer'd 'em, *Labour was his greatest refreshment.* Upon which *Alexandria* told him with a little too much freedom, *Your Holiness did not speak so heavily Yesterday and the Day before to Day.* That is, replied he, *because Yesterday I was not Pope, nor the Day before, but to Day I am.* *Rusticucci* met with a Rub that Mortified him sufficiently, he was setting *Sixtus's* Habit right which lay rump'd upon his Shoulders; which the Pope perceiving and taking it for an indecent freedom, said hastily; *You must not be so familiar with the Pope.* But they were still more confounded, and brought to a pair of any power under his Pontificate, by this reprimand that he gave 'em. When they were come into his Chamber, both took upon them to order that he had every thing he wanted in his Apartment. *Sixtus* was not pleas'd with their Care, and in a very serious Air said, *you may save your selves this trouble if you please, I am able to call for what I want.* *Rusticucci* came to *Alexandria* and whisper'd him, *There's for you My Lord.* And for you too, said t'other.

His Groom of the Chamber came to ask what he wou'd have for supper, as he was always asked when Cardinal, what should be got for him; *Sixtus* looking Earnestly at him said, *Is it the Fashion to ask Sovereign Princes what they'l have set before 'em: Let my Table be filled as a King's uses to be, and then I shall see what I like best.* The Poor Groom withdrew a little out of countenance, not expecting such an Answer.

He gave Orders to invite Cardinal *Alexandria*, *Medicis*, *Rusticucci*, and *Este*, St. *Sixtus*, and *Altens* to sup with him. *Este* made some excuse, but the Rest accepted the Honour his Holiness did them. But the Entertainment was not

not very agreeable, for *Sixtus* sent for them only to let 'em know in way of Discourse, how he intended to carry himself in his Pontificate.

And, indeed, they were no sooner sat down, but he began the Subject, and enlarged upon the Power *Jesus Christ* had committed to *St. Peter*, in making him his Vicar upon Earth. He repeated these Words to 'em over and over, *Thou art Peter, and upon this Rock will I found my Church; the sence of which he set forth to 'em thus, The Judgments of God are Deep; Jesus Christ has left but One Part on Earth, One Vicar, One Head; To him alone He has committed the Care of His Flock; Thou art Peter, that is, Thou only art Sovereign Pontiff. I will give thee the Keys of the Kingdom of Heaven, as if he had said, Thou alone shalt have the Power to bind and to loose all things without Exception; 'Tis to you alone, only to you that I have given the Right and Authority of guiding and Governing my Church: To thee who art my Vicar, and not to others who are but thy Ministers, thy Inferiors.* The Cardinals understood what all this meant, and Despair'd of the Favour and Interest they had enjoy'd in *Chimera*, whilst they promoted the Election. He would not so much as give 'em leave to Answer him: And when any of 'em offered to speak upon the Subject, he Interrupted him and stopp'd his Mouth with this, *That the Church did not want more Governours than One.* *Rusticucci* could not forbear saying, *I am surprized at your Holiness who have so often told us in the Conclave you could never Govern the Church without Assistance, and now say quite the contrary.* It's true, Answer'd *Sixtus*, *I said so because I thought so; but since God has enabled me, I am of another opinion, and tell you another thing.* With this fine Compliment he dismiss'd 'em. They made some Reflections upon it amongst

mongst themselves, and Cardinal *Medicis*, who seem'd the most Mortified, tho' he had the least reason for't, told 'em at parting, *he foresaw a Great Storm gathering over their Heads, and therefore, said he, every one should think of shelter.*

Next Morning appear'd Two Page-nades: The first was *Palquin* holding a broken Turnep in his hand, and saying; *May my Head be broke as this Turnep is, if ever a Monk be made Pope.* The other had something more in it; setting him out with a Plate full of Tooth-Picks, and *Marsorio* asking him *Whither he was going with 'em; I am carrying them, said he, to the Cardinals, Alexandria, Medicis and Rusticucci, who had occasion for 'em.* The meaning of this is, That it's a Gibing way of the *Italians* when they would make a Jest of a Man for being baff'd in his Projects, to present him with a Tooth-pick; As who should say, you have nothing to do but Pick your Teeth. The application was easie, and Cardinal *Farneze* when he heard it burst out a laughing, and said, *These Gentlemen are not the only Folks that want 'em.*

The necessary orders were given for the Coronation, and the first of *May* was fixed for it. There were Bonfires and other expressions of Joy, Every Body being Ambitious to do something in respect to the New Pope. The Religious of the Apostles Convent made splendid doings upon the occasion: They Erected Triumphant Arches, made Bonfires, and sung several Masses in their Church set to Musick. The Cardinals, Prelates, and Heads of the Principal Orders, went to Compliment him upon the honour that had been done them. And there was not all over Christendom One Bishop, or Magistrate in Places where there were Monasteries that did not pay him the same Respect.

Sixtus, employ'd the Best part of his time and chiefly the Nights, whilst he waited for the Ceremony of his Coronation, in completing a little Journal he had made on purpose to set down all the designs and projects he had a mind to put in execution, during his Pontificate. He trusted this Journal in nobody's keeping, but carried it always in his Pocket: He took such pains, that when he was at his Breviary if any thing came into his Head that he thought worth putting into his Journal, he broke off the Office, saying to his Almoner; *'Tis but reasonable that the Publick should be preferr'd to a private good: My Breviary concerns Nobody but my self, and these Memoirs are of Consequence to all Christendom.*

He sent for the Governour of *Rome*, and all the Judges to charge 'em they should administer Justice Exactly: He spoke to them with such earnestness and Vehemence, his Discourse look'd more like Threatnings than Instructions. He perfectly frighted them, when they took leave, with these words; *I come not to bring Peace but a Sword.*

He received with Gaiety enough, the Compliments of Ambassadors and Ministers of Sovereign Princes, as well as the Nobility of *Rome*. But would not allow 'em long Audience, giving them to understand, *He had other business to do the First Days of his Pontificate, than to hear such Discourse.* He treated the Ambassadors of *Japan* with more respect, receiving them very Handsomly. Since this was at his entring upon the Popedom, and more splendid than the reception they had from *Gregory XIII.* when they arriv'd at *Rome*; the Reader perhaps will not take it amiss if we enlarge a little upon the matter, and give a particular Account how they were

were treated from their First Audience to their going away.

To set this Matter in the best light, We must know *Japan* is made up of Thirty Six distinct Islands: That the Country is reckoned Antipodes to *Spain*: That it is above Three Times as big as *Italy*: And but Sixty Leagues Distance from the Kingdom of *China*.

It is divided into several Kingdoms. 'Tis a very cold place, and the North Wind which continually Blows, brings very often Snow with it. There's plenty of Fruit of all Sorts; but it bears little Corn except Rice, which the Inhabitants live upon. They have a great aversion to the Flesh of tame Creatures, but they eat Venison for the sake of hunting it. Their Houses are all of Wood, which are indeed very pretty and convenient. They are a People of a strong habit of body, as well as very Ingenious, Witness the Art of Printing which has been much longer known there than with us. They are Born with Courage, and bear the Fatigues of War easily. Poverty is no shame among them; they Punish Rogues with great severity abhorring Theft. They have a veneration for Religion, a Respect to Birth and Quality; and have naturally a Love to Truth and Justice.

Saint *Francis Xavier* a Companion of St. *Ignatius de Loyala* Founder of the Jesuit's Order, was sent to this Country to Abolish Paganism, and plant the Christian Religion. He got thither in 1549. and Preach'd the Gospel with so good success that he converted a great number to the Faith. He Baptized the King of *Bungo* one of the greatest Princes of the Country, and Who was in such Esteem with his People for his Learning and his Wisdom, that the bringing him over

over made an easy way to the settlement of the true Religion, in his Dominions:

The Example, this Prince set, who was named *Francis* at his Christning, was follow'd by the King of *Arima*; and the Prince of *Omura*. The first of 'em was named *Prothais*, the other *Batthol'mew*. The Jesuits desirous to have the honour ascrib'd to them of gaining so good Footing for Christianity in that Country; As well as to acknowledge the Bounty of *Gregory XIII.* in Building them a fine College in *Rome*, and to please him with letting him see such distant Nations submitting themselves to the Church, perswaded these Princes their New Converts to send Ambassadors to the Pope; to give an Account of their embracing the Faith, to assure Him of their Obedience to His Holiness, and to own Him Lawful Head of the Catholick Church, and *Jesus Christ's* Vicar upon Earth.

To this purpose they sent thither Father *Alexander Valignan* in Quality of Visitor who put 'em upon dispatching away the Ambassadors. It being a very long Voyage (above Two Thousand Leagues) they thought it too much for Persons advanced in Age. And therefore these Princes, resolv'd to send some that were Young and of a strong constitution, and to shew the greater Respect to the Holy See would have 'em be their own Relations.

The King of *Bungo*, made choice of *Don Manrio* his Cousin, and Nephew to the King of *Fuingo*. The King of *Arima* and the Prince of *Omura*, pitch'd upon *Don Michael Cingive* Cousin to the First, and Nephew of the Second. These Ambassadors who were but Sixteen Years Old, were very pretty Gentlemen, and had a great deal of Wit. They brought Letters from the Three Princes signed by their own Hands to be presented

sented to His Holiness; in which they acknowledged Him God's True and Sole Vicar upon Earth, and Swore Obedience to Him. And farther they excused themselves in Language extremely Civil and Obliging, for not paying their duty to His Holiness in Person: Their Age, and the Necessity of their Presence in their Dominions, would not permit them to take so long a Voyage. These Letters were full of Expressions of abundant Respect to the Holy See, of which Father *Valignan*, it's probable, was the Inspirer.

With these Two Ambassadors two other Young Men of Quality, of Eighteen Years Old, were sent to bear 'em Company. One of 'em was called *Julian Nacota*, of as Good a Family and as Rich as any in the Country. T'other was fir named *Don Martino Fara*, a Learned Man for his Age, and particularly well acquainted with the History of other Nations, from the great Inclination he had for Travels. Father *Valignan* took charge of this Gentleman, and of the Ambassadors too, who had no great retinue because of the length and inconveniences of the Voyage. All things being ready for their departure, they set out the Twenty Fifth of *February* 1582. They were attended to the borders of their Territories by a great number of the Nobility, and Persons of the First Quality; and Father *Valignan* gave them the Sacrament before they went off.

One may imagine the Difficulties and the Hazards of this Voyage, which they could not accomplish in less than Three Years, so long they were getting to *Italy*. They came to *Spain* in *November* 1584. at the time when that Court was Feasting upon the Marriage of the *Infanta Catherine*, the King of *Spain*'s Second Daughter, *Charles Emmanuel* Duke of *Savoy*, who the next Spring came to consummate the Marriage. The Solemnity

Solemnity was more considerable upon Account of the Oath that the Prince of *Spain*, only Son of *Philip* the Second, who was also of the same Name, had taken in *Castile*, as he had done the Year before, in *Portugal*.

There was Care taken at their setting out, to provide 'em with all things they should want both at Sea and Land; and the King gave order that they should be treated, not only in *Spain* but all other States they should pass through, with Kindness and all manner of Hospitality. *Leghorn* a City of *Tuscany*, was the first Port of *Italy* they went a-shore at; This was the First of *March*, 1585. As soon as the Grand Duke heard they were landed in his Dominions, He ordered the Governours of all the Places they were to pass through to receive them honourably; and himself received them at *Florence* in so splendid a manner, that these Young Lords could not express their grateful Acknowledgments: But nothing could come up to the Welcome they met with at *Rome*; whither they were no sooner come, but the Cardinals and Ambassadors by the Pope's Example, strove who should give the greatest Respect to them by their Caresses and all Demonstrations of Affection. The Pope would not receive them in private, tho' they expected no more from his Holiness, but gave 'em a publick Audience in full Consistory, and treated 'em like Ambassadors of Crown'd Heads.

This Ceremony was perform'd on *Saturday* the Twenty-third of *March*, before the whole Court of *Rome*, and a great Concourse of People. The Pope could not contain himself for the Joy this new Sight rais'd in his Breast; nor forbear weeping as they kiss'd his Feet. He said aloud, as he lifted them up, and embraced every

one of 'em twice with a great deal of Tenderneſs; *Nunc dimittis ſervum tuum, Domine, &c.*

When they had related the Buſineſs of their Embaſſy, and received an extraordinary civil Answer; the Letters were read publickly which they had for his Holineſs: And he ordered they ſhould be thank'd in a ſhort Compliment, expreſſing his Gratitude and Friendſhip to them; as is uſual upon ſuch Occaſions. After the Audience the Pope withdrew to his Apartment, and would do them the Honour to let them carry up the Corners of his Cope; which they perform'd with ſo good a Grace as charm'd all the Spectators.

They had Lodgings appointed them in the Jeſuits Houſe, and the Pope who bore their Charges, beſtow'd more upon them than he needed to have done. He put them into the *Italian* Dreſs, and took ſo particular care of 'em, as to enquire even upon his Death-Bed how they did, and amongſt the reſt *Don Julian* who was fall'n ſick.

The Election of *Sixtus* conſoled them for the Death of *Gregory*; and all that paſſ'd during the Vacancy, with the Splendour of the New Pope's taking Poſſeſſion, gave them a great Notion of the Sovereign Pontificate. Three Days after he was choſe they kiſs'd his Feet *incognito*, becauſe he had not yet been crown'd. They expreſs'd their Joy for his Exaltation, and entreated his Protection. He receiv'd them and talk'd with them with abundance of Kindneſs and Freedom. To give a Proof of the Care he took of them, he gave Orders himſelf to the Jeſuits to provide 'em plentifully with whatever they wanted; and ſhew'd them ſo much Civility, as made the Cardinals Jealous, and ſay to one another: *Sixtus treats the Ambaſſadors of Japan as if he was but Cardinal ſtill, but lives like a Pope amongſt them.*

He was crown'd the *Wednesday* following, because he had observ'd that Day to be always lucky to him. It was upon that Day that he was born, that he was received Monk; afterwards Bishop, then Cardinal, then Pope. The Ceremony of his Coronation was perform'd in *St. Peter's Place*, where he receiv'd the Crown from the Hands of the Cardinal *de Medicis*; in Presence of all the Ambassadors of crown'd Heads, amongst which he allow'd a considerable Place to those of *Japan*. Upon this Occasion the Ambassadors of the Greatest Princes of *Europe*, generally have the Honour of carrying the Canopy for his Holiness; *Sixtus* gratified these Three Young Lords with the Office, and all the rest yielded it freely. Then they kissed his Feet with a profound Submission, which yet discover'd something Great and Majestick in them. They presented him Water to Wash when he said Mass, an Honour which belongs only to the Ambassadors of Kings.

Of all the Ceremonies of this Solemnity, there's one very particular; They put some Tow at the End of a Staff which is carried before the Pope; and set fire to it, saying these Words: *Thus; Most Holy Father passes away the Vanity of the World.* *Sixtus* made the Gentlemen of *Japan* come close to his Chair that they might see this the better: When these Words were pronounc'd the second time, to which the New Popes use to say nothing, he in a harsh and Majestick Tone, made this Return; *The Glory of my Name shall never pass away; for I will establish it by doing Justice to all the World.* Then turning to the Strangers; *Children*, said he, *Remember this Ceremony, to give your Masters an Account of*

The next Sunday the Pope went to take Confession of the Church of St. John de Lateran, as the Bishop of Rome's See. The Canons of this Church upon that Day shut the Door fast, and the Pope knocks three times to have it opened; but they don't obey him till he commands them as Bishop of St. John de Lateran. He was received there by the Arch-Priest at the Head of the Chapter, and spoke to 'em either in Jest or Earnest thus: *You are happy to have a Pope for your Bishop; and I am well enough pleased to have, as your Bishop, all Christendom for my Diocese.*

And farther, the Pope would have the *Japanners* in the *Cavalcade*, which he made from St. Peter to St. John de Lateran, which is the most magnificent of any that is ever at Rome. His Train is composed of all the Cardinals, Prelates, and Officers of the Court of Rome, all the Ambassadors that are Resident and the Principal Nobility of the Place. He furnished the Strangers with Horses and all that was requisite to make a Shew, and they appear'd in the Middle of the Ambassadors. He made choice of *Don Mantio* the first of the Three to hold his Stirrup whilst he mounted. The Gentleman was so much surprized at the Nimbleness with which he threw himself into the Saddle, that he could not forbear crying out aloud: *Upon my Word I could not have done so much.* *Sixtus* observing his Surprize and hearing what he said, answer'd; *I am Old My Lord Ambassador and Heavy, but you must not wonder at it, for I bear a World upon my Shoulders.* Some said Cardinal *Farnese*, who was by him when he took Horse, told him smiling; *Your Holiness was not altogether so brisk and light when you were Cardinal;* And that *Sixtus* made Answer, *You mean I am heavier than I was then, and You're*

in the right; for the World then was under my Feet, and now I have it upon my Back.

He regaled 'em afterwards in a Princely Manner, and said to some of the Cardinals; *I have hitherto treated the Ambassadors of Japan but as Pope, but I will make 'em an Entertainment like a Sovereign Prince.* He made use of his House by St. Mary's Major for this Purpose, where he gave 'em a splendid Treat, and twice did them the Honour of drinking their Master's Health. He placed them so as they might see all the Ceremonies of this sort of Feasts; the Order of serving it up, and the Pope's giving it his Benediction before the Dishes are set before him; the Respect every body shews by rising up when he drinks, with abundance of other Circumstances. Upon such an Occasion an Ambassador of Venice with the freedom used in his Country, said merrily as he went from the Pope's Table where he had dined, *That this Honour was as much a Chimera, as the Trouble of it was a Reality.* The Pope spoke to the Japaners frequently as they were at Table, and asked them a great many Questions about the Nature and Customs of their Country. This was an Honour seldom design'd to Princes, The Pope's affecting generally to speak at Table with abundance of Gravity.

Besides all this Honour he had done the Ambassadors of Japan in particular, he gave proofs of his kind intention to their whole Nation, granting whatever they were pleas'd to demand. The last Pope had paid 'em a Pension of Four Thousand Ducats, for the support of their Seminaries: And when they desired Sixtus to do the same, he augmented it to Six Thousand, the better to maintain these new Foundations.

His Holiness hearing their Money was short, by reason of their distance from Home, and

the difficulty of Trading to their Country, made them a Present of Three Thousand Crowns. He ordered the Jesuits should be repaid all the expence they had been at, and bore their Charges himself all the Three Months they staid at *Rome*. It's true they did not make an Ill use of his Kindness, but the Money that he Order'd them every Week they Presented his Officers with. Several Cardinals and others of the Nobility from time to time treated 'em in a genteel and splendid manner. The Cardinals *Farnese*, *Este*, *Medici*, *Alexandria*, and St. *Sixtus* did each of 'em make them an Entertainment. And St. *Sixtus* regaled them a Second Time at his Country-House finer than before. He Presented them with several Pieces of Silk, and Suits of Cloaths in the *Italian* Fashion: As the other Cardinals had done, and *Alexandria* amongst the rest, gave them some very fine Goldsmiths Work.

The Pope sent by them to their Masters Two Swords with Golden Hilts set with Diamonds and other Stones, done by a *German* the best Workman of the Age; and Two Velvet Hats with Bands of very fine Pearl. These are Presents which the Sovereign Pontiffs send to none but the Greatest Princes of *Europe*, as a special Favour.

To make an end of the Relation of this Famous Embassy, we must remember the Honour his Holiness did them in making them Knights of the Order of the Golden Spur. This Ceremony was in *St. Peter's* Church upon *Ascension* Eve after Service, in Presence of the Cardinals and the whole Court of *Rome*; His Holiness putting a Gold-Chain about their Necks, to which hung a Medal with the Pope's Head on one Side, and the Reverse his Arms, and a Spur, the Badge of their Knighthood. And when it was over the Pope embrac'd 'em

em with so much fondness, as made the whole strange wonder, who were acquainted with the severity of his Behaviour.

Next Day his Holiness said in private the Mass for Travellers, upon their Account; to implore the Divine Protection in their Voyage home: and as his last Favour, gave them the Sacrament with his own Hands. Then they were conducted to the Capitol, and receiv'd there by the Senators and Protectors, accompanied by a great many other Noble *Romans*, who gave them a place in the Senate, and declar'd 'em Citizens and Patricians of *Rome*, and their Posterity after them, in whatever Country they should be born. He order'd the Letters he intended to send by them, to be dispatch'd, and Writ upon Parchment, with a great Seal of Gold Enamell'd, which was made on purpose.

At length being highly Honour'd and loaded with Presents, and Don *Julian* perfectly recover'd, they once again were to Kiss his Holiness's Feet, and take their last Leave. He gave them his blessing, together with a great many Reliques and Medals; and parted from them with the same Civility as they found at their first coming. They left *Rome* the Third of *June*, and were attended out of the City by a great Train of Horse and Coaches; and his Holiness gave Order they should have all manner of Respect shewn them, and their Charges born quite through the *Ecclesiastical State*. They went to see almost all *Italy*, and were so Magnificently receiv'd wherever they came, that they were e'en weary of Civilities. They Embarqu'd at *Genoua*, and took the opportunity of a Convoy of Ten Gallies that were bound for *Spain*, under the Command of *John Spinola*, Nephew to the Famous *John Andrew Toria*.

We'll conclude this Fifth Book with *Signora Camilla*, the Pope's Sister, and her Three Children coming to *Rome*. They were Two Sons and a Daughter; The Eldest whose Name was *Alexander Peretti*, was afterwards made Cardinal with the Title of *St. Jerom of Slaves*, but the Pope would have him call'd Cardinal *de Montalto* after his own Name. He was but Eighteen Years Old, and had had but a very mean Education in the Country: Yet he proved a Great Man after going to School with his Uncle, and shewed a-bundance of Judgment and Resolution in the most Important Affairs of the Church.

The Pope's Officers presently gave Orders to bring his Sister and her Children to *Rome*, upon condition she would behave her self with Humility and Moderation. When she was come almost to the City, the Cardinals *Medicis*, *Este*, and *Alexandria* went to meet her, and conducted her to a Palace that was hard by, where they dress'd her like a Princess. They thought to make their Court to the Pope by it, who was so fond of this Sister, that he had often in their company mention'd how impatient he was to see her.

These Cardinals brought her to the Pope in this Dress, who as soon as he heard she was in the Vatican gave Order she should come in. When he saw her in so Rich Cloths he made as if he did not know her, and ask'd who she was. Cardinal *Alexandria* who had given her his Hand, presented her, saying, *Here she is, most Holy Father, Sixtus* Answered with Disdain; *I have but one Sister, and she is a poor Inhabitant of the Grottos of Montalto, whom I wont see in the Dress of a Roman Princess, if she come to me in the same Clothes she wears at Home, I shall love her.* When he had so said, he retired to another

her Room and the Cardinals went away in Confusion.

Next Day *Camilla* went to the Pope again in her Ordinary Dress, with her Daughter's Three Children after her. As soon as *Sixtus* saw her he Embrac'd her kindly, and said; *Now you are my Sister indeed, I don't desire any body but my self should make a Princess of you.*

He appointed his Palace of *St. Mary Major* for her Lodgings, and assign'd her a very handsome Pension; but forbid her meddling in any Business, or asking Favours of him. This she observ'd so punctually that in Six Months time she procur'd only some Indulgences for a Society set up in the Church of *Refuge* at *Naples*, of which she was made Protector, whether she wou'd or no.

The

The SIXTH BOOK.

AS soon as *Sixtus* was Crown'd, He appointed Publick Prayers and granted a Jubilee, that by the Intercession of all Christians, he might be qualified to sustain the Weight he was under.

At first he apprehended it necessary, to carry on a Reformation of Manners with great rigour, and to remedy those Disorders that had crept in during the Pontificate of *Gregory XIII.* whose Sweet and Indulgent Temper instead of working upon the Wild and Extravagant so as to reduce them to their duty, had been made use of but to Countenance and Authorize the Liberties they took. *Sixtus* went upon a quite different Method to restore the Ancient Discipline and Order. He passed all at once from one Extremity of Sweetness to the other of Severity, yet his Justice kept pace with Prudence. And upon the whole it's certain there was never any Reign in the Church of such extreme Rigour as his.

He well knew of how great consequence it is for a Prince to dive into the Secrets of other Courts, and to be inform'd of the People's Sentiments; and the better to manage Himself and his Affairs with regard to these, he made choice of a fit number of Merchants, Lawyers, Priests, and Monks, the most Intelligent and proper for Spies.

Spies. And allow'd them Large Pensions which were duly paid at the Half Years End: besides considerable presents he made in Money to those who acquitted themselves best in their Affairs, and gave Him Notice of the Greatest Secrets, He dispos'd Fifty of his Spies about the *Ecclesiastical State* that he might be made acquainted with the Behaviour of the Judges and Governours, what the People thought of them, and what was said of Himself in those Places. He dispatch'd Two of 'em to every place of Note who knew nothing of one another, and had each of 'em a particular *Cypher* and Direction that he might have their Account with greater Security.

The same number he sent about all *Italy* and other Parts, where he had Nuncios, Internuncios and other Ministers Residing, with directions to make exact remarks upon every step they took, and from time to time, to inform him. There were Fifty of them in *Rome*, employed so many several ways. One had orders to Inspect the behaviour of Two or Three Cardinals: Another was to overlook some of the Princes and Nobility of *Rome*: Another to give Account of all the Foreigners that came thither: A Fourth was to have a diligent Eye upon the Bishops and Officers of the Court. Some were appointed to tell Him what the People said, what the News of the Publick Places was, and what Tradesmen talk'd in their Shops. Nay his Curiosity went so far as to make these Spies give him an Account how the Pages behaved themselves abroad, the Lacqueys and Livery Men, the Soldiers of His Guard, and the Militia of the Church. He knew by experience the Monks spoke freely of what they heard, that they are not the last that are let into the intrigues of the World and the Court; and there was not a Convent where he had not One or Two of the Order

Order, to give Him an exact relation of all that was said and done in the place. By this secret intelligence, he was dayly inform'd of all that pass'd in the City, in the *Ecclesiastical State*, and in all *Christendom* besides. And one may confidently Affirm there was no Prince in *Europe* so well versed as *Sixtus*, in the most secret Affairs of other Courts, and yet who knew how to keep his own Business to himself, that none of 'em all should pry into it.

To this purpose he ordered all his Nuncios to spare no cost, to discover the most secret Councils of those Princes where they Resided, and to bestow more or less according to the importance of the matter. Accordingly the Nuncio of *Spain* threw about amongst his Spies vast Sums, because *Sixtus* had great designs upon several of the Dependencies of that Crown: Particularly he gave it them in charge to find out Private Matters, and not to trouble themselves with the Common Talk, and what went about in every Bodies Mouth; and that they should not be sparing of the Treasures of the Church when such occasions offered. His Instructions in this point were so earnest, that the Nuncios who were diligent to humour him, were early and late looking out for proper Persons to betray their Masters Secrets, and were sometimes themselves forced to act the part of Spies. He removed several Governours and Judges as well at *Rome*, as in the *Ecclesiastical State*, and put into their Places those only who were naturally bent, rather to severity than Compassion. There he pick'd out according to his own Taste, such as he thought would do Justice without any respect to Persons. When he pass'd thro' the Town, he look'd in every Bodies face that he met, and if he saw any one of an austere Countenance he had him brought

to him, enquir'd into his Estate and Condition; and if he found him a Man fit to do service to the Church in the way he liked, he gave him some Employment in the Courts of Judicature: And at parting he would be sure to enjoin this New Officer strictly to perform his Duty, telling him the only way of pleasing him was to make use of the two-edged Sword, to which *Jesus Christ* is compared by St. *John*: that himself had accepted the Sovereign Pontificate, but in the literal sense of those words of the Gospel; *I come not to send Peace but a Sword.*

He appointed all the Governors of the Cities, Castles and Signiories in the State, carefully to review the Criminal proceedings of the Ten Years last past, tho' the sentences had been already put in execution, and to give him an exact Account, that he might inflict a severer punishment upon such as had come off too easily. Some of 'em he fined because if he had taken away their Life, they had been for the future out of the reach of his Justice. Others he put into Prison again, that had been out Four or Five Years, for having been too mercifully handled either thro' their Friends Sollicitations, or the Interest of their Patrons, or the prevailing Argument of a Bribe.

He set up Commissaries to examine into the behaviour of all Judges of Criminal Matters, for Ten Years back; and commanded all such as were conscious of acting contrary to their Duty upon pain of excommunication to come in and make confession. He promised also rewards to those who should convict any One of Extortion, or making Justice give way to Interest and Intreaty of Friends. These Commissaries went to work so rigorously that several of those that were under prosecution hid themselves, or got out of
the

the Ecclesiastical State. A Lawyer of *Orvieto*, who knew an Act of Injustice which the Government of that Place had been gully of, and would not discover it, because he was his intimate Friend, and had been out of Office Five Years; was not only excommunicated, but carried to Prison at *Rome*, bound Hand and Foot, from whence he could not get free but at a great deal of Charge and Trouble.

All the Officers of *Justice*; and particularly those that were under any Guilt were in a strange Consternation. There were some of 'em daily dragg'd to Gaol who knew not for what they were clap'd up; only remembered they had been Judges: But they were not long kept there in Ignorance, they were forced to make Restitution to such as they had injured before they could have their Liberty. This Severity kept the present Officers most wonderfully exact, they went but seldom out of Doors, and convers'd freely with No body, for fear too great Familiarity should dispose 'em to Acts of Favour, for which they must infallibly give Account.

Sixtus farther forbid all the Barons of *Rome* and other People of Quality under pain of his Displeasure to sollicite the Judges in private for the sake of any body, not so much as for their own Domesticks: They might only go with their Friends and recommend their Business in general to their Care, and desire Justice might be done 'em; and upon pain of Death No body was to threaten any Evidence, or any of the Serjeants and Officers of the Court. He set the same Punishment upon the Judges that should listen to any Recommendation: But finding this too hard and indeed unjust, he was satisfied with making it Loss of Office only, and declaring them incapable of any for the future. Some time after there

there were Four or Five that this was executed upon, merely for having been solicited by some Gentlemen, who were also punish'd in their Persons and Estates. One Gentleman of the House of *Visconti*, as Considerable as any in *Italy*, had a Servant in Prison, and was catch'd speaking to one of the Judges: And tho' the Pope's Spies saw no more, his Holiness had no sooner Notice of it, but he sent for the Governour of *Rome* and commanded him to bring his Prisoner upon his Trial the very next Day according to the usual Forms. This poor Wretch was condemn'd to the Gallies for Five Years, tho' the same Crime under *Gregory XIII.* was punish'd but with a few Months Imprisonment; and the Pope turn'd the Officer out of his Place that the Lord had been seen to speak with; His Lordship too was thought to come well off with only a Reprimand, his Holiness being content to tell him; *Tho' he had incurred his severe Displeasure this once he should be forgiven.*

He obliged the *Syndicks* and Chief Men of the Towns, Castles, and Signiories of his Dominions, as well those that were actually in Office as those that had exercised any for Ten Years last past, to send him a List of all the Vagabonds, Idle and Debauch'd Persons that they knew, under pain of Imprisonment and the Strapado, if they should conceal any. A certain Officer of *Albano*, who had suffered an incorrigible Rascal that was his Nephew, to slip out of his Memory upon this Occasion, underwent the Strapado in a publick Manner; tho' the *Spanish* Ambassador moved for his Pardon.

These Wretches were so terribly frighted with so exact Enquiries, that most of 'em run away upon it. Some set themselves to work, and some became Convert-Brothers in the Monasteries. Such was the general Consternation, that those
who

who had done amiss out of Indiscretion or Surprize, were in perpetual Apprehension of Sergeants at their Heels. One might see 'em flaying their Prayers in the Streets, that they might not be of the Number of those that were forced out of the Country.

Sixtus charged the *Syndicks* expressly to send their Accompt to himself; and they obeyed his Order most exactly for fear of incurring the Displeasure of a Man from whom they had no Favour to hope for; and who placed his greatest Glory in appearing terrible and severe. This is evident from what he could not forbear saying one Day upon reading the Epistle of a Book that was dedicated to him, in which his sweet Obliging Behaviour was much cried up; *These Commendations had been proper enough when I was Cardinal, but I'll have no more to do with them now I am Pope.* And so it was, thro' his whole Reign he was observed to take much greater Pleasure in hearing the Proceedings of severe Justice, than such as inclined to Mercy and Kindness, having the Easiness of his Predecessor ever before his Eyes.

He was at the Top of his Delight when he received Lists frequently from the *Syndicks* of abundance of Idle Rogues and Vagabonds, and would bless himself as he read; *What fine Gallies I shall build, now I'm so happy to be sure of Slaves enough beforehand!* And it was said, those he did make were for the sake of disposing of his Vagabonds.

He wrote to the Legates and Governours of the *Ecclesiastical State*, with express Orders not to spin out any Business, but bring it to a speedy Issue; and particularly Criminal Matters, telling them he was better pleas'd to have the Gallies and Gibbets full, than the Gaols and Dungeons: And
laid.

laid his Commands upon the inferior Judges, under pain of his high Displeasure, to keep no Person that was prosecuted above Two Months in Prison, but to condemn or set them free in that time; and if there should come before them any Cause that must take up longer time, he would be inform'd of it himself, and judge of the Reason of such Delay.

That no Suits should be immortal, he was for appointing a certain Number of Commissioners, chose out of the best and ablest Men, to cut short the tedious Forms, and bring them to a speedy Determination: But his great Diligence in prosecuting Criminal Causes, made him lay a-side this new Project. He prohibited Judicial Astrology, which was at that time mightily in Vogue at Rome. Some People of good Families and under Protection of Cardinals, were sentenced to the Gallies for employing themselves in this Imaginary Science in Contempt of the Prohibition.

He published an Edict forbidding any body, under pain of his Displeasure, to cry out, *Long Live Pope Sixtus*, as he pass'd thro' the Streets; Tho' this was a Practice of long standing, and the People were much pleas'd with such Acclamations. He had several Reasons for putting down this Noisy Salutation, the chief was, that he loved to go *incognito* to see what pass'd in the Courts of Judicature, in Convents, and Publick Places. So strictly did he enjoin this Obedience to this Edict, that two poor Creatures, who heard nothing of it, cried out as he pass'd by, *Long Live Pope Sixtus*, for which Misdemeanour they were thrown into Prison, and kept there for some Days as a Terror to others.

For this Reason when he was seen in the Street, the People, instead of going out of their Houses
and

and making a Lane for him to pass through, he tired, not being able to bear the Looks of him; and he found No body as he went along, but old decrepid Folks who could not run away like the rest, but fell down upon their Knees and saluted him in a profound Silence. The Terror his Presence struck into the Common People was such, that Nurfes and Mothers had no better way to keep their Children quiet than to say; *Hold your Tongue, There's Pope Sixtus going by.* His Name was so terrible, that all his Life and long after his Death, Children never heard it pronounced but they quaked with Fear.

He had, whilst he was in the *Apostles* Convent, observed a great Abuse in the Business of Confessions, and after he was Cardinal too; that the Sin of Adultery was ordinarily confounded with that of simple Fornication. To remedy this when he came to be Pope, he Ordered Adulterers should be condemn'd to die, he forbid the Judges to give any of them Quarter, had them diligently looked for, and promised Rewards to any that should bring an Action against them. The First that suffered upon this Score, was a Relation of the Marquis *d' Altems*, in whose Behalf the Cardinal of that Name employ'd all his Interest with the Pope, but his Holiness was inflexible; and the Gentleman, who had otherwise Merit enough, was publickly beheaded to the great Sorrow and Lamentation of all the People. He also had several Courtezans whipp'd the same Day, who were convicted of Intrigues with Married Men; all which struck so general a Terror into the Cities, that there was no more Noise heard in them than in Convents, where Silence is the most severely enjoin'd.

The Nobility of *Rome*, and indeed of the whole *Ecclesiastical State* were grown so insolent under

Under the Pontificate of *Gregory*, as to give themselves up to all manner of scandalous Actions.

Some Gentlemen got Credit with the Merchants whom they never intended to pay, and when they came a dunning, sent 'em away with Threatnings, if they came a second time they were worse handled: And they were afraid to commence a Suit for fear of losing their Lives and their Goods.

Sixtus was made acquainted with this sort of Tyranny when he was Cardinal, and now resolved upon redressing it. He sent for a Gentleman that owed a great deal, and a Debt too of long standing, to one that he himself had dealt with. It was this Spark's usual Practice when he was ask'd for Money, to say, *Gentlemen took their own time to pay their Debts.* When he came before the Pope, he was forced to satisfie the Tradesman's Demands who was also present, and farther he was imprison'd, and Orders given out that he should be brought upon his Trial, for having so long spent another Man's Money.

At the same Time he commanded the Shopkeepers to bring him in the Bills of those they had delivered Goods to, all which he discharg'd and so became their Creditor. This alarm'd 'em at such a rate, that most of 'em carried Money by Night to those they were indebted to, and entreated them by all Means to cross their Books, and make as if they had been paid long since, for fear the Pope should take the Debt upon himself. Nor was this Fear without a foundation, for *Sixtus* having Intelligence from one of his Spies that a Tradesman had conceal'd Gentleman's Bills, ordered his Books to be produced, and when the Man would have excused

cused himself by alledging he forgot to credit out some Things; His Holiness declared he had incurred his Displeasure, and deliver'd him into the Hands of Justice to be handled for his Contempt.

Once a Fortnight he would send to the Governour of *Rome*, to tell him he was amaz'd to see so few made Examples in the City; and that Things would go quite otherwise if himself were in that Post. This Reproof put the poor Governour into such a taking, that he labour'd Night and Day to find out and punish such as had done amiss; and some he sentenced to severe Penalty for Crimes in themselves but small.

It was a Custom for the Popes, upon their Coronation-Day, to set open the Prisons and let all go free, but *Sixtus* did not like the Practice; and made this Answer to the Cardinals, who entreated him to keep it up; *That there were but too many Rogues in the Town already, and it was not fitting to let those go they had in Custody to make the Number greater: That he had not taken upon him the Government of the Church, but with a Design to chastise Wickedness, and to hinder Villains from debauching honest People into their Company and Practices.*

Just at his Entering upon his Pontificate whilst the Rejoicings at *Rome* for his Exaltation lasted, he had four poor Wretches seized early in the Morning, for having been catch'd Two Days before with forbidden Weapons; and the Ambassadors of *Japan* with several other People of Quality begg'd their Pardon in vain. A little after, he beheaded a Gentleman of the Dutchy of *Spoleto*, for nothing else but laying his Hand upon his Sword and threatenng another that he had a Quarrel with: Tho' Eight Cardinals did all

they could to beg this Poor Creature's Life the Pope commanded him to be Executed Immediately that he might be no farther troubled with their Importunity.

It's true he had forbid any one upon pain of Death to draw his Sword or carry prohibited Weapons in the City, and had declared he would spare None that offended in this kind. This kept Passionate and Quarrellsome People so well within Bounds that they dared not so much as Box one another, but were content to say, *Sixtus his Reign will not hold for ever*. Most Gentlemen walked the streets without Swords, and those that could not persuade themselves to leave 'em off took care to avoid all occasions of using them.

At this time was a Pasquinade, in which Pasquin was seen on Horse Back making all the speed he could for his life, and answering *Marforio* who ask'd Whither so fast; *I'm going from Rome in great haste, for I see plainly the Pope is not in Humour to Pardon Jesus Christ himself*.

Sixtus in his First Consistory gave out a Precept which obliged all Arch-Bishops and Bishops without any exception to repair to their Dioceses, forbidding them to stir from thence in Six Months: This was intended to get rid of some Cardinals that he could not bear near him.

The Ecclesiastical State was at that time so pestered with *Banditti*, who grew stronger and more insolent thro' impunity, that No Body was secure of his Goods or his Life. And this not only in the Country and little Towns, but in the most Considerable, *Rome* its self not excepted. 'Tis impossible to reckon up all the Robberies and Murthers committed for a long while together, so that Strangers dared no more Travel *Italy* where such Havock was made.

Gregory XIII, endeavour'd to reduce 'em sending His Troops to Disperse these insolent Rascals, but Providence reserved the Glory of doing it for the Prudence and Resolution of *Sixtus*, who accomplish'd it in a few Months, and clear'd the *Ecclesiastical State* of them so perfectly, that the Country and the Town too were made secure; and one might walk at any Hour of the Day or Night without meeting with any danger.

He began with making agreement with the Neighbouring Princes that they should find no shelter in their Dominions. He set a price upon their Heads, and brought those he could lay his Hands on to speedy Justice: Inflicting severe Penalties upon their Friends and their Relations who had conceal'd them or favour'd their Escape; and thus he procur'd the quiet of all his Subjects. And Every Man fearing he should be taken for a disturber of the Publick Peace, if he prosecuted any private Animosities, Reconciliations were promoted on all Sides, and they strove who should be most forward in making things up.

Sixtus perceiving the Officer whose Business it was to scour the Country, walking the streets at Rome when he should have been after the Banditti, sent for him: The Poor Man run for't as soon as he saw the Pope, but being catch'd and brought before him on his knees was sufficiently terrified to be ask'd by him Twice, *Who are You?* And this in such a Tone and with such looks as were ready to strike him underground. The Thief-catcher perceiving *Sixtus* knew him, made answer, *I am the Country Serjeant*; to which *Sixtus* with the same Air replied, *And Wretch have you the Impudence to Lye in the Pope's presence? How can you be the Country Officer and talk thus*

about the Town? Away he sent him to Prison and 'twas expected he should Die for it, but after Supper he sent for him again and told him, *He gave him his Life upon condition he brought the Heads of Six Banditti in a weeks time.* The Serjeant coming off so much better than he thought for, in abundance of Joy threw himself at the Pope's feet and kissed them. And going directly from home join'd the rest of his Gang, and perform'd so well, that before his time was out he brought Sixtus Four Banditti a live, and Three of their Comrade's Heads. At which His Holiness was so well pleas'd as to reward him with a Chain of Gold to the value of Fifty Pistols.

He would have the Heads of these Rogues set upon the City Gates, and on both sides the Bridge of St. *Angelo* whither he often went on purpose to see them. The great quantity of those he had placed there was a nuisance to those who pass'd that way; And the Protectors of the City were forced to desire some Cardinals to Petition His Holiness, they might be removed to some place further off. But they got no other answer than this; *Methinks, Gentlemen, You are very Squeamish that you can't bear the scent of these Heads which now can do no more mischief; for my part those that are in condition to molest the Publick, seem to have a much worse smell.*

The Rest of the Sovereign Princes of *Italy*, who could not hinder the Vagabonds and *Banditti* from flocking into their Countries whom *Sixtus* had by his severity got rid of, made heavy Complaints that the *Ecclesiastical State* should enjoy so great Tranquillity while their Subjects suffer'd for't. Their Ambassadors made Remonstrances to the Pope upon the occasion, but all the remedy they met with was this Answer; *Let your Masters leave their Dominions to me, I'll clear 'em as effectually*

as I have done my own. If they would take the course I do, all Italy might be safe, Sovereign Princes wondrous when they have a mind:

In September, there fell out a thing extraordinary enough; A Young Florentine under Seventeen was condemn'd and executed for resisting the Serjeants who came to Seize a Horse in his Masters Stable, who lived on t'other side the Tyl. This Poor Lad had committed the irregularity because the Horse that was Seiz'd, did indeed belong to his Master, and People thought the Pope misinform'd of the Matter of Fact. Tho' others were of opinion he did this to make an Example of him, and deterr the People of Rome from the Liberties they had so long taken. However it was, the Young Man's Misfortune to Die upon so Trivial a Business, was lamented by every Body. The Grand Duke's Ambassador and the Cardinal *de Medicis*, did all they could with the Pope to spare his Life. And the Governour of Rome went as far as possible to obtain it, remonstrating to *Sixtus*, *The Laws would not allow an offender so Young should be condemn'd to Die:* But all was too little to take off the Edge of his Justice.

This Poor Creature appear'd all in a Bloody Sweat as he was leading to Execution. Those that had curiosity enough to enquire into the reasons of the Phænomenon, took it to be only Tears which were of that Colour from the Inflammation caused by Grief and Despair upon the Lachrymal Glands, upon a thorough persuasion no Blood could perspire at those Vessels unless by a Miracle.

The Surprize which this instance of Severity occasion'd was increas'd by another, that moved Peoples compassion no less. A certain Mechanick had put his Nephew in Prison for being disrespectful.

respectful to his Mother; intending to keep him here some Hours, his crime deserving no greater punishment. The Pope being inform'd how soon the Youngster was to be let out, forbid the Goaler to set him Free. His Uncle went to discharge him, and was much Surprized to find the Pope's Order to the contrary. Upon this he went to His Holiness who demanded the reason of confining his Nephew. And the Pope having heard he said; *You have sentenced your Nephew to Prison, and to lose his Liberty for having used his Mother Ill: But I who am his Prince and must not endure Injustice, will have the Matter Examined into.* In short nothing less would serve him, than Condemning him to be Hanged, tho' he had a design to change his punishment to that of the Gallies to which he afterwards sent him.

This severity of punishment produced such an alteration in the Behaviour of the People of *Rome*, that those who had seen them Swimming down the Stream of Vice and all Licentiousness during the Pontificate of *Gregory*, did not think it possible to reduce them to the bounds they now observ'd. There was no Family but kept as exact order as the Religious Societies themselves, whose Priors *Sixtus* took care to send for every Month, to give them charge that they see Discipline well maintain'd.

The Misfortune of Count *John Baptista Pepoli* of as Great and Rich a Family as any in *Bologna*, put that City into a miserable State. This Gentleman was accused and justly too, of holding some Correspondence with the Banditti; there were Orders sent from *Rome* to Seize him and bring him upon his Trial. The Judges of *Bologna* not finding proof sufficient to Condemn a Man of his Quality were about to discharge him, thinking there was Nobody knew the truth

. of

of the Matter; when there came a Messenger from the Pope to let them know it was His Holiness's pleasure they should pass Sentence upon him for Example's sake. The Judges being afraid of incurring the Pope's Displeasure Condemn'd the Count; but Repriev'd his Execution to allow him time of asking His Holiness's Pardon, tho' they were fully assured it would never be granted. And indeed his Relations were not for his attempting it. Letters were sent however in his behalf and nothing omitted that would touch the Heart of any other Man but *Sixtus*; who continued inexorable and return'd an order to have him Executed. And this Unhappy Nobleman who had made a considerable figure at *Bologna* was Beheaded there upon a Scaffold.

It's true enough the Countenance several of the Gentry afforded the *Banditti* in the *Bolognese* required to have some Body of Note made an Example, to keep the Nobility from having any thing to do with those Rascals, and this was the thing put His Holiness upon a course so severe.

He went in the next place upon the Trial of those that had killed his Nephew, and charged the Cardinal of St. *Sixtus* with it, because the Murther had been acted in his Uncle's Reign. The Cardinal told him, *He might have had the thing prosecuted at the time with much greater severity, but that he shewed such an unwillingness to demand it. It's true, Answer'd he, I ought not to think upon my Family so as to disobey the Law of God which enjoins forgiveness; but as I am a Sovereign Prince I am obliged now to punish the Murther. If your Uncle had done Justice in the Case he had saved me the pain and trouble of Prosecuting the Actors of it, and I should not a Second time be pin upon lamenting the Death of a Nephew I loved so dearly.*

Nor was *Sixtus* wholly taken up with Private Men, in Reforming their Manners and the Administration of Justice: He was deeply concern'd from the Second Month of his Popedom with *Henry III.* of *France*, *Philip II.* of *Spain*, and *Henry King* of *Navarr.* As it's proper to give Account of all these, we begin with the King of *Spain*, with whom he was engag'd upon a slight pretence.

The Ambassador of this Crown every Nine and Twentieth of *June*, upon which the Feast of *St. Peter* is kept, presents the Pope with a Pad and a Bag of Seven Thousand Crowns, as a Vassal of the Church, for his Kingdom of *Naples*. This Quit-rent had been a long time paid, and was Confirm'd by the Emperor *Charles V.* when he took Possession of the Kingdom; and oblig'd his Successors to pay this yearly Tribute to the Holy See.

The *Spanish* Ambassador, according to Custom, provided himself to pay this Duty to *Sixtus* in a splendid Manner. The Ceremony was perform'd at *St. Peter's* Church Door, where the Pope placed himself upon a Scaffold, finely set out, being attended by most of the Cardinals, and the Ambassadors of Foreign Princes.

The *Spanish* Minister presented his Nag, and made a Compliment by Order of his Master, to acknowledge to his Holiness, it was upon Account of his holding the Kingdom of *Naples* of the Holy See.

Sixtus receiv'd the Ambassador with an Air of Gravity, so as to persuade him neither the Present nor the Homage were very acceptable; and at length spoke out his meaning, telling him as he rose from his Throne, with a Tone of biting Railery; *To Days Compliment is not much amiss, and indeed there's need enough of Rhetorick to persuade*

suade one to change the Government of a Kingdom for a Horse; but, said he, I do not intend this shall last long. These last Words touch'd the Ambassador to the Quick, and made him smother the Design his Holiness most certainly had of Recovering the Kingdom of *Naples* to the Demerit of the Church. He had perpetually this Design in his Head as long as he was Pope, and made all the Steps requisite to bring it about; but the Spaniards on their part minded their Hits so well, as to break his Measures, as we shall see hereafter. The Ambassador gave an Account immediately at the Court of *Spain* of the Pope's Discourse upon receiving Homage for the Kingdom of *Naples*. The King of *Spain* let no Signs of his Resentment appear, but Dispatch'd away Orders to Don *Pedro de Girona*, Duke of *Ossona*, Viceroy of *Naples*, to secure the Frontiers of his Territories, and to inform himself exactly of the Movements of the Pope.

At the time when the Duke of *Ossona* receiv'd this the People of *Naples* had taken Arms, for want of Bread as they pretended. The Disturbance came to that height that the Mob in a rage pulled one *John Vincentio Staraco* to pieces, they tore out his Heart and his Bowels and hung up his Body in pieces upon the Walls at several places. The Man was Rich and well enough esteem'd in the City; but the too great Familiarity in which the Viceroy liv'd with him had made him so much hated by the People, that the Viceroy himself, tho' generally Belov'd by the Inhabitants, thought himself no longer safe when he heard of this sad Disaster. The Orders he had just then receiv'd, to observe the steps of *Sixtus*, made him fear this Sedition was but the Prelude and Introduction to those Designs his Holiness had upon that Kingdom.

Two things made the Viceroy very uneasy upon the charge that was given him to take care of the Frontiers: One was the great Number of *Banditti* that continually were getting out of the Pope's Dominions into that of *Naples*: He imagin'd there was some Mystery in this. T'other was a Prohibition given out by his Holiness, to prevent sending any Wheat to the relief of the *Neapolitans*, who were in great want of it. The Affairs they were in put the Duke *d'Ossona* upon entreating him to recall that Order; but all in vain: the Pope made a Jest of it, and whenever the Revolt of *Naples* was mention'd, he wou'd say; *Those Seditious People did not deserve he should take any care of them.*

His Dispute with the King of *France* made a much greater Noise. He gave notice one Morning as soon as it was light to *St. Gohard*, the *French* Ambassador, who had behaved himself ever since the Time of *Gregory* so as to gain the Esteem of all, that he in Two Days Time leave not only the Town but the *Ecclesiastical State*.

The Reason of *Sixtus* using him thus, was, that having recall'd My Lord *Jerom Ragazoni*, Bishop of *Bergamo*, who was Nuncio in *France*, he appointed *Fabio Mirto*, a *Neapolitan*, Archbishop of *Nazareth* to Succeed in his Post. This was a Man of great Learning, and one that had gain'd good Experience from the many Employments he had been in. *Sixtus* made choice of him to send to *France*, because he had been twice Nuncio there before: and the Court of *Rome* had been so well satisfied with his Conduct. As matters then stood he could not confide in any but a Minister of his great Capacity.

The King of *France* hearing of his Setting out from *Rome*, and understanding he was not well affected to his Interest, dispatch'd a Courier to him, with Orders to stay in the place where the Courier found him, till he heard farther from the Pope, to whom the King had already Wrote, to desire the Bishop of *Bergamo* might be continued.

The Archbishop of *Nazareth* was got to *Lions* where they made a Magnificent Reception for him, when he receiv'd the King's Orders to go no farther. He was naturally Impatient, and broke out into these Words upon the occasion: *That the Pope was not of a Temper to put up such an Affront, in which his Holiness was much more concern'd than He. That he would return home the next Morning according to his Instructions, which enjoin'd him to come for Rome upon the least Difficulty should be put upon him: And the Pope wou'd no sooner be inform'd of this, but he would recall the Bishop of Bergamo, and never send any more Nuncios to France.*

Sixtus having notice of this business by a Courier the Archbishop sent to him, was in a great Anger with the King of *France*. He protested he would remember the Affront; and without ever Assembling the Consistory, sent an Order to *Gohard*, his Ambassador, to retire, as we have said.

The King on his part hearing what pass'd at *Rome*, was in a great Rage, and discover'd it to his whole Court. He sent for all the Foreign Ambassadors, and in their presence protested against the Pope's proceedings as a thing without Precedent. And sent to *Rome* to let them know, That even upon a Declaration of War, no Court in the World had ever treated his Minister so Basely: That before he forbid the

New

New Nuncio to come farther, he had wrote to the Pope in a very Civil Way to desire he would send him a Person that he had not Reason to suspect. To this *Sixtus* answered; *That since he received the King's Letter he had found by his Ambassador, that his Master consented to the Archbishop of Nazareth's being Nuncio; And that before he sent him away, he had told him in the Cardinal d' Elte's Presence, that since he went to France by the Ambassador's Consent, he understood there should be no stop put to his going, and if he were hindered, he would drive the Ambassador from Rome and the Ecclesiastical State upon the first Notice.*

To this the King replied, *His Ambassador had not made him acquainted with it*: So that upon the Matter they both seem'd to have Ground to complain, and yet 'twas hard to determine which of 'em was in the wrong.

At first the Fault was laid upon the *French Ambassador*, but he excused himself very well, saying; *He thought best for Peace sake to save his Master the Uneasiness he would be in upon the Subject; and to prevent his falling out with the Pope, who had spoke of the Business with such Sharpness and Vehemence, that he was afraid if he let it be known in France, what the Passion of Sixtus had put him upon saying, they should absolutely break with Rome.*

The Pope, in his Answer to the King, gave him an Account of all he had said to his Ambassador upon the Thing; told him all the Reasons he had for recalling the Bishop of *Bergamo*, and sending the Archbishop of *Nazareth* in his Room: And desired him to send for his Ambassador away, declaring he would no more treat with him. He sent this Letter for *Horatio Rucconi* to deliver the King; he was a Gentleman well

well enough qualified for such an Affair, being of an open and sincere Temper, and one that had the Honour to live in a good Familiarity with his Majesty. The King received it very civilly, made Answer to every particular, and charged the same *Ruccellai* to deliver it to the Pope with his own Hand.

The Thing work'd upon the King sufficiently, but nothing in Comparison of the Anger *Sixtus* was in, who threatned this Prince, and protested he would revenge the Affront had been put upon him. The Princes and Ministry of the *French* Court labour'd with the King, persuading him to give way a little and bring the Pope into Humour; and the Cardinal *d'Este* with some more of his Brethren, standing in the Breach made up the Business: so that the Archbishop of *Nazareth* was received Nuncio by the King, and the Ambassador return'd to the Pope in the usual Character.

This was but a small Squabble in Comparison with the Extremity of *Sixtus* his Proceedings against *Henry* King of *Navarre*, at whom he let flie the Thunder of Excommunication. There was a League struck up in *France* under the Pontificate of *Gregory* against this Prince, because he profess'd the Protestant Religion, which not only Princes and People of Quality were engaged in, but many Citizens also and Curates of *Paris*. This Confederacy was presented to *Gregory* for his Approbation; and though the *Spaniards* did all that lay in them to persuade him, he would never be brought to do any thing in it.

Sixtus, who sought all Opportunities of maintaining Religion in its Purity, was no sooner upon the Throne of the Church, but he pass'd an Authentick Confirmation of this League, and thundered out in a full Consistory, holding a
black

black Taper in his Hand, his dreadful Bulls of Excommunication, against *Henry* and the Prince of *Conde*; declaring them Hereticks, Heads, Favourers, and Protectors of Heresy: And as such, that they had incurr'd Ecclesiastical Censures, according to the Laws and Canons. And farther declared them and their Posterity to have forfeited their Goods, Estates, and Lordships; and to be incapable of succeeding to any Sovereignty, and particularly to the Crown of *France*: Absolv'd their Subjects from their Oaths of Fidelity, and freed them from paying them any Allegiance. •

The King of *Navarre* stood in need of all the Virtue and Courage he had about him to sustain this Shock; which waked him out of that State of Slumber and Inactivity he had been long wrapped up in, from the Inclination he had to enjoy his Ease and Pleasure. He summon'd up his Strength and Valour, and gave Proofs he was sensible of more than People imagined. He confess'd afterwards to those he was intimate with, he was beholden to them that had rous'd him from his Lethargy: Without that Persecution he had wasted himself in Ease and Idleness in some Corner of *Gascogne*, without minding his Affairs; and should have been utterly incapable of setting the Crown of *France* upon his Head, upon the Death of *Henry III.* without Heirs Male.

This Prince began with two Things that made a great Noise, to defend himself against the Insults of the Court of *Rome*. The First was, the Orders he gave *du Plessis Mornay*, a Gentleman of good Learning, and One that nothing could be objected but embracing the New Opinions, to answer the Manifesto of the League by an Apology; and to prepare a Declaration to justify himself

himself from the Accusations and Calumny thrown upon him as a Huguenot. In this Declaration he entreated the King in a very submissive manner as his Sovereign Lord, to permit him, without being wanting to the Respect due to his Majesty, to give the Lye to those who had set him out in Colours so black. He offered, to prevent the shedding the Blood of the Nobles, and bringing the People into the Desolation of Civil War, which Blasphemy, Fire and Robbery always go along with; to decide this Quarrel with the Duke de Guise Head of the League, in single Combat, or to meet him with Ten, or any other Number he should choose. And farther entreated his Majesty to allow him a Field of Battel, if the Duke, to whom he still refer'd it whether in the Kingdom or out of it, should rather accept the Challenge in his Majesty's Dominions than in a foreign Country.

This Declaration had a considerable Effect upon Men of Understanding and Prudence, who maintain'd, That Force and Violence could not without manifest Injustice be employ'd against a Prince who submitted so to Reason. And most of the French Nobility who are very exact in Points of Honour, approved the King of Navarre's generous Behaviour, and said aloud; *The Duke de Guise ought with Joy to accept the Advantage of drawing his Sword against him.*

It was not for want of Bravery that the Duke declined the Challenge; besides, his looking upon it as a sort of Crime the venturing to fight a Prince of the Blood, who was generally esteem'd throughout the Kingdom; he was not for making a private Quarrel of the publick Good and the Cause of Religion. And if he had consented to that way of deciding the Business, he could not

not be sure his Confederates, who made a sort of Commonwealth, would have stood by it.

He satisfied himself with answering with Reverendness and Honour both; that he had a great value for the King of Navarre's Person, and respected him as Prince of the Blood: but had no private Quarrel with him: That he interested himself only in the sorrowful Estate which Religion was reduced to, because the Peace of the Kingdom depended upon its being United.

The Second Step the King of Navarre made in this Matter, in which he shew'd his Vigour, was this; As soon as he had an Account that he was excommunicated by *Sixtus*, he sent to complain of it to the King of France: He remonstrated to his Majesty that what the Pope had done concern'd his Majesty more than himself: That if the Pope took upon him to determine the Succession to Crowns, and to declare a Prince of the Blood incapable of inheriting, he might at length extend this usurp'd Authority over his Dominions and dethrone him too, as Pope *Zachary* had done by King *Childeric III.*

These Reasons made so powerful Impression upon the Most Christian King, that he prohibited the Publication of these Bulls of Excommunication in France: Tho' the Nuncio and the Chiefs of the League pressed him to it, so far as to threaten him in the Pope's Name.

The King of Navarre not being content with this Revenge, found Friends amongst the great Number of those he had at Rome, so zealous as to venture to set up in all the Streets, and upon all the Cardinals Palaces, that of the Vatican not excepted, his own and the Prince of Conde's Proclamation, and their Appeal from the Sentence of *Sixtus* to the Court of Peers of France: In which he again gave the Lye to all that accus'd them

them of being Hereticks, and they submitted to render an Account of their Faith in an Assembly of Bishops; and protested they would revenge the Affront put upon the King, the Princes of his Blood, and the Court of Peers.

This Appeal, as an abusive thing, could not but put his Holiness's Choler into a strange Ferment; and accordingly he summon'd his Consistory, to consider what Method he should take to retort this Outrageous Proceeding. Considering his vast Number of Spies, he could not conceive how it came to pass that he had no Notice of this till it was put in Execution. But when he came a little to himself, he could not but admire the King of Navarre's singular Courage, who could revenge himself at such a Distance, and give him so remarkable Proofs of his Resentment. From this time forward he was overcome with so great a Value for this Prince, that he would frequently say; *Of all the Princes in Europe, there was none but He and the Queen of England, to whom he would trust the great Designs that he was hammering in his Head.* And for all the Importunity of the League, he would never assist them with one Groat towards carrying on the War. He had so great an Opinion of Queen Elizabeth and Henry, that when any body spoke of a Prince that had no great Matter in him, he would say in a pleasant Air; *That the way to set the Affairs of Europe upon a right Foot, was to have it under the Government of Three such Sovereigns.* The Queen of England of her Part had no less Opinion of him; and when she had Occasion to speak of him meerly as a foreign Prince, it was with abundance of Admiration.

He was perpetually blaming the Duke of Orléans's Lethargy, (for so he would call his Neglect in

in punishing the Seditious People of *Naples*) but he was in the wrong to condemn the Conduct of so great and sage a Politician as this Viceroy was. *Sixtus* maintained, that letting that Revolt go unpunish'd was a Prejudice to the Authority of all Sovereigns. And when the *Spanish* Ambassador had Audience of him, he put him upon a Discourse of the Affairs of *Naples*, and told him, *He had ever till then valued the Duke of Ossona, as One of the ablest Ministers his Master had, but he had sunk in his Esteem since the barbarous Death of John Vincentio Staraco, whose Murderers he had not the Resolution to bring to Account.* The Ambassador willing to defend the Duke of *Ossona*, answer'd; *What's put off is not lost, and there had been very good Directions given at Naples, and there were Guards posted in several Parts of the City to keep the Rabble in Order.* But *Sixtus* being of the Mind such Disorders should be punish'd upon the Spot, and no Quarter given, told him; *Master Ambassador, Bread and Irons are the only Instruments one can use to bring People to Reason: And repeated several times those Words, Bread and Irons.*

The Duke d' *Ossona* hearing how the Pope reflected upon his too great Tendernefs, at length came to reproach himself for the same, and seriously to think upon making an Example of some of those who were the most guilty. He had them taken up upon Pretence of other Crimes; but he soon threw off the Mask and prosecuted them publickly. Some of the principal Inhabitants, perhaps to curry Favour with him at their Neighbours Cost, went to him in the Name of the whole City, to desire he would bring the Criminals upon their Trial; telling him that the Publick was concern'd to be justified thereby,

whose Innocence would appear in desiring Justice might be done upon the guilty.

The Viceroy named *Fernant*, and *Fornaro*, Two Officers of the Court, that things might go on as they should be; the first to be Judge, t'other, who was sufficiently in his good Graces, to be Attorney General. The Gaols were presently crowded with this insolent Rabbie. There were Thirty seven of 'em hanged, and their Quarters set upon the City-Gates. Two Hundred of them were sent to the Gallies; and above a Thousand banish'd the Kingdom: besides a greater Number that scour'd away and saved themselves.

These Wretches as they went to Execution, reproach'd the People with Ingratitude and Stupidity, for looking so unconcern'd when the Defenders of their Liberty were led to the Gallows. The Duke *d' Ossona* having a Mind to let the Pope see he knew how to make the disobedient understand their Duty as well as his Holiness; and to take his own Time to bring things about, had an Apothecary's House pull'd down, that stood in the Place call'd *Sellery*, near the New Gate, the Man's Name was *John Leonard Pison*. He was charged with stirring up the Mob against *Staraco*, but for fear of being made an Example went no farther. They sow'd Salt upon the Ruins of his House, the Materials being burnt upon the Place; and erected a Pillar with an Inscription upon Marble giving an Account why the House was pull'd down; to be a perpetual Reproach to *Leonard's* Memory: Tho' some were of Opinion the Monument was more for his Honour than his Shame. The Duke in the next place encompass'd it with an Iron Grate, upon the Spikes of which he had above Twenty Heads fix'd, with the Hands of those that were executed. This Sight struck the
People

People with Horrour, who made very soure Faces upon the Occasion; but durst not pull 'em down, for the Duke had his Emissaries who gave him an Account daily of all that was done in the City, and it was commonly said; *That Sixtus and He were at greater Expence for Spies, than other Princes of Italy for Regular Troops; and that the Pope was uneasy, because the Viceroy's were better in his own.*

The News of this severe Proceeding made Sixtus in quite another Story when he spoke of the Duke d' *Offona*; the Commendation he gave him shewed how much he was delighted with Instances of extream Justice. Politicians for the most part judge of other Men by themselves; but there were some of the *Spaniards* thought His Holiness had urged the Ambassador to get *Staraco's* Death revenged, but with a Design to embroil the Affairs of that Kingdom, and to serve himself by the Opportunity the Despair of the *Neapolitans* would give him, after the Punishment of their Sedition, to forward the great Designs he had upon that Crown, which has no Enemy more dangerous than the Pope, if he be a Man of a Restless and Meddling Temper.

Cardinal *Sirleto* a *Calabrian*, died in *October* the same Year, he was a Man of extraordinary Virgine; he left to his Heirs as many choice Books as were worth Twenty Thousand Crowns. The Pope express'd a great deal of Concern in the Consistory, saying, *He did not know a Man fit to take his Place.* It was propos'd to him to buy the Library for his Nephew the Cardinal de *Montalto*, but he made Answer; *That whilst he liv'd he should give his Nephew such Instructions as would serve him instead of Books; and after his Death his Nephew would have other Business than to amuse himself with reading.*

He trusted Affairs of the Greatest Importance to this Nephew to make him capable of Business, and to form his judgment which was forward enough for his Age. He had committed to him the Business of receiving the Account the Spies brought, and their Letters, and to inform His Holiness. He was expressly forbid as his Mother and the other Nephews had been, to ask any Favour. Not that he wanted Affection to his Family, but that he would have the Reward it Himself. *Let me alone,* he would say to 'em, *be you quiet; what your Industry would lay up may perhaps be unjustly got; but what you receive from me you'll come by Honestly, and may expect it should Prosper with you.*

As Rigid as his Temper was, he would yet unbend sometimes and please himself with little things, of which he had the Hints from a journal he had kept ever since he was Monk, of all that happen'd to him of Good or Bad every Day of his Life. He was strangely delighted with reading this stuff which was Writ by way of History. And brought up Two of his Juvenile Adventures which had never been thought of but for this same Register; to be a little particular they were these.

When he was no more than Batchelour in the Convent of *Macerata*, he went on Day to Barber for a Pair of Shooes. After he had been long upon the bargain the Shooemaker came down to Seven Julios: Brother *Felix* would rise no higher than Six, and desired the Man would be content with so much, telling him; *It was possible he might some time or other be able to give him the Seventh.* But when, says the Shooemaker, *when you are Pope?* If you'll take my word for it till that time, replied Brother *Felix*, *I promise to pay you with Interest.* The Merry Fellow Smiled and told

told him; *I see you so well inclined to be Pope that I'll agree not to be paid till then;* and so he let him have the Shoes. Brother *Felix* ask'd him his Name, and promised to remember him whenever that good time should come and perform his bargain; he went home to his Cell and set down the passage in his Journal. As he turn'd it over soon after he was Pope he happen'd upon this Article; and gave Order that enquiry should be made what was become of this Shoemaker. And commanded the Governour of *Macerata*, if the Man was yet alive, to send him to *Rome* by one of his People without letting him know for what. The Fellow was much Surpriz'd at this summons, having utterly forgot in Forty Years time both the Shoes and the remaining *Julio*. He could not imagine what the Pope had to say to him, and his wonder encreas'd the nearer he came to *Rome*.

When he got thither he was brought before His Holiness who ask'd him, *If he did not remember him at Macerata.* The Poor Man in a great fright told him, *He did not.* No, said Sixtus, *don't you remember you sold me a pair of Shoes?* He begun to be in a greater concern still, shrugg'd up his Shoulders, and look'd as if he knew indeed nothing of the matter. Well, said the Pope, *I am in you Debt and I sent for you hither to pay you.* All this did but put him into greater confusion, and he could say no more; and then Sixtus unriddled the Mystery. *Once upon a time You sold me a pair of Shoes, and you trusted me for one Julio which I was to pay with Interest when I came to be Pope: And now I am Pope, it is but reasonable I should keep my word.* Then he sent for his *Majordomo*, and bid him; *Cast up what Forty Years Interest of a Julio amounts to at Five per Cent. and when you have done it exactly put it and the*
Principal

Principal together into this Mans Hands, whom he dismiss'd, and ordered his *Majordomo* to observe, Whether he was content with the Payment. The Shoemaker went out of the Pope's Room thinking to receive a Huge Deal of Money. But when the *Majordomo* gave him a matter of Three Julios he went away discontented and mumbling. And as he met a great many of his Country Folks at the Pope's Gate who had waited with impatience to know what *Sixtus* wanted with him; He told 'em, *His Holiness* had fetch'd him to Rome to give him Three Julios, and complain'd sadly of his usage, that they had made him take a journey that had Cost him above Twenty Crowns already, without reckoning the Charge of going back.

Sixtus Shook his Sides with Laughing when the Spies he had set upon the Shoemaker brought him word what a taking he was in; and that as he went out of the Toun he held the Three Julios in his Hand and cried out for Vengeance upon those that had thus ruin'd him. He had scarce got the City on his back, but he was overtaken with a Summons to go and speak with the Pope, who asked him, *If he had ever a Son.* By good fortune he had one that was a Servitour Monk, and indeed a Priest of a good Life and Conversation. *Sixtus* ordered his Father to send for him to Rome before he went from thence, and gave him a small Bishoprick in the Kingdom of Naples: and then bid the Shoemaker; *Now make up your Reckoning, and see if I pay you the full Interest of your Julio.*

But he serv'd an *Augustine* called Father *Salviati* still better, the pleasantry of the thing demands a place in our History. We have already mention'd the Manner of *Montalto's* leaving the General Chapter of Florence, which was held 1504 upon Account of the Squabble he had with the General,

General, who taking his going away for a sort of Desertion, sent Orders to all the Convents that were under him in the Road from *Florence* to have him stopp'd. *Montalto* guessing as much, went another Way, and lodged in no House of his Order.

He lay one Night in a small Convent of *Augustines*, where Father *Salviati* was Prior. He was then a Young Man of about Five and twenty, but an Honest sort of a Man, and One that took Delight in obliging Persons of Desert: Tho' *Montalto* did not discover himself, yet the Prior shew'd him never the less Civility; and because the Stranger's Chamber was inconvenient, afforded him half his own Bed. *Montalto* next Morning at parting, either with Design to try the Prior's Generosity, or that he was really low in the Pocket, desired him to let him have Four Crowns upon his Note, which he promised to repay very quickly. *Salviati* lent him the Money, but *Montalto* counterfeited his Hand, and Sign'd the Paper by a wrong Name. The *Augustine* hearing no more of his Customer, made Enquiry a little after of the *Franciscans* where One of their Brothers should be, that went by the Name *Montalto* had given him: But he could meet with no News of him, there being no Monk of the Order that went by the Name.

Sixtus, when he met with this Adventure in his Journal, which brought it into his Mind, ordered the General of the *Augustines* to send Father *Salviati* to *Rome* if he were yet alive, for he wanted to see him and talk with him. The Man was at that time at a great Difference with his Bishop, upon some Contests which frequently fall out between the Bishops and the Regulars; and the Prelate had made a Complaint to the Congregation of Cardinals. The General thought His Holiness

Holiness sent for *Salviati* to reprimand him upon the Bishop's Motion; and what confirm'd him in the Opinion was, the grave and serious Air the Pope put on when he gave him the Orders. That he might discharge himself, and not put the Pope out of Humour, he had him brought up by Four Brothers, who guarded him upon the Road as so many Serjeants. The Bishop, when he heard how *Salviati* was carried to *Rome* by Order of the Pope, was wonderfully delighted to think he must go to Prison, and be proceeded against by the Congregation of Cardinals, to whom the Complaint had been made. He staid in this Strain to his Chapter, rejoicing that he had found the Secret of punishing the Insolence of the Monks; 'Tis necessary, says he, to mortifie these Fellows, that they may learn to maintain the Respect due to their Bishops.

All the *Augustine* Monks and *Salviati* himself thought he was now undone; and were for his going to ask the Bishop's Pardon, in hopes to mollifie him a little: But the Haft that was made to execute the Pope's Order put him by the Design. As soon as he came to *Rome* his General brought him to the Pope; His Holiness sent away the General, and took *Salviati* into his Chamber by himself. The Poor Man was in a Peck of Troubles, so much as he could hardly speak, concluding it was the Affair between the Bishop and him that he was brought up upon; and therefore went about to excuse himself and make the best Defence he could. *Sixtus* had never heard a Word of the Business, but seem'd to know all, and told him in a sort of Anger: *I am sure You're in the Wrong, and have fail'd in Point of Respect to your Bishop, who is a Prelate of great Merit, but it was another Matter that I sent for you about. You are accused of misemploying*

ploying the Revenue of your Convent, and I must call your to Account for it, but you must first own the thing.

Salviati pluck'd up his Spirits when he found the Business lay here; a Search into which must prove to his Advantage, as by his good Management he had increas'd the Stock. He told his Holiness in a very submissive Way: *He submitted freely to any Punishment his Holiness should inflict, if any Male Administration of the Society's Revenue that was under his Care, could be made out against him.* Sixtus made Answer as if he had been in great Wrath; *Have a care what you say, for I have in my Hand Proofs sufficient to convince you.* Salviati, in good Assurance He was Innocent, only shrugg'd up his Shoulders; and Sixtus not giving him time to speak went on; *Is it not true that in 1664. when you were Prior, a Franciscan Monk passed by your House, to whom you gave Four Crowns? And should you, I desire to know, have dispos'd of the publick Money so?* Salviati presently recollected the thing; but not imagining Sixtus was the Man he had lent the Money to, said; *It's true Most Holy Father, and I had let him have more if he had ask'd it, because he look'd like a Man of Worth, and One that deserv'd to be oblig'd: But I have since found him a Cheating Rogue for engaging himself by a forged Name, such as I could never since make any thing of.* The Pope fell a laughing and said; *Don't trouble your self to look any farther after him, for you'll not find him out; but he ordered me to pay the Debt and return you his Thanks: Are not you satisfied with my taking his Place and becoming your Debtor?* With this Salviati began to think His Holiness was the Man he call'd Cheat, and fancied his Face was like him he had been trick'd by. He was indeed a little pleas'd with the Pope's last Words

Words, which were kind enough: but how to get off the Affront he had put upon him he did not know, and was in a pannick Fear about it.

Sixtus being desirous to deliver the Man out of the Agony he saw him in, and acknowledged the Obligation, said: *It's now time to give you my thanks, who am that same Brother you was so Generous to; And as you gave me half your Cell, it is but reasonable I should afford you a Lodging: Then* he called for the Cardinal *de Montalto*, and order'd him to provide him a Chamber in his Apartment till he should hear farther.

The General of the *Augustines*, who impatiently expected the Event of this Interview, was, to his great Satisfaction surprized to find the Matter otherwise than he look'd for. He went to visit *Salviati* at the Cardinal *de Montalto's*, where he was very finely treated.

But the Bishop was much amazed who was at odds with *Salviati*, when instead of hearing the Congregation of Cardinals had reveng'd his Quarrel, and that *Salviati* was carried to *Rome* to be handled for his Insolence; One of his Friends that he had charg'd to enquire into the Matter step by step, inform'd him that his Enemy was Lodg'd at the Pope's House in his Nephew's Apartment, and was treated as if he was a Relation of his Holiness.

For a Month or more that *Salviati* staid at *Rome* The Pope would see him often, as well to dive into his Capacity as sift his Inclinations. He thought of making him General, and his General a Bishop to make way for him: but finding him more willing to Quit a Religious Life, he provides him a Considerable Bishoprick in the Kingdom of *Naples* which was about to be Void. This Advancement of *Salviati's* Fortunes, and the

the Honour done to his Order, wrought a contrary effect upon the Bishop's Spleen, to see his Enemy rais'd to be his Brother. And People were so much surpriz'd at the thing, that *Pasquin* soon had it; *Bishopricks are now but Four Crowns à-piece.*

Several such Actions as this he would do, so as to make the World admire; and one would have said, that from his Youth he had a sort of Intimation what he was to come to, by keeping to exact an Account of all that happen'd to him. But nothing tickled him more than the many Adventures he had in a Cloyster. When he heard of any Bodies Death that had done him good Offices, he lamented the opportunity that was lost of making an acknowledgement; and would be doing something for their nearest Relations. As for those that had used him ill, if they met with but few Favours from him; he never pursued his Revenge, but slighted the mischief his Enemies had done him. It was upon this consideration he once said to an Ambassador or Cardinal that was moving him to give something had been said against him: *If I were to Revenge all the Persecution that has been against me, I could do no less than extirpate a good part of the Franciscans.*

He appointed St. *Bonaventure's* Day to be kept, for whom he profess'd a particular Devotion; as a Doctor of the Church. Such was his Esteem of this Father's Works, That he had long since began to Write some Commentaries upon them, but the continual struggles he met with in the Cloyster hindred his Compleating them; and he often Expressed since, his desire to have somebody else undertake it.

The Popes by Ancient practice kept their Chapels no where but in St. Peter's Church. *Sixtus* thinking it an unreasonable Custom, made a Decree to distribute the Chappels amongst the Principal Churches of Rome; saying, *It was not Just that One should enjoy that Honour above all the Rest.*

The Jesuits, who had been Great Men under Gregory, wanted to insinuate themselves into *Sixtus* his Favour. And to that end tried to get one of their Society to be his Confessor. They got the Cardinal *de Montalto* to move it, he had no sooner open'd his Mouth to that purpose, but his Holiness told him, bluntly; *It's fitter for me to Confess the Jesuits, than so take them to Confess me.*

One Day, at the entry of these Fathers, he was saying Mass in Gregory's College-Church: where they made their Scholars repeat abundance of Verses, in which his Predecessors Kindness to them was set off. He heard it with a great deal of Attention, and afterwards turn'd to the Jesuits; saying, *Gentlemen, You imagine surely you are Talking to Gregory, and my Name is Sixtus.*

Another Time, being Invited by them to Honour one of their Solemn Feasts with his Presence, he was walking in their House when Mass was over. Amongst other things, they desir'd him to observe the Neatness of their Kitchen, but particularly of their Hall; upon which *Sixtus* in a sort of pleasantry, said; *I believe, My Fathers, your Treasures are better worth seeing.* The Rector made Answer with abundance of Respect, *That they were Poorer than ever. So much the better,* replied *Sixtus*; *The Poorer you are, the better Life you will lead.*

l; for the ~~most part~~, Riches spoil the Good Reli-
 us.

He Distributed the City of *Rome* into Four-
 teen Quarters, which for a long time had made
 out Thirteen, Adding that of *del Borgo*. And
 making the like number of Commissaries for the
 Streets, into which Places he put New Offi-
 cers, whom he enjoyn'd diligently to observe
 what pass'd in their District, and give him an
 Account Weekly: Particularly, what sort of
 Foreigners there were, as well those that were
 but in their Passage, as others that made a
 stay at *Rome*. One of these Commissaries hav-
 ing neglected his Duty, *Sixtus* had him Strip-
 ped and the Cat of Nine tails shew'd him in the
 Publick Hall, as if he must come under the Strap-
 pado: But being an honest Man, and his Faults
 unequal to such a Punishment, his Pardon was
 sent him.

Other Commissioners he sent about the *Ec-
 clestiasical State*, to prevent the Transporta-
 tion of Corn: under very Severe Penalties
 he forbid the Selling of any to Strangers; and
 brought several Merchants to Punishment for of-
 fending against this Decree. This Provision
 Filled the Granaries of *Rome* at such a Rate,
 that the Apostolick Chamber found its Ac-
 count in it, above and beside the Interest of
 the Money that had been employ'd to buy in the
 Stock.

Sixtus had it in his Head to confine all the
 Courtisanes to one Quarter of the City, like the
Jews: But the Governour of *Rome* shew'd him it
 was not practicable, the Number of these In-
 famous Creatures was so great. This was a
 great grief to him, not enduring to see such a
 Medley of this Cattel amongst honest Folks.
 He

He made some of the most scandalous fl, hoping when the Number was lessen'd he more easily pen up the Rest, resolving what ever it cost him, to bring about his first Design.

He made a Decree, Forbidding all Priests and Curates in particular to keep any Woman in their House, either as Servant or a House-keeper, if there were the least Ill Report about. He Enjoin'd the Governour to examine into the Behaviour of the Monks and Priests, and to Punish severely those that were scandalous. But this Regulation was not kept up many Months.

Father *Christopher Clavius* a Jesuit, by Nation a German, Flourish'd at this time amongst the Mathematicians. *Sixtus* sent for him to Rome, to compleat some things he had taken in hand. *Philip Diaz*, an Observantine Monk, *Thomas de Frugello*, a Dominican, *Henry Henriquez*, *Francis Ledesmo*, and *Louis Molina*, Jesuits, were no less acceptable to him upon Account of Theology. The Pope had declar'd he would reward their Virtue and Merit, provided they employ'd their Time and Pains for the Advancement and Glory of Christianity. But as his Inclination was as much towards Soldiers as Men of Letters, he look'd out for the One as much as t'other.

This Year he Concluded with the Promotion of Eight Cardinals, all Men of extraordinary Merit, and worthy the Honour they arriv'd at.

Hyppolito Aldobrandino of Florence, who was afterwards Pope by the Name of *Clement VIII*, was of this Promotion. The whole Court of Rome, and the People too were so well pleas'd

fed with his Advancement, that as soon as they heard it, they cried aloud in the Streets; *Long Live the Cardinal of St. Pancrace*: For that was the Title the Pope gave him with the Hat.

Q 2

The

 The SEVENTH BOO

SIXTUS, from the Beginning of his Pontificate, set to work to remove the Obelisk which is now Rais'd in the place of the Vatican. It had lain upon the Ground behind the Vestry of St. Peter's Church; and when he was but a Monk he would often go and look upon this Monument of *Old Rome's* Greatness: Seeing it lie in Dust and Oblivion, he would say with a concern, *That he wish'd to be Pope but for the sake of Restoring its Ancient Splendour.* Accordingly his first care was employ'd in it, for a Year they wrought at it without intermission, only to bring it to St. Peter's Place. For this purpose a vast Castle of Wood was made after a New Contrivance; which was of it self so fine that it drew all *Italy* that had any Curiosity in 'em to *Rome* for a sight of the Machine.

This Obelisk which generally is call'd a *Sphinx* is of a sort of Marble nam'd *Pyropeccidian* from the Sparks of Fire it is spotted with. This kind of Marble some call *the Speckled Stone*, Others, *Sienna Stone*, because it's found about *Sienna*, a City of *Thebais*, from whence the *Egyptian* Kings that were curious in that sort of Work had it brought.

It was made by Order of King *Nocoreus* who reign'd in that Country in the Time of *Numa Pompilius* King of the Romans. Several Authors have told us that it is not entire; that it was carved a Hundred and Fifty Fathom in Length, but fell down and broke in Two as they were pulling it up. That *Nocoreus* took the biggest Piece, which was still a Hundred Cubits long, and Consecrated it to the Sun, by Direction of the Oracle which he had consulted what Present he should make to this God in Acknowledgment of the Recovering his Sight. The other Part of this Obelisk, which is Seventy two Foot long is the Spire we speak of. It was brought to *Rome* together with two and forty more, some little and some large, which were set up in several Places of the City.

It was dedicated to the Emperor *Augustus*, and *Tiberius* his Adopted Son, with this Inscription, which Time has not yet defaced: *To the Honour of the Divine Cæsar, Son of the Divine Julius, and to his Son Tiberius Cæsar.*

For a long time it was thought the Ashes of *Augustus* were enclosed in a great Brazen Ball that was at the Top of this Spire: But *Dominico Fontana*, a famous Architect to whom the Pope had committed the Care of removing this Huge Weight, found upon Examination the Ball was a solid Piece, and had been cast in a Mould, without any Signs of Hollownes where any thing could be put in. There were indeed a great many Holes which were made with Musquet-shot at the last pillaging of *Rome*, into which the Wind having driven Dust, made the People mistake it for the Emperor's Ashes.

And what farther makes against that Opinion, This Prince built a Noble Mausolæum for himself and his Family, the Ruins of which are mag-

nificent and still to be seen at the Gate of *Nostra Dame* of the People in the Quarter of Saint *Roche*.

Several other Popes had soon after their Election this same Design of *Sixtus*; amongst the rest *Julius II.* *Paul III.* and *Paul IV.* tried all ways to bring it to pass, and consulted many *Worshippers* about it: But the Difficulty of the Undertaking, the Fear of too great Charge, or their having other Business of greater Consequence, diverted them from it. *Sixtus*, who looked upon it as a Point of Honour to overcome whatever stood in his way, undertook this, and accomplished it against the Sentiments of a great many who reckoned the thing next to Impossible.

He establish'd a Congregation of Cardinals, the most understanding in this sort of Work, to consult about the best way of executing his Design. He would often be at their Meetings, at which after several Expedients were proposed, that which seem'd to have the least Difficulty in it was pitch'd upon; and succeeded so well, as surprized all that had laboured to dissuade His Holiness from the Undertaking.

There were a great many Brass Medals fixed in the Pedestal this Obelisk was to be placed upon, to preserve the Memory of it's setting up for ever; and Two little Trunks in which were a dozen Medals lock'd up with *Sixtus* his Head done to the Life on one Side, and several sorts of Devices in the Reverse.

Upon some of 'em there was a Man a-sleep under a Tree in the Country with these Words, *Entire safety*: Upon others were Three Mountains, upon the Top of which to the Right was a Horn of Plenty, to the Left a Branch of Laurel, and upon that in the Middle, a Sword with the Point upward, which supported a pair of Scales,

Scales, with these Words: *He has made a glorious Feast upon the Mountain: Alluding to his own Arms which were Three Mountains; and to the Quiet, Plenty, and Justice, he was about to set up and maintain in the Ecclesiastical State.* Others there were with St. *Francis* upon his knees before a Crucifix, near to a Church that was like to fall, and these Words; *Go Francis and support my House:* And upon some there was the Figure of *Pius V.* with another of Justice on the Reverse.

There were several of these Medals also placed in a hollow hard Stone which they call *Trevertine*, from a Quarry near *Rome*; this rested upon a Foundation of Three Pieces of white Marble. Amongst these Medals there were Two of Gold in Honour of *Pius V.* who was represented on one Side, and Justice and Religion on the other. Above was a Table of Marble placed, upon which was engraved in Latin the Names of the Pope and the Architect, his Country and his Family; with an Inscription briefly setting forth the Manner of restoring this Obelisk, and the Time it was doing: And upon this Table were besides placed some Medals of *Sixtus*. And next were laid the first Stones of the Pedestal, upon the Mouldings and Cornish of which being all Brass, the Spire stood.

Several Cardinals, and other Persons of the first Quality at *Rome*, ask'd the Pope's Leave to cast Medals of their own into this Pedestal with his. This was granted them upon Condition, that Himself should be represented on one Side of these Medals; Many of which were thrown in by the *Medicis*, *Colonos*, and *Orsini*. Some Ambassadors too threw in amongst the Rest, and the Princes that were their Masters were kneeling at the Pope's Feet. The

Count d' Olivarez, Ambassador of Spain, had one struck with himself on one Side: and his Catholick Majesty on the other: *Sixtus* when he saw it sent him Word, That he might keep them for the Foundation of the next Royal Palace that should be built at Madrid.

There were Five deep Trenches made, and Forty Cranes set up to remove this wall. But then. Nine Hundred Workmen were employed in it at once, and Five and forty Horses, and it was at length fixed the Tenth of September 1586. The Friday following it was consecrated and dedicated to the Cross. The Expence of removing and setting it up, together with the Ornaments and Gilding, amounted to the Sum of Eight and thirty Thousand Roman Crowns; without reckoning what it stood the Apostolick Chamber in for Metal to make the Cross of, which is at the Top of the Spire; and the Brazen Lions, which by the strong Posture they are in, and their Fierce Looks, seem to bear the whole Weight.

The Duke d' Ossona, Viceroy of Naples, came to Rome in March, with a Royal and Splendid Train of Coaches to kiss the New Pope's Feet, in the Name of the King of Spain his Master. The Reputation he had, made *Sixtus* extremely desirous to see him and be acquainted with him. He received him with Extraordinary Respect, and his Entry into Rome was the Finest and most Magnificent of any Ambassador during the Pontificate of *Sixtus*.

The Pope gave him Four or Five private Audiences, in which he took abundance of Pleasure to hear him talk of General Things, and such as did not concern Spain; Tho' the Duke was ordered by his Master to draw his Holiness into a sort of Negotiation. *Sixtus* always found Means

Means to put off that Discourse; upon which the Ambassador, in Ordinary asked the Duke *de Offona* one Day, in what Forwardness the Affairs were that he had secret Conferences with his Holiness about: The Duke made Answer, *He gives me the finest Words in the World, but nothing comes of it.* The Other replied, *Your Excellency is much better used than other People; for my part I never got any Answers of his Holiness but disagreeable Ones, such as were full of Spleen and Bitterness.* 'Tis something, replied the Duke *d'Offona*, that you understand his Humour.

The Viceroy left *Rome* with all sorts of Honours heaped upon him, as far, that is, as the Outside goes; for at the Bottom he was but a little satisfied with his Journey, having obtain'd nothing that he came about. *Don Pedro*, who at that time commanded the Gallies of *Naples*, was in the Port of *Gaeto*, with a Design to make some Attempt upon the Coast of *Barbary*. He sent a Compliment to the Duke, with an Offer of his Service to carry him back to *Naples* with his Gallies. This Civility occasion'd a Contest about their Quality and Titles of Honour which they pretended to in the Letters they wrote to one another: And it came to a falling out between them; so much did an Impertinent Niceness, which is hardly now a days to be observed in *Italy*, fill the Heads of those who would establish a Respect upon other Foundations than True Merit and Virtue. Whilst this Struggle lasted between them Two, and made the most Noise, the Pope called a Consistory one Morning to forbid the Cardinals receiving any Letters from Princes: Let them be who they would, if their Titles and Quality they claim'd as their Due, were not mention'd in the Superscription; Which made 'em say at *Rome*, *The Pope had learn'd of*

the Duke d' Ossona the secret of keeping the Roast-Meat for himself and letting others have the Steam of it.

The Duke solicited he might have his *Congé*, not to save the Charges of being at *Rome*, but because he was to be at *Naples* to give Order about the publick Feasts and Rejoicings, which were to be kept upon the Birth of the Duke of *Savoy's* First Child by the Princess *Catharine* his Wife, a Daughter of *Spain*. The Pope sent an Extraordinary Nuncio to *Turin*, to congratulate them upon this Occasion: And received at the same time the sorrowful News of the Progress the *Lutheran* Army had made in the Neighbourhood of *Cologne*. They had burnt Fifty Villages there, taken a Fort near *Bonn*, and invited the Garison of that Place to revolt. All this put the Elector into such a Fright that he gave all for lost, and thought of nothing but retiring to *Bavaria* and leaving his Country in the Hands of the Hereticks. The Pope hearing of this, sent with all speed the Bishop of *Vercelli*, his Legate in that Country, to him, to dissuade him from a thing so much against his own Honour, and that of Religion: And to encourage him to defend himself in hopes of the Succours he might expect from Christian Princes that were Interested in his Quarrel. He sent Letters to them, in which he pressed them for their Assistance, and amongst the Rest to *Alexander Farneze*, who then carried on the War in *Flanders* with Success.

Farneze was not long before he did him this Signal Piece of Service. As soon as he had taken the Towns of *Grave* and *Venlo*, he went in Person against *Nuis*, which belong'd to the Elector, and was Four Leagues off *Cogn*. The Protestants had fortified it so well they thought it

it impregnable, as well for its Situation, as the Quantity of Provisions, and the Number of Troops they had in Garrison. But *Farneze* trusting to his own Valour and the Assistance of Heaven, laid Siege to the Place with so much Bravery, and gave so good Orders, that notwithstanding the fierce Countenance of the Besieged, and their Resolution to hold out, they were so much terrified the very first day of the Siege, that they were deprived of all Sense and Judgment.

To encourage this General more heartily to prosecute the Destruction of the Hereticks, and the Protection of the Elector, *Sixtus* sent the Abbot *Grimani* his Privy Chamberlain (who was afterwards Patriarch of *Venice*) in quality of an Ambassador to carry him a Hat and Sword which his Holiness had in a solemn Manner bless'd at *Rome*.

The Abbot got thither the Two and twentieth of *July*, which was the Time *Farneze* was most intent upon taking the Place; who sent one of his Gentlemen to meet him, and to desire He would put off the Ceremony of making the Present, and that he would stay at *Ruremond* for fear of giving Interruption to an Undertaking which he had enter'd upon for the Glory of God, and the Defence of the Catholick Religion, to which he had devoted himself; and as soon as he should have brought his Designs to pass, He should be in a Condition to have the Honour intended by the Pope, conferr'd on him more justly and magnificently both.

The Town was taken in Four Days Time, The Officers could not protect it from the Fury of the Soldiers, who pillaged and burnt it out of the Hatred they bore to the *Calvinists*. The short Time *Farneze* took to carry the Place was
much

much more for his Glory; that it was still remembered *Charles Duke of Burgundy* with a Powerful Army composed of several Nations, could not make himself Master of it in the Year 1457 after Eleven Months Siege.

The Duke of *Parma* received the Pope's Present amongst the Compliments of several Princes, who sent to applaud his Conduct upon the Advantage he had gain'd. The Elector of *Cologne* was urgent with him to make choice of his Capital City for this Ceremony: But he thought it more for his Honour to have it perform'd in the middle of his Camp, and in his own Tent, which was set up oyer against Fort *Guadantel*, where he had received the Glorious Title of Defender of the Catholick Faith. This Design pleased his Soldiers mightily, who partaking thus of their General's Glory, made Preparation to have all things requisite to the Solemnity of the Day; and the Ceremony was perform'd in this Manner.

Upon the First of *August* the whole Army was drawn up in Battalion about the General's Tent: which was made into a Chapel finely furnish'd, and the General Officers came in with some other Persons of Note, representing the Ambassadors of the Pope, the Emperour, and other Princes, and of the Towns of *Flanders*, their Neighbouring Allies, and other Provinces of the *Netherlands*.

The Duke of *Parma*, between the Elector of *Cologne* and the Duke of *Cleves*, after he had received the Sacrament at the Hands of the Bishop of *Vercelli* who represented His Holiness, accepted the Hat and Sword from the Abbot *Orimani* (whom some of the Principal Gentlemen of the Army had been to wait upon from his Lodging) by way of Acknowledgment of the Services he

Book VII. *Pope Sixtus V.*

237

he had perform'd for the Church. The Hilt and Scabbard of this Sword were set with Diamonds: There were some of great Value upon the Hat, which was Velvet trimm'd with a Gold Fringe. The Pope resolv'd to spare for no Cost upon an Occasion, which was the first he had, of gratifying a Defender of the Faith; at the same time having a Mind to give a Proof of his Affection to his Uncle Cardinal *Farneze*, who thought himself out of his Holiness's Books. The Glory of this Ceremony was still greater by an Eloquent Speech of the Bishop of *Vercelli*, suitable indeed to the Hero it was in Praise of; in which he shew'd it was an ancient Custom for the Sovereign Pontiff upon *Christmas-Day* to consecrate such Arms, and send 'em to Christian Princes as Defenders of the Church: And then prayed to God in the Name of His Holiness, to pour down upon this Hat those Gifts by which the Army should be preserv'd, and that the Sword, like *Gideon's*, might be ever Victorious in the Hand of so Generous a Captain, against the Enemies of Jesus Christ. The whole Camp express'd their Approbation of this Prayer by the Discharge of their Cannon, by Tournaments and other Motions.

The Duke of *Parma* afterwards gave a splendid Treat to the Legate, the *Romish* Ambassador, and all the Quality that had assisted at the Ceremony, and placed the Ambassador at his Left Hand. There were several Healths drunk at the Entertainment, among the Rest the Pope's went round on their Knees, with Drums Beating, Trumpets Sounding, and the Discharge of all their Artillery.

Sixtus finding it necessary to send a New Nuncio into *Poland*, pitch'd upon *Hannibal de Capua* Archbishop of *Naples*, with whom he had contracted

tracted a Friendship when he Read Divinity at *Naples*, and kept it up ever since. Nor had his Kindness for him so great a Part in this choice, as the Merit of that Prelate, who besides a Good Family, had a great Judgment to recommend him, and Good Experience in State-Affairs.

He set out in *October*, with an Equipage suitable to his Post, and the News of the King of *Poland's* Death came to *Rome* as he was upon the Road. This Prince dying without Children, People apprehended the Difficulty there was like to be in the Choice of a New King. The Pope held a Consistory upon the Occasion, in which the Cardinals entreated his Holiness to send one of their Number into *Poland* to get a Prince chose that was worthy of the Crown not meerly for his Personal Qualifications, but his Zeal and Devotion to the Catholick Faith. *Sixtus* did not listen to their Motion, either out of Friendship to the Archbishop of *Naples*, or that He thought him a Man capable enough of that grand Affair, and would maintain his first Choice. He only gave this Answer to the Cardinals, *That there was as much Good Sense and Rhetorick under a Green Hat as a Red One*; and sent Orders to his Nuncio to continue his Journey.

About that time the Duke d' *Ossona* left *Naples* to return into *Spain*, after he had govern'd that Kingdom Four Years as Viceroy. He sent a Gentleman to the Pope to inform him of his Removing, and to desire his Blessing. *Sixtus* received him wondrous kindly, and sent him back loaded with Medals and Reliques. *Don John de Zunica* Count de *Miranda* succeeded him. He was a Man reputed Just, and that could not be corrupted; but of a Disposition so easy and quiet, that many looked upon him to be Weak and fit for little.

The

The Duke d' *Ossona's* going was great Joy to His Holiness. He was too Cunning and Quick-sighted a Neighbour, too great a Man to be surprized and trick'd, whose Vigilance had prevented all the Designs *Sixtus* laid against the Kingdom of *Naples*. His Faithfulness to the Interests of the King his Master, was a Bar to the unbounded Authority *Sixtus* aim'd at in all *Italy*. *Zunica* with his Sweetness and his Devotion gave him hopes of obtaining his Ends easily; and that he should find out the Designs of the Nerv Viceroy and disappoint them.

Margaretta of *Austria*, Natural Daughter to the Emperor *Charles V.* which he had Four Years before his Marriage by *Margaretta* *Fangest* a *Flemish* Lady, died the Beginning of this Year at a Town called *Aquila*, in the Kingdom of *Naples*. She was first Married to the Duke of *Florence*, afterwards to the Duke of *Placentia* and *Parma*. She was One of the Greatest Princesses of the Age, who from her very Youth govern'd States, and managed the greatest Affairs of *Europe* with so much Dexterity and Courage, that her Memory will for ever flourish.

Cardinal *Farnese* her Brother in Law, would pay her great Services at *Rome* in which His Holiness officiated. He not only sent a Compliment of Condoleance to her Son the Duke of *Parma*, but Harangued several times in praise of this Princess, expressing in publick how she had supported the Interests of Religion with as great or greater Zeal than the bravest and most valiant Captains.

His Holiness his Thoughts were always taken up with adorning the City of *Rome*. After he had made an End of setting up the Obelisk we spoke of, he had another dug up that was a great deal less, near the Church of *Saint Roch*, which

which had probably been an Ornament to the Mausolæum of the Emperor *Augustus*. They found it broke in three pieces, but a great Artist set it up very exactly before the Church of *St Mary Major*; and there were thrown into the Pedestal several Medals of *Sixtus's*, as had been in the other.

He had Two more drawn out, which had been for many Ages buried in the Ruins of the *Circus*; One of which went for the largest was ever brought to *Rome*. *Sixtus* had a Design to fix it in the Place of the Holy Apostles, but the little Room there was for it there diverted his Intention, and made him carry it to *St. John de Lateran* when it was repair'd like the former. There were Medals also thrown into it, and it was Consecrated to the Cross. This ancient Monument is full of *Egyptian* Characters and other Figures in *Relievo*: It is much spoke of in the Life of *Constantius*, Son to the Emperor *Constantine* the Great, who had brought it from *Egypt* to *Rome*.

The other Obelisk, which is less than this, is also adorn'd with Hieroglyphick Letters. It was dug out by pieces, which were neatly join'd, and then was removed to the Place of *St. Mary of the People*, where it was set up and Consecrated as the Rest.

This Spire was brought to *Rome* by *Augustus Caesar*, who dedicated it to the Sun, as may yet be seen by an ancient Inscription engraved upon the South Side, as follows: *The Emperor Cæsar Augustus, Son of the Divine Julius, Sovereign Pontiff, in the Twelfth Year of his Reign, being the Eleventh Time Consul, and Tribune of the People the Thirteenth, Ægypt being subdued to the Roman Empire, consecrated this Monument to the God of Light.* Tho' the removing these Four Obelisks

Obelisks had been a vast Charge, the People were far from grudging it, but bestow'd a thousand Blessings upon the Pope for enriching the City with such Rare and Fine Monuments.

Sixtus, tho' naturally a Good Husband; and fond of heaping up Riches, as we may see hereafter, was never frighted from his great and glorious Designs for fear of the Expence they brought. He built a Noble Chapel in Honour of our Lord's Manger in the Church of *St. Mary Major*, which he began Three Months before his Advancement to the Holy See. He set about this out of the Devotion he bore the Sacred Cradle, that had been for a long time preserv'd in a Place near this new Building, which he had also a Design to enrich and adorn. The Foundation of this Chapel was laid in three Months Time next before he was Pope. Several Cardinals as well as the Architect, advised him soon after his Election, to make the Place more magnificent; but he would alter nothing of his first Design, only consented to have the Inside of the Chapel covered with fine Marble in Relievo, adorned with Foliage and Festoons; which he had intended should be but Mason's Work. This Work made the Thing so wonderfully fine and surprizing, that *Sixtus* by Way of Gratification, gave Money to the Architect and Work-men the first Time he went to see it.

In the old Chapel of the Manger, which was yet entire, and which he would keep up in respect to its Antiquity and the Reverence the People bore it, He built a splendid Tomb for *Pius V.* to give a publick Proof, and such as was Authentick, of his Acknowledgment of all the Favours he had receiv'd at his Hands, and thither he had his Body removed as soon as it was completed.

He made also a Tomb there for himself where he is represented on his Knees before the Manger. He founded this Chapel, gave many Privileges to it, and made a Bull which settled the Right of Presentation to it in his own Family.

About the Beginning of his Second Year, and the latter End of the First of his Popedom, which was in *April*, he form'd a Design of laying Water to *Monte Cavallo*, anciently called *Mons Quirinalis*, which Place stood in great Need of it. This Inconvenience made it very disagreeable living there, however the Popes never fail'd to pass most of the hot Weather there, for the sake of the fine fresh Air. •

They look'd for Water as far as a Place call'd *Colono*, where was found a fresh and plentiful Spring. For many Reasons it was judg'd impossible to bring the Water from thence: Yet it was at length effected to the great Joy of the publick, after Eighteen Months Labour; In which time they employ'd constantly two Thousand Work-men, and sometimes three or four Thousand: so great Difficulty they found in digging and removing the Earth. This Aqueduct cost a Hundred Thousand Pistoles, in which are reckoned Five and twenty Thousand Crowns, given to the Owner of the Ground for his Damage. The Pope would have this Conduit call'd by his own Name that he receiv'd at his Baptism.

He made a great Bason of Carved Stone in the Place of *St. Susanna*, beside the Baths of *Diosclesian*, to receive the Water at *Rome*, with this Inscription; *Sixtus V. Sovereign Pontiff, born in the Province della Marca, brought this Water to the Left Hand of the Via Prenestina from the Field Colono, by a Canal of Two and Twenty Miles in Length*

Length to this Receipt, and augmented it by several other Springs in the Passages; and that honour'd it with the Name he had before he was Pope. This Work was begun in the First Year of his Pontificate, and finish'd in the Third.

Farther he built the Gallery over the Portal of St. John de Lateran, where the Popes pronounce the Blessing to the People; and adorn'd it with Pictures, representing the Hierarchies of Angels, Apostles, Prophets, Martyrs, Virgins, Popes and Confessors: The Emperour *Constantine* is also drawn there with a great many Figures which make the Place worth the Curiosity of Strangers.

He laid also the Foundation of a Palace by the Side of this Gallery; for the Convenience of the Popes when they go to visit this Church. The Palace is so prodigious large, that there is none at *Rome* to be compared with it, that was begun and finish'd by the same Person. There are several Apartments both spacious and fine, and Two Halls where One may see painted some Histories of Popes and Emperors.

The Front of this Palace which looks toward the Obelisk is Three Hundred and Forty Foot wide; and That toward St. *Mary Major*, Three Hundred Thirty Five, and a Hundred and Thirty Foot high. Several Princes might conveniently lodge there, and *Sixtus* had increas'd the Building so as to receive all the Cardinals if he should chance to hold his Chapel there, or assemble the Consistory.

He had chiefly in view the Lodging the Emperour there in case he came to *Rome*. And to prevent its falling to Decay, he ordain'd by a Decree, that his Successors should live in it Two Months in the Year; But they never regarded the Decree, so that this Great Edifice which
 R 2 would

would have been one of the principal Ornaments of Rome, is now half dropt down, having stood uninhabited for a long time.

The same Year *Sixtus* had the Holy Ladder removed, which was hid under the Ruins of some Old Buildings, to the Side of the *Sancta Sanctorum*, adorn'd the Place with Rich Architecture and fine Painting, the Beauty of which increas'd the Devotion of the Pilgrims, who came for the Indulgences this Pope had granted those that should go up this Ladder upon their Knees.

He built a great Hospital for the Poor that were Sick, and Cripples that could not get their Living, along by the *Tyber* by St. *Sixtus's* Bridge (so named from *Sixtus IV.* that built it) as high as the *Julian Street*. He endowed it with Fifty Thousand Livres a Year to Feed and Cloath the Poor, and it holds Two Thousand without any Inconvenience. He built Lodgings too for the Governors and Officers of this Hospital, which has at present its Revenue much increas'd by the Charity of pious and devout People, who gave large Sums to it, part of which is employ'd to increase the Building. Upon the Gate stand the Arms of *Sixtus* with this Inscription; *Sixtus V. Sovereign Pontiff a Picentine, built this House at his own Charge, for the Reception and Maintenance of the Poor; which he Augmented, Fitted up, and Endowed for ever in the Year of our Lord 1586, and the Second of his Pontificate.*

He set up on *Trajan's Pillar* the Figure of St. *Peter* of Brass Gilded, to whom he consecrated the Pillar. Upon it are seen in *Relievo*, the Emperor *Trajan's* Conquests over the *Parthians* and *Dacians*, at this time called *Transilvanians* and *Walachians*. It was by the *Romans* dedicated to this Emperor, in Memory of the Victories he obtain'd of these People. *Sixtus* also dedicated An-

igninus his Pillar to *S. Paul*; and set up a Figure of him like that of *S. Peter*.

It was first Consecrated to *Antoninus Pius* by *Marcus Aurelius* his Son in Law, who enrich'd it with *Basso Relievos*, representing the Wars of *Marcus Aurelius* in *Germany* with the *Marcomanni*, at this time called *Bohemians* and *Moravians*. This Pillar having felt the Power of Time, *Sixtus* had it repair'd by an Architect who restored its primitive Beauty. The same Care he took of the Two Horses of Marble whose Hardness could not secure them from the Injuries of devouring Ages, so many of 'em as were past since the Time of *Praxiteles* and *Phidias*, the famous Carvers of these two Statues, as appears from these Inscriptions in *Latin*: *Phidias a famous Carver, to shew his excellent Fancy and Skill, made in Marble the Figure of Alexander breaking his Horse Bucephalus. The other is as follows; Praxiteles a Carver, desiring to leave an Evidence to Posterity as Phidias had done of his Attainments in the same Art, with a laudable Emulation made in Marble the same Figures of Alexander and his Horse.*

These Pieces, tho' admirably well done, yet are not the finest that were done by these great Hands. *Phidias* hit still better in a Statue of Gold and Ivory that he made at *Elis*, of *Jupiter Olympius*, which pass'd for one of the Wonders of the World. And so he did in that of *Minerva* at *Athens* of Gold and Ivory too, Six and twenty Cubits high; in the Buckler of which he represented to Admiration, a Combat of *Amazons*, and another of *Lapithi* and *Centaurs* on the Pedestal, which he enrich'd with an infinite Number of other Ornaments of his own Invention.

Not daring to engrave his Name upon the Buckler because it was the Statue of a Goddess, he represented himself to the Life in a Place so ingeniously chosen, that the Figure could not be taken off without spoiling all the Word. He made other Statues in Brass and in Marble, all which went for Master pieces in Carving.

It has been said that this great Man died in Prison, being accused of working the Gold which the Athenians furnish'd him with to make the *Minerva* we have been speaking of, so as it might be taken away without any body's perceiving it. The Excellency of his Genius appear'd more in Statues of the Gods than of Men.

Of all the Works of *Praxiteles* his *Venus* has carried it from the Rest; Several People have gone to *Cnidus* on purpose to see this Rare Piece, which was almost Flesh and Blood Animated. This Artist had in his Work-House Two *Venuses* perfectly fine, One was quite naked, t'other cover'd with a Veil. The Inhabitants of the Island *Cos* bought this last as the most Modest and Decent, and they of *Cnidus* took the other at the same Price tho' incomparably the best done. King *Nicomedes* since offer'd for it to discharge the Debts of their City which were considerable, but they would not listen to his Proposals, being persuaded the Fineness of that Statue was a Glory to their Country.

These are the most famous Pieces of these Great Artists, who came into the World since *Alexander*, and who were not Contemporaries: Yet People talked of their aiming to out-doe one another as if they had lived at the same time. But this is no more than may be seen every Day, there's the same Emulation in Artists who strive to come up to and surpass the Glory of those that went before them. And it may be *Praxiteles*
and

and *Phidias* themselves aim'd to do greater things than all that in the Time of *Alexander* had tried at his Statue and that of *Bucephalus*. This may serve for an Answer to those that would have it these Artists were Contemporaries.

To return to the History of *Sixtus*, His application to the Affairs both of the State and Church, and his care of them did not hinder him from making *Rome* Fine at the same time. He was so intent upon it, and active in it, as to raise the Admiration of all *Italy*; and one may say with Justice enough, that he did not only embellish the Capital of the World above all the Popes that ever liv'd; but that he has out-done all the Old *Romans* ever perform'd in making it Fine and Great.

Finding the Palace of *Monte Cavallo*, which he had augmented, was not yet big enough for the Majesty of a Sovereign Pontiff, and to contain all his Family: he built another close to it, with a Guard-Chamber for the Two Hundred *Swiss* of his Guard, who before had no place to shelter them.

Nor did these great Undertakings so entirely swallow him up, but that he thought of raising his own House. He appointed them his Palace of *St. Mary Major*, and made them Apartments Splendid and Convenient. He made a Garden there, which for Compass of Ground and Beauty surpass'd all others at *Rome*, and even disputed Precedency with that of the *Vatican*, which is reckon'd to have the first place in *Europe*.

He had a Plan of several New Streets laid out, which they began this same Year; the most Considerable goes from the Holy Cross of *Jerusalem* to *St. Mary Major*, and reaches as far as *La Trinitè del Mont*. He intended to carry it on as far as the Gate of the People, but Died before he

accomplish'd it. It is, tho' imperfect, Two Miles Long, half of it is built in a right Line, and Five Coaches may pass in a breath. He would have it call'd after his Christen'd Name, *Strada Felice*.

Two others were also made by him, beginning at *St. Laurence* without the Walls; One of which goes to *St. Mary Major*, and T'other to *Dioclesian's Baths* passing behind his Palace, which is near this Church. Another he made which goes from *St. Mary Major* to the Palace of *St. Mark* that belongs to the Republick of *Venice*; And One that begins at *St. John de Lateran* and goes to the *Colliseum*: And One more yet that reaches from the Gate *Salary* to that of *Pius*.

Though all these New Streets were very convenient for the Publick because of the Ill Ways there were in several Parts of the City, yet it was said the Pope had done it but for the particular Use of his own Family, because most of these Streets went round *St. Mary Major* near his Palace. But let them say what they would, The Publick was much the better for them.

He look'd over the Palace of the *Vatican* with his Architect *Fonsana*, to see if there was Room enough to hold so many People as should have Lodgings there; and finding it too straight for a Pope's Family, he enlarged the Building in the same Compass of Ground; and, taking in the Galleriess which Pope *Leo*, *Pius*, and *Gregory* had adorned with Paintings, made it a large and Magnificent Palace: So that the *Vatican* is become the most Spacious Edifice in the World. No Prince upon Earth having so good Lodgings as the Sovereign Pontiffs.

Farther he made a Noble Stair-Case fit for a Prince, to go from the *Vatican* to *St. Peter's Church* without stepping out, by a Passage through

through the *Gregorian* Chapel which is kept entire; tho' there were several Buildings quite ruin'd to place this Stair-Cafe. By this Convenience the Pope saves himself the Trouble of going through *St. Peter's* Place to Church, and is in no Danger of Ill Weather, nor troubled with the Importunity of the People.

He repair'd the Tower of *Belvedor*, which Time had almost thrown down; he could not endure so fine and so necessary a Piece of Building should be buried in the Dust. The same Compassion he shew'd the ancient Church of *St. Sabina*, the Footsteps of which were barely to be seen: And re-built it so well, that at present it surpasses all others of the same Bigness.

Another of his Works was the Restoring from the Bottom the fine Church of *St. Jerom* of the *Little Brook*, whose Name he bore when he was Cardinal. This he never went to see, but it drew Tears from him to think of its Ruin and Desolation. And accordingly when he was Pope he labour'd to make it as magnificent as the Place would permit him; endow'd it, and granted it several Indulgencies.

This Prodigious Number of Buildings, enough to immortalize the Name of *Sixtus*, are nothing in Comparison to what he did in *St. Peter's* Church; it was an Undertaking thought by all the World impracticable, and indeed by the Architects themselves. To compleat this Glorious Edifice, it was thought requisite to have a Dome proportionable to its Height and Bigness; and the Thoughts of a Work so very difficult had put by several Popes from attempting it: But *Sixtus*, whose vast enterprizing Genius and profound Judgment sought a Reputation and Glory in Designs that were full of Rubs and Hindrances, was resolv'd

to

to accomplish the Thing. He ordered his Architect to lay the Design in his Presence: And commanded him, without regarding any Expence, to drain his Art that this Work might be Magnificent to the last Degree.

'Tis the most lofty Building in *Christendom*, and *Sixtus* burning with Impatience to see it finish'd, employ'd Six Hundred Work-men in it at a time; and had doubled their Number, if the Master-Builders had not made it appear to him there would be such a Confusion as would hinder instead of forwarding the Work. The Inside of it is Mosaick, where the Four Evangelists are to be seen of an excessive Bigness.

One may guess at the Height of this Dome by the Smallness of the Ball as it appears from below when One stands in *St. Peter's Place*; there it seems no bigger than a Foot-ball, tho' 'tis large enough to hold Fifteen or Twenty Men.

And farther it's Height may be conceived by the Height of a little Window half way from the Bottom of the Church to the Top of the Dome. From thence a Man seems no bigger than a Dwarf, and the best Eyes in the World cannot discern one Person from another.

He pull'd down an Old Tower built by the Emperour *Severus*, call'd *Septizonia*, to employ the Materials in building *St. Peter's Dome*. The People of *Rome* grumbled at the Destruction of this Monument of their Ancestor's Greatness: But *Sixtus*, who applied himself only to Modern Works did not care for the Old Ones: And made Use of a great many Fine Pieces of Marble that were taken from this Ancient Building, to adorn the New One he was about.

He gave Proofs of his Good Will to his Order, not only granting them several Privileges, but making them considerable Presents, and taking care of 'em himself against the Attempts of the Reform'd who had already given them some Wounds, having been set up by Consent of some of his Predecessors in several Convents of their Order.

He suppress'd the Reform'd of the Convents as useless, and prejudicial to the antient and true Discipline of Convents. He ordered by a very severe Bull, that the newly Reform'd should be re-united; made over their Estates to the old Houses, and prohibited their taking Novices: So that there was but one Convent left them at *Naples*, called *St. Lucia del Mont*, which the Conventuals at length got Possession of, and may thank *Sixtus* for the Establishment and Restoration of their Order.

He built a College in the Apostle's Convent, upon which he settled the Reveñue of a tolerable good Abby in *Calabria* for ever, to maintain Five and Twenty Students. This was a mighty advantageous Foundation to the Religious of his Order, giving them the Means and Desire of studying to make themselves fit for that College, where they went out in Three Years Divinity Lecturers, and sometimes with a Doctor's Cap. The Statutes it's true of this House were very strict, and they were enforced with abundance of Severity: But *Sixtus* was well acquainted with the Behaviour of the *Junior* Brothers, and found there was no other Method to maintain Order and Discipline.

These were kept up as long as there were None prefer'd to the College but Persons of Merit. And indeed, when a Scholar of *St. Bonaventura* was spoke of, (for that was the Name of

of the House) it was in a few Words to say, A Great Divine. The Design *Sixtus* had in establishing this at *Rome* was, to give a Great Idea of the Religious of his Order to Strangers, whose Curiosity brought them from all Parts of the World.

Nor were his great Exploits confined to the City of *Rome*, he extended his Favours through the State of the Church and the Frontiers of it; not only by his Vigilance in the governing Part, but by his Buildings, his founding Colleges, his Aqueducts, his repairing Bridges and mending High-Ways, and abundance of other things design'd purely for the publick Good.

He began with the Province *della Marca*, upon which he did not levy so great Sums as in other Places subject to the Holy See. Having observ'd before he was Pope, That Learned and Able Men were scarce in that Country, he thought of setting up Virtue and Merit there; and with this Design built a College in the Town of *Bologna*, and assigned to it a great Revenue for the Support of Forty Scholars, their Regents and Principals, and all other Officers that he judged necessary for their Instruction or their Service. Two Reasons put him by his first Intention to build it at *Rome*. One was, that he would not give his Successors perpetual Cause of Jealousy, which would infallibly have ruin'd the House, or at least perverted the Discipline: For having by a Bull in due Form decreed, That no Scholars should be taken in but such as were Natives of the Marquisate, he foresee the Cardinals would not insist upon keeping his Successors from putting in any of the *Ecclesiastical State* indifferently; whereas by founding it at a Distance from *Rome* he thought himself secure it would stand. And t'other Reason was for choosing *Bologna*, to make it.

it more considerable and Rich. Besides that, the Plenty and Fruitfulness of the Country furnished all things necessary to Life at a much cheaper Rate than they were to be had at *Rome*.

He enriched his Country the Marquisate with two other Ornaments, which made it still more famous, and himself more remarkable. The first was an Effect of his particular Devotion: The other was inspired by the natural Inclination for the Place of his Auspicious Birth. This Inclination was so strong, as not only to put him upon Kindness toward his Country-Men in advancing them to the chief Posts in the Church, but even to the Soil where he drew his first Breath.

The Great Devotion which was long since set up at *Loretto*, in Honour of the Holy Virgin, which Place is in the Middle of the Marquisate, put him upon a Design of enlarging and adorning it. He let some of the Cardinals know as much, telling them; *It was but reasonable a Man born in that Province should give Proofs of his Thankfulness to the Mother of God, for taking up her Residence there, and transporting the House she had formerly in Judæa to the Village of Loretto.*

And he gave out immediately particular Orders, and provided every thing necessary to make the Place famous; laying the Foundation of a New City, and granting a great many Exemptions and Privileges to invite Strangers to inhabit it. But as a City would not be compleat without a Bishop's See, he erected One there out of that of *Recanati*, upon which *Loretto* was before a Dependant. This displeas'd the Bishop of *Recanati*, but having no other Remedy he made use of Patience. *SIXTUS* had once a Design
by

by a Decree, to provide against any Man's obtaining this new Bishoprick who was not a Native of the Marquisate; but apprehending his Decree would not long be minded, he thought fit not to make it. The Administrators of this Church set up a Statue for him over against the great Door, which is done to the Life, in acknowledgment of his Favours to this Holy place.

The other Ornament he intended for his own Country, was Building a City about the *Grotto* of *Montalto*, and the House where he was Born; which in all probability, he had soon peopled by the *Franchises* and Immunities he would have granted it. But the Impossibility of the thing diverted his purpose, tho' naturally he was given to struggle with whatever oppos'd him: And never projected any thing which he did not accomplish, except some Works toward the end of his Popedom which Death prevented.

When he found this City he had laid out could not be built where he first intended, he cast his Eyes upon the Town of *Montalto*, which was the biggest thereabouts, and from whence he had taken a Name that he bore a long time. After he had exempted it from several Taxes, he had a new Design laid by an able Architect, which he examin'd himself, and with his own hand mended what did not please him. Then he sent a Commissary and an Engineer to put it in Execution, with Orders to give him an Account Weekly how the Work went forward, and what the Charge was. There were employ'd daily Five Hundred Workmen, besides the Inhabitants of the place. *Sixtus* resolv'd to Wall it in, because without it, it would not deserve the Name of a City: tho' *Venice* indeed has none, but then the Sea serves for a Bulwark, and Defends them from the Insults of Robbers.

and

and Banditti. This undertaking requir'd abundance of pains to bring it to perfection, because there was a Mountain to be cut through, above Seven Hundred Fathoms, in the middle of which was a very hard Rock, which the Engineer thought nothing of, and made the Charge Double what was expected before they enter'd upon the Work. Several Cardinals grumbled at the thing in secret, not daring to speak out for fear of the Spies which were all the Town over, and that the Pope had so strictly enjoin'd them Silence. They could not forbear condemning such an Ambition, which was neither for the Benefit of his Country, nor the Advantage of the Church. *Sixtus*, who knew all they said upon the matter, did but go on with the business with the greater eagerness, and was sometimes pleas'd to tell 'em in a Merry way; *That what he was doing at Montalto, was but for a little Recreation after the Toil he had taken in Perfecting and Adorning Rome.* This City he erected into an Episcopal See, assign'd it a Thousand Crowns a Year, and favour'd it with several Privileges. At the same time he was at work upon a Bridge over the *Tyber*, between the *Borghet* and *Utricoli*, for the more convenient Trading, as well as for the sake of Pilgrims and other Passengers, who were often stopp'd when the Water was high.

Tho' the *Ecclesiastical State* is sufficiently water'd, and there are abundance of Lakes and Rivers which make it extremely fruitful: *Sixtus* who had none but great designs working in his Head, thought of laying the River *Teveron* into the *Tyber*, to make the Territories of *Rome* still Richer and of greater Account. The Emperor *Claudius* had the same intention, as the Writer of his Life tells us; *He made a Canal of cut Stone to bring the Brook Anien quite to the City, and dispers'd*

pers'd the Water into several magnificent Cisterns, which were made on purpose.

This Undertaking besides the Convenience the Country would find in it, was a mighty help to Trade, by the easie carriage of Provisions and other things, and the Advantage of Gardening. But the Fresh Air that *Sixtus* expected from it, was the chief consideration, as it made the Place more Healthful, to which Running Water contributes very much, its Vapours keeping the Air in constant Motion. For there's nothing so dangerous as too great Calms in the Middle parts of the Country, where the Air settles and putrifies like standing Ponds. This commonly occasions an ill Temperature, and makes the Parts about *Rome* uninhabitable; which changing the course of the *Teveron* was intended to remedy. And farther, it was done to Invite private Men to Build upon the Banks of this new Canal, Houses of Pleasure, Mills, Store-houses, Inns, and such like: And to make Gardens, to plant Orchards, Groves and Woods, which would wonderfully adorn the Country about *Rome*.

Besides, it was said the bringing this Rivulet into the City, as far as *St. Paul's*, would make the Floods less by half, and less dangerous than heretofore; for the *Teveron* would not then be able to swell the River, as it had done sometimes several Fathoms. This would by no means take off the goodness of the Water in the *Tyber*, tho' some think it draws off the Sulphureous Water from the *Teveron*, which comes out of the Territories of *Tivoli*; but if it should be so, that is not to be set against the Advantages it brings. Nor is it otherwise in the Body Politick, or Natural, where one part is not to be relieved sometimes but by the sufferings of another, and the Physician is thought to do his part when of Two

Evils the worst is avoided. *Sixtus* had not been tempted to this Work but out of Emulation of a *Roman Emperor*; nor had he engaged in it, if some Engineers had not been at the pains of persuading him it would never be for his Honour.

After he had applied himself with all this Diligence to publick Works, and provided for the Wants of the *Ecclesiastical State* both Spiritual and Temporal, his Thoughts turn'd to regulate the *Militia*, to make it appear what Agreement and Union there was between *St. Paul's Sword* and *St. Peter's Keys*. He ordered to have Rolls made of all the Soldiers belonging to the Holy See, and that they should be form'd into Battalions to be always in a Readiness whatever sudden Affair should call them into the Field.

He had also all the Subjects of the Church enroll'd, who were able to bear Arms, appointed them a fixed Number of Officers in every City to maintain Order and Discipline, and granted them some Exemptions.

This Regulation the Good Success of *Clement VIII's Arms* was owing to in the War of *Ferrara* 1598. all the World being surprized to see Twenty Thousand Foot and Two Thousand Horse, all Subjects of the Holy See, got together in less than a Month; a thing which few Princes in *Europe* were in a Condition to do, and which that Pope could never have effected without the Care and Provision of *Sixtus*.

He sent for Three Engineers to ask their Opinion what Places he should fortifie for the Security of the *Ecclesiastical State*. After a long Conference with him One of the Three said, *It was necessary to fortifie Castel Franca, upon which Pius V. had begun to Work, but the Rumour of the War of Cyprus had put a Stop to it.* This Place is

in the Middle of a Plain and easy to fortifie, being commanded by no Hill, in a plentiful Country, and near *Bologna*, which has an Interest to succour it for its own Defence and its Territories, and may easily hold out against the Attempts of a Strong Army. The Respect *Sixtus* bore the Memory of *Pius V.* who began this Work, moved him to go on with it and compleat it: But the Conquest of the Kingdom of *Naples* was his principal Aim, tho' it was a Secret he trusted No body with, and he thought chiefly upon securing his Frontiers on that Side, and preparing every thing to carry that which his Ambition was most intent upon.

He ordered his Engineers to View together the Places which it was necessary to fortifie. They told him that Frontier wanted a great many strong Places because of its Length; that towards the Marquisate Care must be taken of *Ripa*, *Tranfona*, *Ossida*, and *Ascoli*; but it was sufficient to fortifie the last well, which being the farthest off would by its Situation, and the Bravery of its Inhabitants, deal well enough with the Enemies Country. They were of Opinion that *Rieti* in the Country of the *Sabines* should be fortified, a Place well enough in it's self, and situate in a good Country the Avenues to which was of Importance to shut up. *Terracina*, *Frusinonna*, *Frentino*, *Cagna*, and *Agnani*, were, as they apprehended, Places fit to preserve in *Campania del Roma*: But however it was enough that *Frusinonna* and *Agnani* be fortified, for the greater Security of which all the small Forts about *Rome* should be destroy'd, that an Enemy might not possess himself of them, which were no hard Matter to do.

These Engineers farther told *Sixtus* that *Civita Vecchia*, which was to be his Sea-Port, suffi-

erect mightily for want of Water, and it was absolutely necessary to have some laid thither. His Holiness immediately gave Orders to go to work upon an Aqueduct, which put the Place in a Condition of Defence, and gave great Satisfaction to the Inhabitants.

All these Preparations, and all these Steps were given out as made but for the Security of the Church: but all the Neighbouring Princes were equally alarm'd, and amongst the Rest the *Spaniards*, who could not bear to see the Pope's Warlike Genius, and repented of the Promotion they had been Instrumental to; finding the Man who had lived so long with the Cross in his Hand, would not die but with a Sword there, since he took so great Pleasure in nothing as talking of Armies and War.

The *Spaniards* Disgust never disturbed *Sixtus* in his Designs, no more than the Jealousy of other Princes, which grew upon them as they observed his Diligence in making Naval Preparations. He gave Order for the building Ten Gallies bigger and finer than any were ever yet seen, and sent for able Work-Men from *Venice* to do it, telling 'em, *This New Fleet was only for the Honour of the Holy See, and the Service of the State, if a Case of Necessity should happen.*

Before they began to work upon these Gallies, he held a particular Congregation to find out a Fund to bear the Charge. And since it was to fall wholly upon the Church, he ordered that no Cardinals should be admitted to the Congregation but such as were born Subjects of the Holy See, that they might find out a Way to raise Money for this Undertaking, and not be hard upon their Relations nor the Rest of the State. The other Cardinals took it amiss that they were excluded, and complain'd aloud, *That they had*

as much Right to be in the Congregation as the *Rest* and it look'd as if His Holiness would let them have nothing to do in Business, but put *All* into their Hands that were born in the Territories of the Church. They gave the Cardinal *de Medicis* a Charge to complain of it to the Pope in the Name of them all, but to do it modestly. He had a long Conference with his Holiness upon the Matter in the Name of all the Cardinals that were Foreigners; and remonstrated to him that the Character of a Cardinal being the same they were as much Princes of the Church as they that were born Subjects of the Holy See. *Sixtus* did not study for an Answer, yet heard him out with more than his usual Patience, and then said; *My Lord, I am very free that your self and your Brethren should take upon you to be Princes of the Church, but not to be Princes of the State.*

This Repartee mortified the Cardinal at a strange Rate; and tho' he knew the Danger of raising the Choler of *Sixtus*, The Greatness of Soul so natural to the Princes of that House, and his Interesting himself so heartily in a Business that was committed to his Conduct, drew from him this bold and generous Answer: *If Matters are carried so, I think, Holy Father, we had best go home to our own Houses. When you please,* replied *Sixtus*, *The Lord send you a good Journey and keep you there.* *Medicis* was resolv'd to go out of Town that very Night; but all the Discontented Cardinals met, and let him know His retiring would oblige them all to the same Measures; that their Absence would but encrease the Pope's Displeasure, and there was no Ground to be gain'd upon his Temper by such a Method. Nothing came of the Matter, and the Pope with the Cardinal of the New Congregation were very well pleas'd to see it go off so.

It was agreed upon in this Congregation, where the Pope ordered every thing himself, that these Gallies should be built at the Charge of the Provinces, and the Principal Cities of the *Ecclesiastical State*. And there was a Bull obliging the State to furnish Yearly the Sums requisite to maintain this Fleet.

The Pope had it computed what would be the Yearly Expence, which amounted to a Hundred Thousand *Roman* Crowns, of which Three make a Pistole. And farther he got an Account of all the Fire-Hearths in every Province and every City, that he might make every body pay according to their Ability.

He taxed the Senate and People of *Rome* at Twelve Thousand Crowns a Year, the City and Territory of *Bologna*, the Province of *Umbria* and *Romania* to pay the same. He had a mighty Mind to favour the Marquisate; but seeing it would be a manifest Injustice which his Successors would infallibly have redress'd, this Province being the best peopled and most fruitful of them all, he contented himself with making them pay but Twelve Thousand Crowns.

The Province of the Patrimony of *St Peter* in *Tuscany*, which is much less than the Rest, was taxed but at Five Thousand Eight Hundred and seventy two Crowns. That of *Campania* being a little better, at Six Thousand One Hundred and twenty six. The City of *Ancona* with its District and Dependencies, at Eighteen Hundred. And that of *Fano* at the same Rate, tho' 'tis less considerably than *Ascoli*, which was comprehended in the Dependencies of *Ancona*.

These Sums put together amount to seventy eight Thousand Crowns: And to make it up Ninety Thousand Crowns, which the Charge of this Naval Force was computed at, there was a

Tax of Twelve Thousand Crowns laid upon the Clergy, which every Church-Man was to pay according to his Income. They rais'd Five Thousand Crowns by a Toll upon Comes and Goers at *Benevento*, and Seven Thousand more upon two publick Passages at *Rome*. This came to a Hundred and Three Thousand Crowns a Year, the Pope thinking fit to have rather more than was fixed. He made 'em pay down the first Year's Duty that he might have it towards building the Gallies, which he was impatient to see finish'd, ready to take in a vast Number of Slaves which the Prisons were crowd'd with. His Popedom was out of Necessity and justly enough too the most rigorous and severe that ever had been: There were Criminals every where leading to Punishment, and Heads set up along the Walls.

This Year being 1586. the Catholick *Swiss Cantons* sent Ambassadors to *Rome*, not only to kiss his Holiness's Feet and pay their Duty to him, but to inform him of the sorrowful State to which they were reduced by the Neighbourhood of the Protestant *Cantons*, whose Numbers encreas'd daily as well as their Strength and Progress.

Sixtus received them wondrous kindly, and would be inform'd by themselves of the present Condition of their Country, upon the Necessities of which he thought fit to send thither a Nuncio, to encourage them to defend the Catholick Faith. After mature Consideration upon the Choice of a fit Person to manage an Affair of that Importance, he named My Lord *John Baptista Santorio*, Bishop of *Tricarico*, his Chamberlain, whom he had known of old to be a Man of Merit and Experience; and declared him in a full Consistory, Nuncio to all the Catholick *Cantons*, their Confederates and Allies.

This Prelate was highly pleas'd with such an Opportunity of expressing the Inclination he had to please his Holiness and the whole Sacred College, and to use his utmost Endeavours, his Zeal, and his Prudence in the Churches Service. He went from *Rome* in the hottest Weather with a Train small enough, and when he came to *Switzerland* found things in a great Confusion. This Disorder was occasion'd by the not sending a Nuncio thither for a long time, for the Inhabitants the Catholicks themselves lived as if the Holy See had cast 'em off, and they were dismembred from the *Romish* Church. Indeed if there had been a Nuncio sent when Most of the *Cantons* were embracing the New Doctrines, that had been a Man of firm Resolution, he might have confirm'd the Catholicks, hindred the Preaching Protestants from spreading the Venom of *Calvinism*, and preserved the whole Country in the Purity of the Catholick Faith: And the People would, in all Appearance, have all become Hereticks, if the Nuncio sent by *Sixtus* had not by his Pains and his great Abilities bravely sustain'd the Interests of the Holy See.

When he arriv'd he gave Notice to the Catholick *Cantons* and their Allies that he desired to see them meet together in a general Diet; and desired they would send more Deputies than they used to do to such sort of Assemblies. They obey'd the Nuncio's Order without any Delay, and the Diet began the Fifth of *October* that same Year.

Two things he did in the first Meeting of great Consequence to the Holy See, for which the Pope wrote him two private Letters of Thanks. The first was, that after he had given the Communion with his own Hand to all the Deputies, he concluded a perpetual Alliance be-

tween them and the Holy See, to the Service of which they devoted themselves, their Goods, their Children, and their Lives, and swore to it upon their Knees before the Altar, with their Hands upon the Missal which the Nuncio had open, and accordingly he made it a solemn Act and Deed.

The other Piece of Service done the Church in this Assembly by the Care of *Santorio*, was, obtaining the Consent of the Deputies to have set up amongst 'em an Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction, that should be free and independent, in which Causes of Ecclesiasticks as well Civil as Criminal should be determined, and they should be imprison'd and condemn'd according to the Heinousness of their Crimes.

He farther obtain'd a particular Place for the Prison, the better to shew the Authority of his Court, and forgot nothing that might be of Service to maintain the Interests of the Holy See.

The Nuncios formerly enjoy'd all these Privileges among the *Switzers*: But the Pope's neglecting to send them thither, because they would not do them the same Honour as to Crown'd Heads, their Magistrates to return the Slight after the Example of the Republick of *Venice*, took the Ecclesiastical Jurisdiction into their own Hands, imprison'd and punish'd the Church-Men, though the Popes often made a Noise about it. *Santorio* at his coming began with taking this Jurisdiction from them, and setting up, to the Loss of their Sovereign Authority, the ancient Rights of the Church. All which the *Switzers* have since regretted to that Degree, that if the thing were ever to do again they would take care to give their Consent.

Nuncio applied himself chiefly to keep
 in the constant Exercise of Piety and
 and regulated several Abuses that were
 amongst them. To oppose the Diffi-
 Protestants rais'd against his Designs;
 several Monasteries to be set up
 of the *Capuchins*, and particularly in
Apensel, which was called the Neu-
 Canton; and wrote to the General of that
 Order to send him some Monks capable of con-
 firming the Catholicks by their good Example,
 and making Head against the Protestants which
 came from *Geneva* and several other infected
 Places, to spread their false Doctrine amongst
 the People and confirm those that had embraced
 their Errors.

There happen'd some Disorders between the
 Protestants and the Catholicks upon some Points
 which strangely disturb'd the Nuncio, and had
 like to put the Country into a sad Combustion,
 at which the Pope was much concern'd when
 he heard of them. To put in Execution the
 Power of committing Ecclesiasticks to Prison, he
 would have a chief Officer and some Serjeants
 about him, which was indeed an Infringement
 upon the Sovereign Power of the *Cantons*: Yet
 they winked at it out of Respect to the Holy
 See, and the Esteem and Kindness they had for
 the Nuncio.

Having given Order one Day to his Officer to
 arrest a Priest, he follow'd him to a Country
 House which was dependent upon the Protestants.
 He took him and carried him to Prison, tho'
 the Priest protested against it, as it was done
 in a Place where the Nuncio had no Jurisdic-
 tion.

Some Protestants that were Witnesses of this
 illegal Action, presently gave Notice of it to

the Magistrate, who sent to the Catholic to demand the Prisoner, and to command he was taken up in his District.

The Catholic made Answer, *It was his Business and not his, that the Priest should be in Prison, and Application should be made for Justice.* The Protestants reproach'd the Authority the Catholics had given the Nuncio in prejudice of theirs, which they say they see the Consequence of, tho' perhaps a little late; and declar'd they acknowledg'd no Obedience to the Court of Rome, and threatned Reprisal if the Priest was not set free. At last being vexed that they could not carry a thing they thought reasonable enough, they resolv'd to do Violence upon a Curate of their Neighbourhood whom they took out of his House and carried to Prison, to keep him there till the Priest was delivered to them.

This Thing put all the Country in an Uproar, and they got together on one side and t'other to make Opposition or to stand upon the Defensive. The Nuncio gave the Pope an Account of it and received this Answer: *You were sent to Swisserland not to put things into a Flame, but to promote Peace, and procure the Quiet of the Catholics, and not to make the Protestants take Arms against them. Your Business was to have labour'd in the Conversion of these latter, and the Protection of the former. You know the Affair of a Judicature is a Nice Point, and its Honour and Interest soon blasted, and therefore should be managed with great Prudence and Address. These Seditions are much to the Disadvantage of the Catholics, as the Protestants get ground by them. You should therefore do your utmost to prevent such things. I am sensible it would be amiss to make any Concessions to the Hereticks; but yet Nothing should be taken from them for fear of*

the ill Consequence it may produce; and I recommend it to your Care that you treat them with Caution for your own Quiet as well as mine.

This Answer, which was written in *Sixtus* his own Hand, forced the Nuncio, who knew his Humour well enough, to find Means of bringing the Affair to an Accommodation; which was at length concluded on after a long Treaty: And it was granted the Priest should steal out of Prison as if he had deceived his Keepers, and the private way was to get out of the Protestants Hands by the same Method.

At that time above Fifty Thousand Men, *Germans, Switzers,* and other Protestants, declar'd for *Henry King of Navarre,* and took up Arms in his Cause. The *Catholick Cantons* were in a great Fear this Force was coming to discharge its self upon them. They held a Meeting in the Nuncio's House, at which were the Ambassadors of other *Catholick Princes,* and humbly entreated their Assistance in case they should be attack'd. The Nuncio promised all the Pope could do, and sent away a Courier to give His Holiness an Account of what he had done. *Sixtus* wrote immediately to all the *Catholick Cantons* and their Allies in very affectionate Terms: promising to help them with Men and Money if they should be in Distress; and exhorting 'em to remain firm to the *Catholick Religion;* and engaging upon the Faith of a Pope never to forsake them.

Some Days after Fourteen Thousand *Switzers* of the *Catholick Cantons* engaged in the Service of the League upon the King of *France's* Request. The Nuncio being fond of putting in with his Authority every where, had these Troops drawn together, and gave them the Sacrament with his own Hand: And farther, made them swear upon the

the Holy Gospel, which he held out to them, that they would not fight but for the Interests of the Catholick Religion, and if the King made any Proposal to 'em of joining with the Hereticks, they would lay down their Arms and return home immediately.

This sort of Enterprize of the Nuncio, with which the Court of *Rome* was extremely pleas'd, was follow'd by another Trial of his Authority not less considerable. The *Canton of Lucern* intended to Levy in Harvest Time upon the *Peasants of Brone*, a great Quantity of Corn, against the Laws and Decrees of the Popes, which forbid Laicks to raise any Contributions upon Church-Men, for this were aspiring to a Jurisdiction over them. However they had a Mind to throw off this Imposition. The Nuncio was incens'd at it, and according to the ancient Constitutions, forbid the Canons obeying any Injunctions of the Secular Magistrate or acknowledging him; and if they did otherwise, he would not only give an Account of 'em at *Rome*, but excommunicate them too.

The Protestants were not wanting to put the People of *Lucern* upon making it a Point of Honour to preserve their Privileges Independent: Letting 'em know that upon many Accounts they were in Danger of losing all their Liberties; and by allowing the Nuncio such a Jurisdiction, they would from Sovereigns in a short time become Slaves.

The Nuncio was inform'd of all the Protestants had said to make the *Canton of Lucern* fall out with the Court of *Rome*, and thought it *propos* to prevent the ill Effects that might follow upon it. He summon'd the Principal Inhabitants to the Church of *Lucern* without telling them upon what Score. When they were met he ex-

posed the Holy Sacrament upon the great Altar with several lighted Tapers about it. Then placing himself on the left side of it with three Jesuits standing by him; he made a Speech to 'em; setting forth with a great deal of Force and Earnestness the just Reasons he had to complain of them: and forgot nothing that might make 'em sensible of their Faults, and put them upon Repentance. This Discourse being made at one of the greatest Solemnities of our Religion, went so near their Heart, that they shewed a great deal of Regret at what had pass'd, and swore never to demand any thing for the future of the Canons of *Brene*. As soon as they were come out of the Church the Nuncio made it into a solemn Act, which he sent to *Rome*, and a great many of them asked his Pardon assuring him they had been put forward by the Hereticks to insist upon their Pretensions.

When the Business was made up between *France* and *Rome* about changing the Nuncio, which we mentioned before, and the Archbishop of *Nazareth* resided there peaceably, the King wrote to the Pope to ask his Leave to levy a Hundred Thousand Crowns upon the Clergy, with Assurances that he would employ the Money no otherwise than to clip the Power of the Huguenots who encreas'd daily in his Kingdom. He desired the Nuncio, who saw in what Condition his Country was, to write also to his Holiness about it. The Marquis *de Pisani* his Ambassador at *Rome*, was daily pressing *Sixtus* with powerful Arguments, to allow his Master this Favour, who was moved to the Thing purely by Charitable and Christian Principles.

The Pope neither granted nor refused him, but made Answer in the Old Strain of the *Romish* Court, which the Popes make use of when they

they have no great Inclination to oblige Princes; *I will see and do you Justice upon the Matter when I have examined into it*: which is to say, You have no great Reason to expect much from me, nor perhaps any thing at all. This is a Language Ambassadors understand well enough, and which *Sixtus* always gave *Pisani* and sent him back taking time to consider. The King and his Ministers soon discover'd that the League and the Duke *de Guise* had been labouring with his lines to deny what he ask'd. Finding himself bare of Money between the Huguenot Party and the other, thought it his best way to make up Matters with the former, and left it to the Queen his Mother to treat about it, who concluded the Business upon these Conditions; That the Town of *Marans* should remain Neuter, for Freedom of Commerce on both Sides: That the King of *Navarre* should appoint a Governour there of the New Religion: That the Garrison should be half Catholick and half Huguenots: And the King should withdraw his Troops from beyond *Charante*. After these Conditions came several others much to the Advantage of those that profess'd the New Religion.

Paris and the Leaguers were strangely surprized at this Treaty. And the Duke *de Guise* was most struck with it of any body; and sent away a Courier express to *Sixtus*, to whom he writ with his own Hand, that the Interests of Religion were betraying in *France*, and the Huguenots openly favour'd, by putting a Stop to the War which would soon have been ended to the Advantage of the Holy League: That the King withdrew visibly from the Catholick Party, and took all Methods to entertain and strengthen Heresy in his Dominions.

Tho' the King conceal'd his Sentiments from all the World, and No body div'd into his Design, this Peace with the Huguenots gave People disadvantageous Notions of his Conduct; and made the Duke *de Guise* so Jealous, for he was a Man of a quick and clear Sight, that he thought himself obliged to inform his Holiness as he did. As soon as the News came to *Rome* the Pope sent *Pijus*, complain'd of the Proceedings of the King his Master, and with very reproachful Language made almost a Heretick of him. Then he held a Consistory, in which he express'd his Resentment against that Prince, and run on upon the Agreement lately made with the King of *Navarre*, against whom he had sent out his Curfes, and let fly the Thunder of the Church. He sent Orders to the Arch-Bishop of *Nazareth* his Nuncio in *France*, to complain of it in his Name to the King, and tell him; *He should never forget the piercing Affront that was put upon the Holy See by him, which it was impossible but he must resent.*

The Nuncio had already, by the Sollicitation of the Duke *de Guise*, made complaint to the King and forestall'd the Pope's Orders; so that he had nothing new to say when he receiv'd these Instructions. He thought however he must double his Blow, and shew'd the King the Pope's Letter to do the Business more effectually.

The King, tho' naturally of a sweet and moderate Temper, answer'd the Reproaches of the Nuncio with Sharpness. He told him that, seeing the Clergy of his Kingdom were so unwilling to contribute to the Charge of the War like good and Faithful Subjects; and the Difficulty the Court of *Rome* made to grant him the Alienation of a Hundred Thousand Crowns out of the

the Churches Patrimony, he thought he had not acted against his Conscience at all in listning to Proposals of Peace; nor had been wanting to his Duty as a Christian Prince when he procured the Quiet of his Subjects who had been long exposed to the Miseries of War. And farther; it was a strange thing that they would be meddling in the Government of a Country that was at a Distance from them and no Concern theirs, by the way of Letters and Instruction. That a Good Father of a Family should rather look to the Good of his own House, and take care of its Wants, than to leave it to Strangers.

The Nuncio replied, That the only Way to settle his Kingdom in a lasting Peace, was to extirpate Heresy out of it; to hinder new Branches from sprouting up. That the Salvation of the Soul was preferable to all Temporal Advantages; and the War undertaken by the League, was with no other Prospect but to restore Tranquility to *France*, the King of *Navarre* and Prince of *Conde*, who were both of 'em excommunicated, being too weak to make any long Resistance. He added, to bring the King to himself again and divert him from concluding the Treaty, that some Prelates of his Kingdom had never refused contributing to the Necessities of the State, and they were rather better disposed to do so for the time to come: And ended with saying he had full Assurance it would be granted him to alienate the Clergy's Revenue, for his Holiness seem'd very well disposed to it, and made no more Difficulty of treating him very handsomely.

The King seeing the Nuncio return to his Duty, and speak with more Modesty and Respect, was willing to come out of his Passion.
-He

He made it appear to him in a very civil way, that the method to put by the dreadful Inundation of Strangers with which *France* was threatened, was to comply in the present Conjunction, to feign and dissemble. He conjur'd him to assure the Pope, He would never do any thing against the Interests of Religion, the Honour of the Holy See, nor his Opinion. The Nuncio was very well satisfied with the King, and presently gave *Sixtus* an Account of his Audience.

The Ambassadors of the Protestant Princes of *Germany* came to *Paris* upon the Occasion, to treat in Favour of the *Huguenots*. They had Orders to make complaint upon several scores which all came to this, that they demanded a Reason why he had not kept his Word, but had broke several of his Declarations, by which he had promised upon Oath to allow Liberty of Conscience to those of his Subjects who profess'd the New Religion. That he used them so only out of complaisance to the Pope, whose unbounded Ambition and Thirst after Christian Blood made him unworthy of the Title he bore, and to live in a good Understanding with other Sovereigns. They concluded what they had to say with a sort of Threatning, giving him to understand, if the King continued to follow *Romish* Counsels, their Masters who were united with the Protestants in Interest and Religion, would declare for those of *France*.

The King was to the last degree, careful to maintain his Sovereign Authority, and being touch'd to the Quick with this Insolency, made answer, That as he held his Crown only from God he had a Power of making what Laws he pleas'd, Publishing his Decrees, and granting Favours and Privileges as he thought fitting and necessary for the good of his Subjects. And that he was at

T

the

the same Liberty to Change, Annul, and Abrogate them, as Heaven should inspire him to do.

Several other things he said to 'em, to Justifie the Pope upon the Complaints had been made against him, at which they were much confounded. They desired his Majesty to give them his Answer in Writing, which he refus'd to do, and told them; *He was mightily amaz'd at their meddling with the Government of his Kingdom.* The next Day they were Dismiss'd without much Ceremony, or any other Audience; at which they were much surpriz'd and dissatisfied.

The Nuncio that same Day was admitted to the King, who gave him an Account at large of this Audience, and he sent it to the Pope by an Express. *Sixtus* was highly taken with this Generous proceeding, which was so obliging to the Holy See and to himself; and had a Brief prepared with all Expedition for Alienating a Hundred Thousand Crowns of the Church Revenue, to which he added Twenty Thousand more than the King ask'd for; and order'd the Nuncio to put the Church-men upon paying freely without any boggling.

It is not to be imagin'd how far the Pope's diligence went to make the Grandure and Majesty of the Holy See shine out in the Eyes of all People. Upon this he thought it beneath the Character of an Apostolick Nuncio to hire a House at a Prince's Court, and be forc'd to turn out upon the humour or the Necessity of a Landlord. And to save 'em the shame such a Removal put 'em to, he was for Purchasing a Palace agreeable to the Dignity of an Apostolick Minister, in every City where they Rended, which should continue for ever the Nuncio's Lodgings.

To this purpose he gave Orders they should every one enquire out convenient Houses and he would be oblig'd to pay as much for them as they were worth. And he desired the Ambassadors that were at *Rome*, every one of 'em, that they would write to their Masters, and ask, that the thing might be made easy, and that they would lend their assistance to it.

The Senate of *Venice*, who keeps a more watchful Eye than other Potentates upon the Conduct of the Popes, no sooner heard of *Sixtus* his Design, but they order'd their Ambassador to assure his Holiness, that the Republick was so well inclin'd to second his Intentions that they would make a Present of a House, as a free Gift to the Holy See, for the Nuncio's Lodgings at *Venice*; and appointed a very Fine Palace in the Place of *St. Francis of the Vines*, for *Jerom Matteuccy* who then resided there with that Character. They Settled it by way of Gift, and acknowledg'd by the same Act, that this Palace for the future was to be under no Sovereign but of *Rome*. A Copy of this was sent to the Pope, when the Nuncio was in Possession, which they gave him with all the Ceremony and Formality requisite upon the Occasion.

When *Sixtus* was inform'd of this their Liberty both from his Nuncio and the Ambassador of the Republick, he return'd his Thanks to the latter, and sent orders to the other to make an acknowledgment of the Senate's Favour, in the Name of the Holy See: And to express his Gratitude effectually, He gave a Palace in *Rome* to ~~be~~ for the *Venetian* Ambassador for ever. This Building would be fit for an Emperor to Lodge in, if time had not thrown part of it down, there's no more of it kept up at present than what's fit for an Ambassador. It's call'd now

the Palace of *St. Mark*. These presents were on both Sides for the Advantage, of the Residents, for the Honour of the Holy See, and the Glory of the Republick.

The Project met with opposition in other Courts, from Reasons of State, and some Accidental matters that hindred the other Nuncio from getting Houses of their own at the place of their Residence. Some were of opinion *Sixtus* when he came to reflect upon the vast Charge of these new Purchases, was weary of the Design. But who can believe a Pope who had never given back from any of his Projects but where meer Impossibility of bringing 'em to pass had forc'd him, and not the apprehension of any charge they wou'd bring upon him; whose Ambition had fill'd *Rome* and the whole State of the Church with Noble Works and Monuments, could ever lay aside the fairest occasion he ever had of setting out the Grandeur of the Holy See, and establishing an Immortal Memory in the chief Cities of *Christendom*.

Others would have it, that the rest of the Sovereign Princes hearing of the Exchange made with the *Venetians*, made him the same Offer, and *Sixtus* rejected their Proposals because he could not find enough Fine Places at *Rome* for them all. He might upon second Thoughts be afraid it would but produce Jealousies amongst them; for every one would be for having his Palace in the Finest and most commodious part of the Town. And there were like to be Contests about the Choice, which might be expected by those that pretended to Precedency; so that at last instead of contributing as he intended to Unity and Concord among Christian Princes, it would but give occasion to endless Squabbles and Heart-burning. But, which seems to have more

in it than any other Reason, *Sixtus* might apprehend this would at length come to tearing *Rome* to pieces, by putting its fairest Palaces under the Jurisdiction of Foreign Princes; who when they found themselves in perpetual Possession of these Houses, would fortifie them and lay up Magazines to the Disturbance of the Publick Peace. Foreseeing this, he declared he would be content to hire Houses for his Ministers at Foreign Courts, and would provide the same at *Rome* to be let out to those Ambassadors who wanted 'em. And yet methinks this Consideration could not have with-held a Man of his Ambition.

This Year fell out three sad Accidents at *Rome*; in two of which *Sixtus* shew'd his Exact Justice, with the Relation of which we conclude the Seventh Book.

The Pope one Day was holding a Chapel, and there was, as is usual, so great a Concourse of People, that the *Swiss* of his Guard had much ado to make Room with the End of their Halberds. One of 'em with his, unfortunately touch'd a young *Spanish* Gentleman who was lately come to Town with an Uncle of his a great Divine, whose Curiosity to see the Pope had made him get a little forwarder than the rest. This Stranger in his young Blood took it for a great Affront and swore he'd revenge it, which he met with an Opportunity to do but too soon for himself as well as the poor *Swiss*.

The Soldier one Morning was hearing Mass at St. *Peter's* Church, without ever dreaming of what had been threatned him, or knowing he had struck any body with his Halberd: The *Spaniard* found him kneeling at an Altar, and thought it a good time to return the Injury; He catch'd up a Pilgrim's Staff that lean'd a-

gainst a Pillar, there, and gave the *Swiss* such a Blow on the Head that he fell down dead immediately, without having time to be confess'd.

The Murthurer hoped to find Sanctuary in the *Spanish* Ambassador's House, out of the Friendship he had with his Uncle; but his Journey was stopp'd by two other *Swisses* that saw him commit the Fact.

The Pope was in a great Rage when he heard it, and said in a Tone of Anger; *If it so, shall such Villainies be perpetrated under the Pontificate of Sixtus? Is the Exactness of his Justice yet a Secret to any body? I will give such a Proof of it now, as none shall ever question it hereafter.*

He ordered the Governour of *Rome* immediately to be sent for: Who, as soon as he heard of the Accident, which was done almost in *Sixtus* his own Sight, he came running on Foot to shew how ready he was to discharge his Office. When he came to the Pope he found him inspired with a very just Rage, and had these Words from him: *It's a fine thing Master Governour to have Men killed in God's Presence and mine. I'll have you know'tis your Business by a quick and rigorous Execution of Justice, to make amends for the Affront put upon the Majesty of Heaven, and my Authority both.* The Governour answer'd, *That as he came into his Palace he had given Orders to have the Indictment drawn up, and the Prisoner brought immediately upon his Trial.* To which *Sixtus* replied with a Countenance more angry than before: *To what purpose is all this Formality; There's no need of it in such a Case as this is.* The Governour was for persuading him that the ordinary Methods should be followed because this unhappy Gentleman was Nephew of a Divine who was in

in great Repute in *Spain*, and had a great Interest in their Ambassador. *Sixtus* told him, *As many Informations as you please, but I mean to have him hang'd before I sit down to dinner.*

The Governour went upon the *Bulnel* with all possible Dispatch, and examined the Prisoner, whose Trial came so soon, that there was not five Hours Distance between the Murther and the Punishing of it: All which Time the Pope in a great Heat was running to his Window to see him brought by to Execution.

The *Spanish* Ambassador and Four Cardinals of that Nation went to wait upon his Holiness, not to beg the poor Wretches Life, but to entreat only he might die a more honourable way and be beheaded, for the Credit of his Family, and that the whole Kingdom of *Spain* might not be in Confusion upon the Matter. But *Sixtus* answer'd the Ambassador who was the most earnest of any of them; *Such a Crime deserves nothing lesser than a Halter, and it would be a Disgrace to me if I should grant what you ask of me.* In a little time after he was led to the Tree.

As the Pope was at Dinner, he spoke of his own Eagerness to have the Malefactor brought to Justice so speedily, and repeated the Words of *David*; *I have slain in one Day all the wicked of the Earth, to purge the City of God from all those that work Iniquity.* This he spoke with such a Force and Emphasis, as discover'd to all the Standers by the Pleasure he took in punishing the Fault.

Next Morning betimes *Pasquin* had a *Balloon* full of Chains, Axes, Gibbets, and Wheels, and was answering *Marsorio* who ask'd, Whither so fast? *I am going with a Ragout to get the Pope a Sennach;* reflecting upon the Joy he found in the Extremitie of Justice.

The Execution of the Young *Spaniard*, which was heard of before any thing of the Soldier's Death was known, struck a greater Terror than usual into the People of *Rome* and the Neighbouring Places. It's true there was never any such thing seen before, as a Murder committed, the Guilty Person seiz'd, the Witnesses examin'd and confronted, the Trial brought on, and Sentence of Death pronounc'd and execut'd, all this in less than Five Hours. The Pope was well enough pleas'd with himself for this Consternation he had put the People into by the thing, and the Stiffness he had shew'd in refusing to alter the Prisoner's Punishment, tho' at the Instance of the *Spanish* Ambassador, who demand'd it in the Name of the King his Master. This made other Ambassadors charge their Domesticks daily to be careful how they behaved themselves, that they might keep out of the Hands of *Sixtus*, who would allow them no Quarter.

The Count *d' Olivarez* from that time forward never fail'd to bid his People when they went into the Town, to have a special care of themselves and remember what sort of Pope they had to do with. And all the rest of the Foreign Ministers after his Example gave so good Orders to their Officers, that there were no more of those Irregularities to be seen that had been so frequent under the Pontificate of his Predecessor.

He would have a great Respect paid to the Ambassadors of foreign Princes, but he took care at the same time that their Servants should live orderly; and commanded the Chief Serjeant; If any Criminal should go to a Cardinal's House for Refuge, he should not scruple to arrest him there, and that he would stand by him against any body that should find fault.

It was a *Pasquinade* that occasion'd the second Business, which was not less strange nor severe than the other. *Pasquin* one Morning had a dirty Shirt on, and was answering *Marforio* that ask'd the Reason of its being so Nasty; *Because My Lunn-dress made a Princess: Reflecting upon Signiora Camilla, Sixtus* his Sister, for having been conversant in Soap-suds.

Pasquin's Biting Railery being told him, he ordered strict Enquiry to be made after the Author, but not being able to make any Discovery he had this published with Sound of Trumpet; *That he engaged upon the Faith of a Pope, to give his Life and Two Thousand Pistoles to him that made this Pasquinade, provided he would come and confess the thing; and if he were discover'd by any body else, he should be taken up and the Two Thousand Pistoles given to the Informer.*

Tho' the Author of the Jest was at that time Master of his own Secret, the Two Thousand Pistoles were a Temptation he could not resist. He went fairly to *Sixtus* and discovered himself, who was surpris'd at so daring a Confession of the Poor Man and said; *I am bound to keep my Word with you, and do give you your Life, and will have you immediately finger the Money I promised you.*

He had the Two Thousand Pistoles told out to him presently, and after he had asked him if he were content, he added; *You see how exactly I have perform'd my Promise, and am quit with you; But I reserv'd to my self the Power of cutting off your Hands and Tongue to hinder your spreading any more of these Reflections.* He gave Order at the same time to have his Hands cut off, and his Tongue bored through; Not so much for the bloody Railery he had been guilty of against him, but the Confidence of owning it for the Lucre of

of Two Thousand Pistoles. He confin'd the Judge to sentence him, upon his own Confession, to the Punishment he had appointed. It was put in Execution, and the Novelty of the Punishment made People's Hearts ache at Rome; and their Fears were increas'd by another Instance no less remarkable.

A Neapolitan Poet who was Set up at Rome, produced some Verses in praise of some Ladies there. There was One amongst the rest of approved Virtue, but whose Husband was a Lawyer and no Friend of the Authors. After he had said much to the Advantage of this Lady, he concluded thus,

But she none ever yet denied.

A Copy of this Piece of Poetry which went about the Town fell into the Husband's Hands. He carried it to the Pope, who gave Order to the Serjeant that he should take the Poet up, and bring him before him, having a Mind to examine him himself, and have from his own Mouth what he had to say. The Lawyer was afraid he would get out of the Way, and deprive him of his Revenge, and therefore bestirr'd himself, and got him secured that same Night.

The Wretch was in a strange Taking when he was surrounded with Serjeants and carried directly to the Pope. Tho' he was in the dark as to what he was seiz'd for, yet his Conscience began to reproach him for his Fault, when he saw the Lawyer amongst those that took him up.

When he came before the Pope, who had a Copy of these Verses in his Hand, His Holiness ask'd him, *if he were the Author.* The Man made an ingenuous Confession, either in hopes of obtaining Pardon by it, or that he thought there was

Proof against him. *Sixtus* bid the *Silves* till he came to the Place the Woman was abused, and then order'd to fold them up, he asked him what should fall foul upon the Reputation of an honest Woman, and set her forth to the World for a Rumpet. The poor Creature made this Defence; I protest to you Most Holy Father I had not the least Design to blemish this Lady's Honour, and that what is in my Verses to her Disparagement was the mere Effect of a Poetick Licence. Your Holiness knows there's nothing in the World more generally agreed upon, than to allow a Liberty to Painters and Poets; and you may if you please observe that the Word *Fontana* with which one of my Verses ends, for Rhimes sake forced me to make use of that of *Putana*, without any Intent to call the Lady so, but only to give my Verse a better Grace, and Cadence.

All that heard this Defence were ready to burst with laughing except the Pope, who answer'd him with very keen Looks. If you Poetasters take upon you the Liberty of versifying at this rate, I suppose Popes may assume the same Privilege. Let's see what I can perform, what Turn I can give a Verse when I set about it. He was musing one Minute and then pronounc'd these two Lines;

*To do you Justice, Good Matere,
To sb' Gallies I must you prefer.*

Sixtus then ask'd him how he liked this *Ex-tempore* Performance; the poor Man was Thunder-struck and not capable of making any Return, and the Pope ordered him to Prison. The Judge who stood by asked his Holiness if he was in earnest to have him condemn'd to the Gallies.

Sixtus was in a Passion with him, and replied in a rage; You make a scruple of passing such a Sentence upon him, and should well consider the consequences upon the impertinent pretence of Poetick Licence, there would be no paltry dabler in Rhymes, but would take the freedom to call the Sovereign Pontiffs, Mamillus and Califf; and the Arch-heretick Calvin a Great Divine, for the sake of Rhyme, forsooth, and the measure of his Verse, can you think it strange that I am for making an example of one of 'em to put a stop to the practice?

The Governour of Rome brought him upon his Trial that very Day, and Condemn'd him to the Gallies for Five Years; notwithstanding all the Interest that was made by the House of *Ursin*, to which he was related; and tho' Cardinal *Montalto* spoke up for him; he had Dedicated a Poem to that Cardinal which was made upon the Ceremony of the Pope's Coronation, and met with approbation from those who were Judges of it.

As severely as this Author was handled, it did not prevent another *Pasquinade* from appearing in *February*, a more Bloody One still. But whether *Sixtus* was afraid he should but encrease the Number by punishing the Authors, is not certain, or that he thought it below him to take notice of these snarling businesses, or that he was afraid he should at length be the only person griev'd at such Affronts, tho' all Rome had reason to lay them to heart as well as he; he made no great matter of it, and so balk'd those that thought to put him in a Flame by so doing.

One Sunday Morning *Pasquin* was holding a Wet-Shirt to dry in the Sun, and *Marforio* asking, why he did not stay till next Morning to dry it? The Answer was, I have no Time to lose, who knows

Morrow I may be forc'd to pay for
 Aluding to abundance of Taxes Six-
 of late laid upon all things necessary to
 that there seem'd to be nothing free but
 and the Heat of the Sun. When Six-
 of this Pasquinade, he mus'd a while
 and then said, *If he knew the Author he'd*
dry something else in the Sun besides his
 But took no care to discover him, being
 ent to revenge it by neglect.
 o' he had an utter Aversion to all sorts of
 and Punish'd severely those that threw a-
 Scandals and Falsties, and set themselves
 te Libels of Defamation; yet he was pleas'd
 sharp and pretty Raillery, and would say to
 e that brought him *Pasquinades* which had wit
 em; *If those that lose their time in these Trifles,*
ould make better use of their Parts, I should take
asure to advance their Fortunes.

Philip Buon Compagnon, Cardinal, Nephew to
 e Gregory XIII. Died in June of a Malignant
 er; neither his Youth nor the Strength of
 s Constitution which was back'd with a Regu-
 ar Course of Life being able to secure him. The
 Pope went Twice to see him in his Illness. It
 was commonly said he made him the first Visit
 out of the Friendship he had for him. But o-
 thers thought they div'd farther into the Pope's
 heart when they laid it upon his Design to pump
 the Cardinal for some Secrets in the manage-
 ment of Affairs in his Uncle's time, which he
 cou'd never get out of him, tho' he us'd him ill
 to bring him to a Confession. His Holiness
 thought this was the Critical Minute, and in-
 deed was in private with the Cardinal above
 half an Hour. The Second Visit he made him
 to consult at his expiring, to give him his Benedi-
 ction, as is usual at the Point of Death.

The Life of

This Cardinal left his Heirs v
 sides a great deal of noble Furniture
 abundance of Legacies to Cardinals and
 Religions, and his Bounty extended ev
 Pope, and his Nephew the Cardinal de
 but his Offices and Domesticks were
 better for him.

The Office of Grand-Penitentiary
 Uncle had given him being now Vacant
 Death, every body expected the Pope would
 stow it (for it was one of the Finest, and
 considerable places belonging to the Court)
 on his Nephew, and till he came to Age to
 charge it that some Vice-Penitentiary should
 appointed. But his Holiness would let the World
 see that he was not guilty of Nepotism, w
 a place of such importance was to be fill'd ;
 it appear'd he look'd purely at Merit, by giv
 it in Three Days Time to Cardinal *Aldrobandi*
 a Man of Learning and Virtue, who had do
 good Service to the Holy See in several Emplo
 ments that he had been in. The whole Court
Rome rejoic'd at the choice his Holiness
 made, and bless'd him for being so Just. The
 Cardinal Dean to express his satisfaction said in
 a full Consistory ; *I wish all that come after his*
Holiness may pick out as fit persons for such a place.
 Cardinal *Aldobrandine* as soon as he had possess
 sion, answer'd every body's expectation ; and
Sixtus who constantly acted by his prudent Coun
 sels was the first to confess he was highly pleas'd
 with his Service.

THE EIGHTH BOOK.

THE Plenty *Sixtus* caused at *Rome* when other parts of *Italy* were under great Necessities, and the many Fine Buildings he had fill'd the City with, won the Hearts of the People so far, that those of *Rome* at the Beginning of the Year Erected a Statue of Brass for him in the place of the Capitol, with this Inscription; *To Sixtus V. Sovereign Pontiff, for Establishing Publick Tranquility, for suppressing Assassins and Banditti, relieving the People in Distress, and adorning the City with Buildings, New Streets and Mountains.*

This Year Two Things happen'd to him pleasant enough, which may divert the Reader. He went one Morning betimes to view the Apostles Convent, without giving any notice to the Warden before-hand (as sometimes he would do) at first he knock'd at a *Neapolitan* Batchelour's Door, who was but newly come to *Rome*: this Batchelour not imagining the Pope Visited Religious Houses at that Hour without any Guard or Attendants, ask'd very bluntly, *Who knock'd so hard at his Door?* *Sixtus* Answer'd, *'Tis the Pope.* The Brother who was but half Awake thinking it was one of his Companions that had a mind to put a Trick upon him, bid him *Walk off*, in no very Courteous Language. The Warden that waited on his Holiness being highly offended at such a piece

a piece of Insolence, was for breaking the Door, and punishing the Monk: But he concluded he did not know who he spoke therefore would not suffer the Warden saying as he went away; *He hath lifted from off the Death-hill*, alluding to his own Birth, and the Batchelour's unmannerly speaking. This Adventure was Talk'd of all over the Town, and made the Cardinals and Ambassadors laugh heartily: nor could *Sixtus* bear whenever the thing was mention'd.

Another Day as he was passing through the City he alighted from his Coach at the Gate of the same Convent which he found open: He went into the Porter's Chamber, who was a Convert Brother, and was just then eating a Dish of Beans: The Meanness of the Banquet brought to his mind what his condition had formerly been: He sat him down upon the Stairs by this Brother and help'd him to eat his Mese with the better Stomach of the Two, and when that was gone he order'd another to be brought.

Those of his Retinue that saw him fall to at that rate were very much Surpriz'd at it, but he took no notice of 'em, and eat his Beans with some Oyl; and which is most remarkable, out of a Wooden Spoon. He gave his Host thanks, then turn'd to his Attendants, and said; *This Meal will keep me Alive Two Years longer than I should have liv'd without it, I eat with an Appetite and without fear and uneasiness.* Then lifting up his Eyes, said, *Thanks be to God that has been so favourable to a Pope, as once in his Life to let him eat in peace and quietness.* And in truth he had reason to fear the Fate of some of his Predecessors; and which he could not provide against, whatever care he took of his Eating, tho' he forbid his going out of his Kitchen, and having any acquaintance abroad. He

the Habit to the Convert Brother
 treated him so well and with his Be-
 said to him; *Once lived in the Con-*
see that you be some time or other in
I am now.

Year he had the Satisfaction of holding
 ral Chapter of his Order, and allow'd the
 us that had no Voice to come thither as
 as those that had, that he might please him-
 with being in so famous an Assembly: And
 or fear such a Crowd should put the House out
 of Order, he provided all things necessary for
 such an extraordinary Concourse, which was the
 greatest and most numerous had ever been seen
 upon the Occasion. It was thought *Sixtus* was
 ambitious of shewing himself Pope to all the Bro-
 thers who had seen him no more than Monk.
 They were forced to get them Lodgings out of
 the Convent, in which they had made Provision
 for Three Hundred.

The Pope had a Mind to assist at one of their
 Assemblies, and once did them the Honour of
 sitting in their Hall, having Two Cardinals in
 his Company: The Entertainment was Noble.
 His Holiness drank to all the Society, and to
 make the thing still more gay and chearful, the
 Monks Silence was dispens'd with.

Several of them petition'd him for the Gene-
 ralship, but he left the Chapter at Liberty to
 choose whom they pleas'd; for fear the Order
 should think that he had not been at the Expence
 of this Assembly but to get a General chose that
 was at his Devotion; though he might in-
 deed have named One without advising with the
 Chapter.

He took it however amiss that the principal
 Religious were not so civil to ask him, if it had
 been but for Decency sake, which of the Two

His Holiness was most inclined to nothing of this appear, only his Nephew's Youth and small Experience did not prevent him from going to the Bottom of Things. He was sensible of this want of Breeding and Gravity, and told the Pope, *These People did not understand their Duty.* Sixtus smiled and returned answer, *I have known of old, Nephew, what they are capable of.*

He forbid any publick Speeches in his Prædication, and the usual Panegyricks at the Naming of the Questions that were to be defended in this Chapter, Two of which were address'd to Himself by the Respondents. One Act he had kept in the Pope's Chapel where the Ablest Divines disputed. Amongst the rest there was a *Dominican* Monk whose Eagerness made him launch out so far, that several Cardinals were highly offended, and said, *Such an Insolent Fellow ought to be silenced.* But Sixtus let him spend all his Shot, either out of Respect to his Order, which was become considerable by the Memory of *Pius V.* or that he was pleas'd to see all Life and Fire in such Performances; and said to the Cardinals who were out of Patience at the Indecency of the Monk's Behaviour: *I should do just the same were I in his Place, it is not possible to keep one's Temper in such a Case.*

When the Chapter was up he would have all the Religious and their new General at the Head of 'em come in Procession to the *Vatican* and kiss his Feet, and assured them they should all meet with Favour from him: And he sent them this Message by the Cardinal Protector of their Order before the Procession was appointed; *That he intended to confer something on every particular Man without excepting any, and they might consider what it was they had most Mind to; that it was*

more

...*Notice of.*
 ... of 'em shew'd abundance of Joy.
 ... Protector brought this News and be-
 ... himself of something suitable to his Low
 ... They gave God Thanks for bringing
 ... this Chapter. The Religious of other
 ... ers envid'd their good Fortune, and amongst
 ... rest the *Dominicans*, who grumbled already
 ... at *Pius V.* had done no more for them; And
 ... that which made 'em most out of Humour upon the
 Occasion was, that *Sixtus* had been always per-
 secuted by his Order, whereas *Pius* was ever
 treated with a profound Respect and Veneration
 by theirs. The Cardinals on their part found
 something to say against this Liberality, which
 they call'd Prophaning what was Sacred. They
 had no Patience to see such Prodigality of
 a Sovereign Pontiff to Monks, when he had
 done the least thing for the Sacred Col-

The Pope took care to give them Notice the
 day before, that they might be prepared to ask
 for something that pleas'd 'em. The News of
 it soon spread its self about Town, and *Pasquin* was
 seen, at the same time they were going in a Body
 to the *Vatican*, with a Cardinal's Habit at his
 Feet and going to put on a Monk's, with this in
 his Mouth, *It's better as things go to be a Monk
 than a Cardinal.* But *Rusticucci* who knew the
 Pope's Humour better than another Man, said to
 one that spoke to him of the thing; *You must stay
 till Night before you commend a good Day, there's
 a Mystery in the Matter which Time will un-
 fold.*

Sixtus waited the Brothers coming in the Hall
 where the Consistory is held; He sat in the

Pontifical Chair with a Secretary at his side to write down the Name and the Office of every Monk as they came in their Order to His Holiness's Feet.

The General came first; and throwing himself at the Pope's Feet he gave him Thanks for his Election in a most dutiful Manner, and then asked; *That he would grant him the Honour of Protection, and continue him in the Post that he had been presented to by a Chapter summon'd by His Holiness's Order, and supported by his Bounty.*

The Rest that came after had their Petitions registred after kissing the Pope's Feet; a great many of them diverted Sixtus with their Odd and Extravagant Demands.

There was One of 'em desired a Brief to prohibit all the Religious upon pain of Excommunication, *To have any quarrel with him, to injure him by Word or Deed.* It was not without Reason he wanted such a Safeguard; for he was a insolent Incurable Fellow who often provok'd the Brothers to use him ill, and was indeed an Aversion of the whole Clöyster.

Another petition'd for the Liberty of having Two Chambers in the same Convent, in which he might do whatever he would, without being under Check of any Superior, not so much as the Pope himself, that he submitted freely to all the Discipline of his Order in all other Places of the Convent, only he would enjoy an absolute Freedom in his own Apartment; *In which he might shut himself upon any Occasion and No body have any thing to do to fetch him out; and if he should commit any fault elsewhere which deserv'd Correction he might betake himself to one of his Cells to examine himself whether he was disposed to submit to Punishment, and might have the Liberty of altering the Penalty as he should see fit.*

A certain *Neapolitan* Convert Brother, after kissing the Pope's Feet, ask'd *Leave to tell him his Want in private*; and whispering in his Ear desired his Permission, to *Quit his Habit and Marry, or that he might make choice of a Courtesan and keep her, the Warden having no Authority allow'd him to hinder it.*

A Batchelour of *Bologna* desired; *He might have a Brief granted him to preach in all Churches he pleas'd as well Regular as Secular and at what Time he pleas'd, without any farther Approbation of his Superiours or the Ordinaries, and to have the sole Disposal of such Contributions as should be made him, to employ them for his own Use.*

The Simplicity of an old Dotard of Seventy seven made the Pope laugh heartily and the Register too. He was a Monk of the Province of *Rome*, who had assisted at Seven General Chapters before, and got himself carried to *Rome* out of Curiosity to see one more before he died. He kiss'd the Pope's Feet, and then said; *I wish, Holy Father you would be so kind to grant that I may live ten Years longer, and I shall think my self hugely beholding to you: but since that's more than is in your Power, and Heaven alone can do it, I ask only Indulgences till the Point of Death, which I apprehend very near.* He pronounc'd these Words with so good a Grace that the Pope made him Answer; *He wish'd it in his Power, with all his Heart, to work this Miracle for his sake, but he must do himself Justice and wait for Death without Regret and Impatience.*

No Man can imagine whither the Folly of most of the Monks transported them; some of 'em offended the Pope heinously, thinking nothing could be denied them, not so much as a Cardinal's Hat. Some asked for Arch-Bishopricks, others Bishopricks, Abbeys, and the Inferior

Preferments of the Church. Several of 'em had a Mind to things appropriated to other Orders, as the Office of Master of the Palace of which the *Dominicans* are in possession; this was desired by a Young Batchelour. And some of 'em were bespeaking Bishopricks which were not yet void.

If the Pope had hearkned to those that aim'd at the Offices of their Order, he had turn'd all their Monastick Institutions topsieturvie: While These were for being made perpetual Provincials of their Province; and those Visitors of *Italy* for their Lives with a Faculty to visit what Province they thought fit. Some desired Briefs to choose those Convents they liked best; Others not to remove from the Houses whereabouts they were born. A great many petition'd for Money to build them Lodgings according to their own Fancy: Another Part of 'em wanted Pensions of a Hundred, Two Hundred, or Three Hundred Crowns, to pass their Time more agreeably. And there was a great Number of them entreated His Holiness would grant 'em Briefs to take their Leave of the Cloyster. Towards the End came a Convert Brother of Threescore Year old, who had spent Thirty of 'em as Cook and Pantler of the *Apostle's* Convent; and was well known to the Pope. This poor Soul wept as he kiss'd his Feet, and made his Suit thus; *Most Holy Father I am a miserable Convert Brother, and the Meanest of the Religious, who dare not hope for any Favour from your Holiness; and the Honour you do me in permitting me to wait on you now you are Head of the Church, who have seen you but a plain Monk, forbids me to wish for any thing further. A piteous Convert Brother as I am must not presume to ask any Kindness of a Sovereign Pontiff as you are. However, since your Holiness has pleas'd*

pleas'd to make me of the Number of those you intend to gratifie to day; I beg with most profound Humility You'll be so charitable to make a Fountain in our Convent, which is mightily incommoded for want of Water, as You know full well by the Trouble you have been often at to get it.

It was reported this Speech of his drew Tears from the Pope, and what comes after will excuse his being so much touch'd with it. When all the Religious had kissed his Feet, they were brought into the same Hall again that they came out of to prevent all Confusion, and his Holiness spoke to them thus; *If Your Desires had been answerable to my Good Intentions, I had granted them with a great deal of Pleasure; but now by the Absurdity of your Requests, and under a Necessity of refusing them all in general. I did not imagine any of you would have been bent upon his private Interest, thinking all would have look'd at the Common Benefit of Religion. Do not the Vows you are under oblige You to renounce every private Consideration? Can Men truly Religious in Honour and in Conscience wish for any thing what promotes the good of their Order in general? Your Covetousness has shut up my Hand, and should think my self guilty of a great Sin, if I opened them to gratifie it by my Favours.*

Thus did he dismiss the Folks sufficiently mortified and disgraced: The more so, that of Six Hundred Religious there was only one Convert Brother that had the Advantage of his House near his Heart. The Pope promised his Request should be granted, commended his Zeal, and spoke to the General in his Behalf.

When the Matter was talk'd about Town, all those who had at first condemn'd the Pope's Prodigality approved of what he had done; and apprehended His Holiness had no other Design but to expose the Sottish Ambition of Most of the

Monks. Next Morning *Pasquin* was putting on his Cardinal's Habit again, and saying; That *Mortification for Mortification a Body had better be in the Sacred College than the Cloyster.* Cardinal *Rusticucci*, who had all along suspected how sharply *Sixtus* would deal with them, finding he had guess'd what the Business would come to, said to some of the other Cardinals: *Whoever don't know the Pope, will be vilely deceiv'd in him; and Whoever does know him won't trust him farther than he can see him.* One of the Company made Answer: *He did us the Honour to make us his first Culleys.*

Next Morning His Holiness gave the necessary Orders for keeping his Word with the Convert Brother, whose Petition pleas'd him so much that he said before a great many; *That this was a Work of such absolute Necessity to the Convent, which suffers mightily for want of Water, that He had Himself been often tired with getting up Water for his own Chamber, which had made him lame; that Wells were so deep and a Religious Life Troublesome; that he had engaged this Brother put him in Mind of the Scarceness of Water in that Convent and the Want of a Fountain, which he had often thought of before he was Pope.*

He went himself to the Place with an Architect and an Engineer, to mark out where the Fountain would be most convenient, and allow'd them the same Water he had brought to *Monte Cavallo*. And because the Gardeners of the Palace could easily stop its Course, the Monks of the *Apostles* Convent compounded the Business with them paying them a certain small Allowance.

This Water is a mighty convenience and Ornament to the House into which it is distributed very handsomely. It is all receiv'd at first in a Cistern

Cistern that has the Pope's Arms upon it, and stands in the Middle of the Cloyster, and from thence is carried by several Pipes. This same Water is laid to the entrance into the Hall, to wash the Monks Hands, and some of it is turn'd into the Kitchen, where there is a Cock over the Copper, much to the satisfaction of the Cook. This Convent is certainly the best serv'd with Water of any in *Rome*, for which they are behold- ing to the Zeal of that Brother, whose Gene- rous Request mov'd *Sixtus* to such a piece of Cha- rity.

His Holiness Establish'd Fifteen Congregations of Cardinals, as appears from one of his Consti- tutions insert'd in his Bullary, where they are particularly mention'd. Some that were set up before, he alter'd so much, as may justly give him the Title of Author of them. His Succes- sors suppress'd some of them, but establish'd o- thers in their room, that the Number is still main- tain'd. The Reader may be pleas'd with a Short Account of them all.

The First Congregation is that of the *Holy Of- fice*, set up at first by *Paul IV*, reform'd by *Pius V*, and brought into better Order by *Sixtus*. They Meet Twice a Week, on *Wednesday* in the Con- vent of *Minerva*; where the Court of Inquisition is kept by the *Dominicans*; and on *Thursdays* when the Pope is present upon Affairs of He- resy. This Assembly is to consist of Twelve Cardinals at least, of the Pope's choosing, and a great many Divines of several Religious Or- ders.

The Congregation of the *Affairs of the Bishops and the Regulars* takes cognizance of all the Dis- putes between the Bishops and those of their Di- oceses, whether Secular or Regular. The Pope appointed this to free himself from the trouble

of all the Differences that happen between Prelates and their Clergy. He order'd them to make all their Complaints in this Court, which Sits every Friday in that Cardinals Palace who is President of the Assembly. And sometime there are so many Petitions and Complaints that there is not time to read 'em all.

He Erected another Congregation, concerning the Execution of the Canons of the Council of Trent, in which there was abundance of difficulty rose at First, and he was mightily troubled with it. It was the business of this Congregation to explain the Text of these Canons, and whenever any Contest happen'd about the Discipline and practice of the Church, let it be in what part of *Christendom* it would, Application was to be made to this Court for a Resolution of the matter. They meet in the Eldest Cardinal's House that is of the Number, tho' he be not the Chief who has a power of Summoning them. They Sit generally Twice a Week, *Saturdays* and *Thursdays*.

Another he set up, call'd the Congregation of the State, which is necessary enough to take care of the Government of the Church. It is compos'd of all the Cardinals that have been Nuncios from the Apostolick See, and his Holiness's Secretary of State. It is held for the most part in the Pope's presence, and when he can't be there, they Meet at the Cardinal Nephew's House.

The Congregation of *Rites and Usages* owes it's Institution to *Sixtus*. It takes Cognizance of the Differences that happen about Customs, Ceremonies, and Precedency, and the Canonization of Saints; the Eldest Cardinal is Chief there. He takes care to Summon them once a Month, and oftner if he thinks fit, This Right of Summoning

moning the Members belongs to the chief of every Assembly.

He Set up the Congregation of *Waters*, which has the Charge of Rivers and keeping Bridges in Repair. The Pope Erected this to rid his hands of the trouble he would otherwise have had with the Water he had brought to *Rome*. The Eldest Cardinal Presides in it, and appoints a Meeting as often as he sees occasion.

Besides this Last, there is Another for the *Streets and Fountains*, of which the Cardinal *Cammerlingo* is President, who calls them together at the Eldest Cardinal's House when he thinks fit. Their Business is about Canals and Aqueducts, by which the Water is brought to *Rome*, how it shall be distributed; and of the Adorning the Streets, and making them convenient. The Pope appointed this for the sake of the New-Streets he had made, which he would have kept up for ever.

There is also the Congregation of *Index*, which has a Right to Judge of all Books that are Printed, and to pass Censures upon 'em. A Cardinal is President, and calls a Court as often as he pleases. *Sixtus* Set up this for the sake of the Printing he was about to Establish at *Rome*.

The Congregation of *Consultation* for the Government of the Holy Church was set up by him. The Cardinal Nephew presides the First Time, but no more. Cardinal *Peretti*, *Sixtus's* Nephew, made appear to 'em that his capacity for Business was very great, and gave a general Satisfaction. This Company is made up of Six Cardinals, Six Prelates, and one Secretary, who is commonly a Confident of the Cardinal Nephew; they are Summon'd to his House every *Friday*. Whatever relates to the Government of the Church is there consider'd. To this Court the Vice-
Legates

Legates, Governours, and other Officers of the State, have recourfe when and whatever extraordinary Affairs fall out, and fuch as have Difficulty in 'em, in the Discharge of their places, and the Congregation deliberates upon the matter. The Secretary writes down the Result, and brings it to the President and the Prelates that are at the Assembly to Sign. They divide the Provinces of the State amongst themselves, and every one Reports the Affairs of his Province to the Assembly. The Legateship of *Avignon*, the Government of *Benevento* in the Kingdom of *Naples*, and the City of *Cenada* in the *Venetian* Territories, are not under the Jurisdiction of this Court, but the Governours have an Absolute Authority there. The State and Government of *Fermo* as well as *Spoletto* enjoy the same exemption. The Prelates of this Assembly have Three Quarters of the Profits of the Palace divided amongst them, which comes to a Thousand Crowns perhaps in all for every ones share, and the Secretary has Two Shares.

The Congregation of *Griefs and Good Order* is also owing to the Establishment of *Sixtus*, in which the Cardinal Nephew presides. It examines into Vexatious and Injurious Businessses, and makes provision accordingly. They Sit every *Saturday* in the same place where *The Consultation* meets, but one after another. It's compos'd of Four or Six Cardinals, and Six or Eight Prelates and One Secretary, which are always the same as those of *The Consultation*. All the Instruments are Sign'd by the Cardinal Nephew and the other Commissioners, who have the same Perquisites as the other Congregation, with the privilege of wearing Purple, and the Quality of the Pope's Domesticks.

The Congregation of *Coins* is another of *Sixtus's* appointing. They have a Jurisdiction over all the Money of the *Ecclesiastical State*, and to regulate and fix what Foreign Money shall go at in the Dominions of the Holy See. This Congregation consists but of Four Cardinals chosen by the Pope, and some of his Chamberlains. One of the Cardinals who is President calls them together at his House, according to the occasions that happen.

In the last place, he Erected the Congregation of the *Affairs of the Consistory*, the Setting up of which is of great use to the Pope, and he thought of it before he came to the Holy See. The Dean of the Sacred College Presides, but they seldom sit, and when they do 'tis without affixing any Day, but upon Business which his Holiness brings before 'em; and that is chiefly upon the Resignation of Bishopricks, or Taxes upon Ecclesiastical Funds, and such like. The President calls a Meeting in his own Palace when there is any thing refer'd to 'em. But the Cardinal Nephews, who at present do every thing, suffer but very little to come before this Court.

These are Twelve out of the Fifteen Congregations which *Sixtus* Set up, and these are still maintain'd; while his Successors have put down Three, they have Erected Three in their room, which still keeps up his First Number, and to give a Short Account of 'em, they are these.

Clement VIII. Establish'd the Congregation for Examination of *New Bishops* by the Constitution of which that Pope Examined them Himself, and particularly such as had Studied the Civil Law. He committed the Examination of Divines to Cardinal *Bellarmino*. This Congregation is never held but in presence of the Pope; it is made up of Six or Eight Cardinals, a certain Number

of Prelates, and some Doctors of several Orders. There Persons are Examined which the Pope promotes to Bishopricks, that is to say in *Italy*, for the other Sees are exempted. He that is Examined kneels upon a Cushion before the Pope, and all the Members of the Assembly have a Right to ask him Questions; and when he has pass'd this, the Secretary of the Congregation Registers his Name. And if a Bishop that has long been possess'd of a Foreign See come to be admitted to one of *Italy*, he must submit to Examination, unless he be a Cardinal; for the Sacred College is exempted from these Impositions. When a Bishop has once pass'd Examination he may take a new See without it. The Approbation of a Man is not sufficient for a Bishoprick; but he must go through these Forms. He must in the First place make profession of his Faith between the Hands of a Cardinal; which they call Proposing, and the Pope names him amongst the Cardinals that is to Officiate: In the next place an Oath is taken of Witnesses, who depose what condition the See is in that they are to fill, and concerning the Birth, Quality, Life and Manners of the Person propos'd. After this the same Cardinal orders his Auditor to draw up an Instrument in Form, which is Sign'd by the Cardinal Vicar's Notary, or by the Auditor of the Chamber. The Person propos'd, produces at the same time the Testimonial of his Doctor's Degree, with his other Titles and Privileges, if he has any, and his Letters Demissory, Certificates, and Instruments of his Orders. Then other Witnesses are heard, to prove him Born in lawful Wedlock, that his Father and Mother were never under suspicion of any Heresies, and that he has lived Thirty Years in Conformity to the Canons of the Council of *Trent*. Next an Inquest

Inquest is made into the Quality and Revenue of the Bishoprick; in what Province the See is; if it holds immediately of the Pope; or be Suffragan to some Archbishoprick; what extent of Ground it has; how many Villages there are in the Dioceses; the Number of Souls, as near as can be guess'd; how many Monasteries, and what Reliques are in Veneration there; the Yearly Revenue of the Church; the Number of Canons; the different Dignities of all the Clergy; if there be any Seminary there; how many Nunneries; how many Parishes and Bells; and more of the same sort. The Cardinal that proposes him Signs the Instrument, then sends it to the Three Cardinals that are chief of the Order; to revise it, after which they Sign, and send it back to the same Cardinal between whose hands the Person still remains. They make a Report of this in the First private Consistory; and at the next he is propos'd in a *Latin* Speech, briefly comprehending the Testimonial of his Life and Manners. But before the Cardinal proposer makes mention of the See that is to be fill'd, the Candidate gives into the Hand of the Steward of the Sacred College Two Blank Bills Sign'd by his own Hand, in which he engages to pay the Cardinal, the Apostolick Chamber, the College, and the Officers of the Chancery, their Fees for his Instruments. The Day before the Person is propos'd the Cardinal proposer sends a Copy of the Instrument to his Brethren, that every one of 'em may consider if there be any thing to object against the Person who is no sooner propos'd but the Cardinal turns to the Pope, and then to the Dean of the College, and asks if they have any thing to say against it? If either stops him he gives his Reasons for so doing: If they let him pass, they rise up and give their approbation.

Then the Pope presents the Candidate to his Bishoprick by a Decree, and the Cardinal Vice-Chancellor takes a Copy of it. Upon this Decree the Cardinal fills up the Blank Bills and Seals them, and another of the Vice-chancellor's, which contains Instructions to have the Bulls expedited. The Fees of the Cardinal proposer are Fifteen Ducats *per Cent.* according to the Revenue of the Bishoprick; and when the Pope himself proposes, the Fees goes to the Apostolick Secretaries. When a Cardinal is propos'd who was never at *Rome*, he is to pay the same, but if he appear or hath been before at the Pope's Court, he is excus'd. The New Prelate stays at Home all the Morning the Day that he is Propos'd, and takes care to have a Coronet got ready: After Dinner he puts on the Episcopal Habit, with a Hat edg'd with Green and a Band of the same Colour: then he goes to wait upon the Pope and is Introduc'd by the Chamberlain to Kiss his Holiness's Feet. He brings a Rochet, which His Holiness puts on with his own Hand; then he Visits all the Sacred College, beginning with the Dean, but is not oblig'd to go according to Seniority in waiting upon the rest of the Cardinals. Those that are out of *Italy* when they are nam'd to a Preferment, are to perform all these Formalities when they come there, excepting the Examination, and those who do not come thither at all do all this by a Deputy.

Sixtus brought up the greatest part of these Forms, to preserve which he Erected a Congregation; but it was afterwards thought requisite to enlarge their Number. And indeed *Clement VIII.* has Made such Alterations, casting away some and putting others in their Room, as gives him the Title of Founder, tho he did but improve the Plan laid by *Sixtus*.

The Second Congregation is that *De propaganda fide*, instituted by Gregory XV. to find out the Means possible of establishing the Catholick Religion all the World over. They sit one Monday in the Month, and the Pope is present, tho' it is often in the Palace of their own Building. This Congregation is composed of several Cardinals, one Apostolick Prothonotary, the Pope's Secretary of State, and One Judge who is oftentimes a Referendary to them both, the Judge Lateral of the Holy Office, and the Secretary to the Congregation.

All Persons that have the Devotion to take a Journey to Rome after their Conversion are lodged in this Palace, which is very large, and situate in the Place of *La Trinite del Mont*. Poor Bishops are also entertain'd here, and allow'd all things necessary. There is a Printing-House set up there with Types for all manner of Languages, to Print Breviaries, Missals, and other Books used by the Church of Rome.

Lastly, Urban VIII. erected the Congregation of *Ecclesiastical Immunities*. He saw a Necessity for this when he was Nuncio, upon Account of several Exemptions he used to be troubled with. The Pope's Sentiments of the Matter being requisite, His Holiness referr'd it frequently to some Commissioners, which lengthen'd out the Business till it grew tedious. This made him resolve upon setting up a Congregation to determine what came within *Ecclesiastical Immunity* and what did not. They sit every Tuesday at the Eldest Cardinal's House, and must be Cardinals, an Auditor of the *Rota*, a Clerk of the Chamber, an Advocate of the Signature, and a Referendary of both. The President keeps the Seals, and has a Pension of Seven Hundred Gold Crowns.

Whilst *Sixtus* was thus employ'd to bring *Rome* and the *Ecclesiastical State* into the best Order, *Queen Elizabeth* of *England* was no less diligent to destroy his Religion in her Kingdom. It was with a heavy Heart that he saw his Authority trampled upon in so considerable a Part of *Europe*; yet neither the Pain it was to him, nor the perpetual Complaints he made to foreign Ministers and in the Consistory, hindred him from valuing this Princess and saying a great deal of Good of her. She on her Part had no less Esteem for *Sixtus*, and would often say, *If she could be sure That Pope had a great while to govern the Church, she would find Means out of an Accommodation with Rome.* Which being told the Pope moved him to say, *There could be nothing so glorious for him, as to be of the same Communion with that Princess.*

She had kept *Mary Queen of the Scots* a long time Prisoner. This Unfortunate Lady was Daughter of *James Stuart* the Hundred and Fifth King of *Scotland*. She had nothing for her Share but a Part in those Disorders which afflicted four Kingdoms: Tho' her Incomparable Beauty made her worthy to give Laws to *Europe*. She had always express'd a great Zeal for the *Catholick Religion*: And it was her firm persisting in the way of the *Romish Church*, together with the Respect she maintain'd for the Pope, which cost her her Liberty, and after her Life.

During her Captivity all Christian Princes made Application to *Queen Elizabeth*, and employ'd their Ambassadors to obtain her Freedom. The Concern they shew'd for her did but increase the *Queen's Jealousy*, who answer'd, *Mary was already condemn'd*, and in short, had her declared guilty of High Treason in the Parliament that met at *London*. When this Sentence was

past.

she would have the World see that she look'd at Justice less than her own private Resentments, and sent an Ambassador into France to inform the King and Queen of it. And at the same time sent a Letter to the Queen of Scots, to let her know the Resolution of her Parliament, who received the News with abundance of Resolution. She thanked the Messenger, and looked upon him with an Air of Sweetness; then made him a small Present, excusing herself that it was no better, upon the low Circumstances she was reduced to. She express'd upon the whole a great Satisfaction in going to leave a fading Kingdom for one that is durable.

The King of France in the mean time, as he was bound to lend his Assistance to this Princess who was his Sister in Law, sent *Bellievre* into England with Instructions, in which every Particular of the Accusation upon which Sentence of Death had pass'd, was answered. This Ambassador's Charge was to give it out publickly, that he had Orders to move for *Mary's* Life in the Name of his Master and all the French.

When the Pope heard of the most Christian King's sending an Ambassador upon this Account, he said in a full Consistory, after appointing publick Prayers for the poor Queen that was Prisoner; that Sovereign Princes did not use to engage in such terrible Enterprizes with so little Resolution, as to leave it in the Power of a single Minister to divert them from their purpose. And another time talking at Supper with his Nephew about the Success of *Bellievre's* Embassy, was heard to say; *I don't know what Queen Elizabeth intends to do with the Queen of Scots; but I know what I should do if I had a King Prisoner in my Country.*

The Cardinals of the *French Faction* entreated the Pope to give Leave Prayers of Forty Hours might be appointed in all Churches of *Rome*; beg of Almighty God he would assist with his gracious Influence, the Most Christian King's Ambassador in an Affair which was of such Importance to all *Christendom*. The Pope gave his Consent, and ordered the Cardinal Vicar to have the Holy Sacrament every where exposed, tho' he did imagine saving the Queen of *Scots* was the Good Reason and not the True one of *Bellievre's* going: And that his Business in *England* was to treat of a more agreeable Affair, and more for the Advantage of his Master; which made His Holiness upon a time out with it to Cardinal *Farnese*; that he was persuaded things were not as they seem'd to be. And in truth, it was not long before it appear'd the Ambassador had lost his Labour for the Queen of *Scots*, and some took the Liberty of saying, *He did not cross the Seas but to animate the Council of England to make her away*. A Cardinal that had his Reasons about him told his Friends, *No body had dived so deep into the Mystery as the Pope*.

Bellievre's secret Instructions were amongst other things to press Queen *Elizabeth* to use the Authority she had over the King of *Navarre*, the Prince of *Conde*, and the Viscount de *Turenne*, to bring them to conclude a Peace. He was also to understand how this Princess was disposed to a League that had been propos'd between Her and some *German Princes*, and to make a firm and lasting Treaty between them. *Smith* was for excusing the King of *France*, saying, *The Civil Wars by which his Kingdom was then divided, would not suffer him to threaten England, and his own Crown ought to be much dearer to him than any of his Allies*.

The Arrival of *Belleſyre* having put off the Execution of the Sentence pronounc'd upon the Queen of *Scots*, it was fear'd the King of *France's* good Offices might have unsettled the Resolution of *Elizabeth*. This put the Protestant Ministers into a Fright as well as the Catholick, and particularly the Principal Members of the Parliament, as *Leicester*, *Cecil*, and *Walsingham*; who having condemn'd the Queen of *Scots*, were in a pannick Fear when they consider'd in case of their Mistresses Death, *Mary* had an undoubted Right to the Succession: And that she would no sooner mount the Throne of her Enemy, but she would destroy them without Mercy, as well out of the Aversion she bore the Protestants, as the Remembrance of a long and shameful Imprisonment.

These Lords took a convenient Time to make their Reasons go down with Queen *Elizabeth*, complaining to her that the Judgment of so many Barons and other considerable Persons was condemn'd, when all the Kingdom was impatient to have it put in Execution. The Queen by this Delay thought to shew a mighty Backwardness to such an Action, and to find an Excuse for her self in the Fears she was urg'd with of incurring the Ill-Will of her Subjects: But at length being overcome, or seeming to be so by this Motive last mention'd, she ordered in pursuance of the Parliament's Resolution to have the Dead-Warrant got ready for dispatching the unhappy *Mary*.

The Treasurer and the Secretary of State went away to signifie this to her in the Name of the Queen and Parliament at the Castle of *Fotheringay* where she was kept Prisoner. She received them with Joy, and told them, *She had a great deal to thank God for, that she was thought capable of re-*

storing the Catholick Faith in England. She asked their Leave to write some Letters, the Queen of England, the King of France, and others, which she did in a short time. It was thought that she also wrote to Pope Sixtus, to express her Sense of the Glory it was for her to die for the Catholick Religion, in which all the Kings her Predecessors had the Happiness to die.

When she had finished these Letters, she threw her self at the Feet of a Crucifix, to give God Thanks for all the Comforts of his Grace, and particularly for bringing her to the Death she was about to suffer. Then she took a Consecrated Host, which she had kept by Permission of Pius V. in acknowledgment of her firm Adherence to the Romish Religion: And Sixtus had granted her the same. She took the Sacrament by her self, the Protestant Ministers having refused her an Almoner, saying; *It was time for her to renounce the Follies and Extravagances of Rome long ago.*

Queen Elizabeth for her Part was strangely disquieted, and 'tis reported that one Night when she was kept awake by the Thoughts of it, a Lady of her Bed-Chamber who commonly lay by her, started out of her Sleep in a terrible Agony occasion'd by this Dream; She cried out, *That she saw the Queen of Scots beheaded, and afterwards her own Mistress die by the same Sword.* This struck such a Terror into the Queen that she sent away Post to Fotheringay a Reprieve for Mary till farther Orders. But the Messenger came not till Four Hours after her Death, The Guards being bribed by Leicester had given her Notice before it was Day-light all things were ready for her Execution.

One came out of her Chamber followed by a few Servants whom she desired not to disturb her with their Tears and Lamentation when she submitted to what was laid out for her as her Glory and Triumph. She went into the Hall where the Scaffold was erected in the finest Cloaths she had. There was a small Bed by her Side, and a Little Crucifix hung at her Heart, which the Ministers could not be so uncivil to take away; Tho' these Marks of Devotion which they look'd upon to be Superstition and Sacrilege, raised their Spleen and Indignation. The Sight drew Tears from all, even those that did Violence upon themselves to keep them in. The Hall rung with Sighs and Groans when this Princess came in with an Executioner after her to ascend a Scaffold instead of a Throne. She looked upon the Company with an Air of greater Beauty and Gaiety than Ordinary. She address'd her self to the Catholicks that were present, and entreated them to join their Prayers with hers, to beseech the Almighty, who knew her Innocence, would of his Goodness extend his Mercy to the Authors of her Death.

She took her Veil off her Head with her own Hand, and laid open her Neck and Shoulders which were as white as Snow, then kneeling down and kissing her Crucifix, she presented her Head to the Executioner; He was so much affected with what he was going about, that he trembled as he struck, and did not sever her Head till the Third Blow. It was remarkable that the very Persons who hastned her Execution melted into Tenderness, and turned away their Heads not being able to bear so dismal a Spectacle. It was said too that the Hangman fell down upon the Scaffold half dead, and was carried off so.

Thus ended the Life of *Mary Stuart Queen of Scots*, a Life that was filled with various Instances of Fortune in both Extremes. She was Twenty Years in Captivity, and in that time removed to Sixteen different Prisons, always used with Severity by those that guarded her, destitute of all Relief and every sort of Comfort, bating some Letters she received from Pope *Gregor XIII.* and *Sixtus V.* This last found Means conveying two to her Hands, one of which *Queen Elizabeth* seized, and read it often with Pleasure tho' it was full of nothing but Counsel and Exhortations to confirm the Faith of this Unhappy Queen whose Principles as well as Person *Elizabeth* had a mortal Aversion to. Yet she had such particular Fancy for that Pope as forced these Words from her when the Letter was brought to her, *The Queen of Scots was in the wrong to complain of a Prison where she had the full Enjoyment of a Pleasure I could wish for with the greatest Eagerness.* By which it appear'd with how much Passion she desired an Understanding with *Sixtus* if it had not been that she stood too much in awe of the Uneasiness it would give her Subjects.

The sad News of the Queen of *Scots's* Death was soon carried over *Europe*, the Nuncio that resided at *Paris* sent it by an Express to *Rome*. The Pope was just come from Supper, and stood leaning upon a Window when the Cardinal *de Montalto* gave him the Pacquet from the Nuncio. His Holiness look'd earnestly upon his Nephew whilst he gave him an Account of this Tragical-Affair, then of a sudden struck his Hand against the Frame of the Window and turn'd away sighing from towards *England*.

The *English* Queen, that she might some way or other wipe the Shame and Reproach from her
Memory

Memory for shedding the Blood of another Queen went into Mourning, afflicted her self, and blamed her Secretary for having hastned the Execution contrary to her Orders. She tried him for it, and he was Sentenc'd to be Imprison'd and pay a great Fine: But People smiled at this Management, when they saw at the same time Bonfires in *London*, and Ringing of Bells for Joy which all *England* shew'd upon the Occasion. This Minister made an Apology which was spread through all the Courts of *Christendom*, justifying himself for having done nothing without Order and understanding the Intentions of the Queen his Mistress; who drew upon her self the Displeasure and Aversion of other Princes, for having broke in upon the Respect due to Majesty in so unwarrantable a manner.

There's no Place in the Universe where the Actions of Princes, whether Good or Bad, are more nicely scann'd than at *Rome*. Here People were transported with Indignation at the Conduct of *Elizabeth*, and Libels and Satyrs flew about, setting her forth as Cruel and Sacrilegious. The Authors of these Busineses went chiefly upon the Sorrow she seem'd under, and the Tears she wiped of for an Action She her self was the Doer of. *Sixtus* forbid any body to affront this Princess and wound her Fame by such Lampoons, upon pain of being sent to the Gallies; saying, *Tho' she was a Heretick, there was still a Respect due to her Rank, and a Consideration to her Merit.* The Queen was told as much, and return'd a double Share of Esteem for him; She would frequently be telling her Ministers that she confided in, *Sixtus was a Great Prince, notwithstanding he was Pope, which made him her mortal Enemy.* *Leicester* was one Day in a Company where the Pope was mentioned, and said, *The Queen*

Queen ought to go and spend one Year at Rome, and Sixtus live one in England.

The People of Rome concluded from this mutual Esteem there must be some Correspondence between the Pope and that Queen, and form'd a Thousand Chimeras upon the Matter. And tho' he had Spies enough about to keep People's Tongues in a *Decorum*, that they durst not speak freely what they thought of him, yet there was somebody hardy enough to set out *Pasquin* like a Courier answering *Marsorio*, who asked Whether he was going; *To England with Letters from His Holiness to the Queen.*

Ranucio Farnese, Eldest Son of *Alexander Duke of Parma*, who had so gloriously defended the Cause of Religion in *Flanders*, went into the Pope's Palace with Arms most strictly forbid by His Holiness. This Young Prince thought a Person of his Quality out of the Verge of such Orders. The Pope who watched him, was no sooner inform'd of it but he commanded him to be seized: And it was done accordingly in His Holiness's Ante-Chamber, as the Prince was going to kiss his Feet. The Place too adding to the Crime, he was taken away in a Chair, and carried by an Officer and the Serjeants to the Castle of *St. Angelo*.

This Action made a great Noise at Rome, and strangely affected Cardinal *Farnese's* Friends, and all that were related to the Duke of *Parma*. They went immediately to petition His Holiness in Behalf of the Prince, for the Merits and Services of his Father, who was horribly affronted in the Person of his Son. They remonstrated to him how scandalous a thing it was to see in the Prison of the Holy See, by his Holiness's Order and for so little a Fault, a Sovereign Prince's Heir, at the same time his Father was fighting with

with so much Zeal and Bravery to maintain the Honour and Revenue of the Church. They gave him to understand that Foreign Princes were not tied up by the Laws of a Country, which were made but to keep the Common People in Order; and the Fault of this Young Prince proceeded rather from his Vivacity than Ill Meaning; and if he had been Tardy well knowing what he did, yet the Consideration of his Age, and the Services of his Father were enough to plead for his Holiness's Pardon.

At first *Sixtus* made Answer, That he had too much Inclination to give great Persons their Due, not to have an extraordinary Respect for the Duke of Parma: but that he had too strong an Aversion to those that offend in so gross a manner: that in this case he had us'd a Son of his own just as *Ranucio Farneze*: That he had rather abdicate his Sovereign Potificate and repair to a Cloyster, than see his Orders despis'd; that they were made for all the World without an Exception, and a Crown'd Head was liable to them in his Country; that Age was not a Consideration to exempt People from Correction; that he look'd upon the Duke of Parma but as Feudatory to the Holy See, and if he were not so, 'twas enough to be taken at Rome breaking his Orders. He surprized them all at such a rate with these Reasons, that they thought of leaving him till his Passion was abated.

But Cardinal *Farneze* fearing *Sixtus* would persist in his severe Resolution, could not stay a Minute at Home in the Uneasiness he felt upon the Occasion, and therefore return'd with all Speed to the *Vatican* to urge the Pope again, and give him no Rest till his Nephew was set at Liberty. The Pope found whereabouts he was, and accordingly gave the Cardinal an Order to the Governour to deliver the Young Prince into his

his Hands at Two a Clock in the Night: And *Farnese* made so good Use of his Time that he carried it to the Castle of *St. Angelo* himself, and the Governour could not refuse setting the Prince free. Then he made him take Post immediately, and he got in Thirty Hours Time to his Father's Territories in *Lombardy*.

The Pope this Year in the Heat of Summer fell ill of a continued Fever which had such dangerous Symptoms as made the Physicians despair of his Life. The Apprehension of his going off was no great Pain to the Cardinals, who would have been glad to be rid of him, and recover their lost Authority, for he would have the doing of every thing himself, and treated them like Slaves and Foot-men.

As sick as he was, when his Fever was going off, he would apply himself to State-Affairs: And tho' his Physicians ordered him to take Rest, he was still putting out new Edicts, and made the Governour of *Rome* and other Officers come to him every Day to give an Account of their Affairs, and receive fresh Instructions. His Nephew entreated him to compose himself to Rest for a few Days, telling him this Application to Business affected his Spirits still more than his Distemper did; but he made Answer; *I would have you know, Nephew, A Prince should not lay aside his Actual Administration but with his Life, like the Nightingale that sings till she dies.*

He ordered the Cardinal *de Montalto* above all things to Double the Number of Spies at *Rome*, and take the opportunity of his Illness to find out who were disaffected, who lov'd and who hated him. His Nephew obey'd his Directions, but Nobody ventur'd to speak their Mind for fear this should be but a counterfeit Sicknes: And those,

those that Hated him most went like the rest to the Churches of *Rome* where he was pray'd for, and the Holy Sacrament was expos'd for a whole Day.

He prohibited this sort of Devotion, telling his Nephew; *These extraordinary Prayers make the People think me at the Point of Death, and it's more to my purpose that they should believe me Alive some Minutes after I'm Dead.*

One Day in this Illness he was sunk so Low, and in so deep a Drowsiness that he seem'd to have expir'd. His Physicians observing the weakness he was under, which had made him lie Speechless for some time, touch'd the end of his Nose, to see if their were any natural Heat remaining. *Sixtus* perceiving him, started, as if he had wak'd out of some frightful Vision, and looking in the Doctor's Face, said, with as fierce a Tone as he was able; *How now, how dare you touch the Pope's Nose?* The poor Man was so struck with these Words, and thinking the Pope wou'd never look upon him more, that he went home to rights, betook himself to his Bed, and Died there of a Fever, which was caus'd by Grief and Despair, before his Holiness was perfectly recover'd, which was not long, and then he went to shew himself in the Streets.

This Sickness never took off the Edge of his Justice, but as soon as he grew a little better he had Two poor Gentlemen Executed, who were Accus'd of holding Correspondence with a Famous High-way-Man nam'd *Benedetto Mangone Devali*: He was of the Scum of the People, and retired commonly towards *Naples*, from whence he would make his Incurfions, committing Murder and Roberries quite to the *Ecclesiastical State*. Being Taken at last he was broke upon the Wheel at *Naples*, in the Publick Market-place
and

and Confess'd several Crimes, naming some of his Accomplices and amongst the rest these Two Gentlemen, as having assisted him to get out of the hands of Justice. The Governour of *Rome*, who had put them in Prison, had abundant proof to take away their Lives; but out of compassion to their Families he delay'd their Execution, during the Sickness of *Sixtus*, to give their Relations time to Beg them off. When the Pope heard of this stop the Governour had put to their being brought to Punishment he was in a great Anger with him, and threatned to disgrace him for being so slow to do Justice. And they were Beheaded notwithstanding the Endeavours of several Ambassadors, and a great Number of *Roman* Gentlemen related to these unhappy Creatures, that were employ'd to save them.

The Court of *Rome* was put into a strange Consternation upon the severe punishment of the Lord *Bellochio*, the Pope's Taster, and the Lord *Gualterucci*, Secretary to the College of Apostolick Secretaries, a Prelate of great Credit, in Esteem for his Ancient Services, his Interest in his Holiness, and the Confidence that was repos'd in him. They were both Condemn'd to the Gallies, together with another Secretary. *Bellochio* Died there in a Few Months Time, out of Mortification that he could not find Favour at the Entreaty of the whole Court. He was Condemn'd for Stealing the Fisherman's Ring, which is the Pope's Seal, and Seizing a Brief with it, which he had a long time mov'd to have expedited, and the Pope had refus'd, taking the request to be unreasonable. *Bellochio* intended to Build a Magnificent Palace in his own Country, and to this purpose wanted a House which the Owner would not let him have. Finding his Measures were broke, he Forg'd a Brief, by which

which this Man was compell'd to Sell his House, who obey'd immediately for fear of incurring the Pope's displeasure and parted with it at a rate much less than it was worth.

Gualterucci was Tried as having a hand in the Rogery, and was Condemn'd to the same Punishment, as well as the other Person who mov'd for expediting the Brief, when he knew of the Plot. *Gualterucci's* Misfortune was lamented by every body; He was a Prelate with abundance of Good Qualities, and his Crime might have been pass'd by in a less Severe Reign. The whole Sacred College with the *Spanish* and *Venetian* Ambassadors, and others of the first Quality Begg'd he might be Forgiven; but the Pope would not so much as hear them; he said, *He was Set up by God to do Justice, and not to grant Pardons, in the hope of which all sorts of wicked Actions would be committed. That he lov'd his Domesticks when they serv'd him faithfully, but would be the first to declare against them when they became false to their honour and their Duty. That he made no scruple of Pardoning Injuries that affected his Person only, but would Punish without any Quarter, Affronts put upon the Holy See. And he wish'd the Offence that was now before him concern'd No body but himself, that he might shew Favour to the Criminals.* *Gualterucci* was cast into the Gallies and there continued till the Death of *Sixtus*, after which he was presently fetch'd out to the great Joy of all that had been griev'd at his Misfortune.

Francis de Medicis, Great Duke of *Tuscany*, Died this Year without Heirs, and left his Dominions to his Brother *Ferdinand*, Cardinal de *Medicis*. He sent Ambassadors to *Rome* on purpose to deliver his Hat into the Pope's Hands with all due Ceremony, who oblig'd him to make very Rich Presents to the Church of *St.*

John

John de Lateran. This Prince soon after Married *Christina*, Daughter of the Duke of *Lorraine*. The Pope was not displeas'd at his giving up his Cardinalship, for besides that he had a Place to fill up by it in the College, he found himself deliver'd from an Overseer, the Authority of whose Birth and Quality he stood in Awe of.

Stephen Batori, Prince of *Transilvania*, and King of *Poland*, Died this Year after about Nine Years Reign. All *Christendom* lamented it: He was a Prince extremely Zealous for the Catholick Religion, a Great Man in the Field, and well experienc'd in State Affairs. He had always kept a Hand over the Protestants, put an end to Civil Wars, and by his Valour recover'd the Dutchy of *Suevia* and *Smolensko*, which the *Muscovites* had taken from the *Poles* with more Cunning than Bravery.

He shew'd no less resolution when the *Turk*, according to Custom, Ask'd him for a Number of Troops to make War upon the King of *Persia*. He Answer'd, *The White Eagle of Poland, which has so long been without Feathers and without Vigour, has now recover'd fresh Spirits, and whetted her Beak and Talons*. The Briskness of this Answer kept the Infidels from making any Attempt upon his Dominions in his Reign, as they had done in Former.

The great Endowments this Man was Master of, occasion'd the *Poles* a great deal of Trouble upon the Election of a New King. They could not think of placing another in the Throne whose Merit should not be as great, and who should not fill the place as well and maintain the Kingdom in the Condition *Stephen* had left it. A great many thought the Emperour *Rodolphus* would certainly be chose; because since his Father *Maximilian* was by the Interest of the House of *Austria*, they

they concluded his Son *Rodolphus* would succeed immediately and without any *Inter-regnum* in case he should die. This did afterwards happen and was foreseen by some deep-sighted Folks because of his Ill-Complexion. Others imagined the Duke of *Parma* had a great Interest, as one of the Wisest and Greatest Captains of his Time; and that his Uncle Cardinal *Farnese* had a great Name amongst the *Poles* for the Services he had done them whilst he was Protector of their Nation. Others there were of an Opinion altogether different, who built upon the contrary Humour of the *Italians* from the *Poles*, and that there was Reason to fear the Duke of *Parma's* Valour should carry Severity and a haughty Behaviour with it, and that the *Turks* would be nettled to have a Prince for their Neighbour that was at the Devotion of the *Spaniards* whom they mortally hated.

The *Waywood* of *Transylvania* and his Cousin the Cardinal *Battori* put in their Pretences. The first being a Young Man of a good Heart and ambitious Thoughts, flatter'd himself he should have the *Grand-Signior's* Assistance, and thereby the Help of his Immense Riches. On the other Side it was a Disadvantage to him to be the King's Nephew: Who for all his Courage and the Services he had perform'd for the State, had obtain'd the Fear rather than Love of the *Polish* Nobility. They complain'd that in the disposing of the Places and Honours of the Kingdom he had not observ'd the usual Methods; but had prefer'd People against the Will of their principal Lords, whereas their Country being a sort of Republick, of which their King was no more than Head, he could not, without Consent of the Senate, deliberate about War and Peace, nor try Gentlemen accused of Capital Crimes: And they

they look'd upon such things as doing Violence to their Liberties, and Usurping the whole Sovereign Authority. The same Reasons set aside Cardinal *Battori*, the Nephew of the late King *Stephen*. If it had not been for that, The other Good Qualities he was Master of, which made him fit to govern, most People thought of sufficient Strength to set him upon the Throne.

The Duke of *Ferrara* was also brought upon the Stage: He was a great Prince, and One that upon several Occasions had been serviceable to that Nation; but He was an *Italian* and had stood at a former Election, which made those Vote against him now who had been for him before.

Some Noblemen of the Country pleas'd themselves with the Hopes of carrying it for themselves, but their Ambition was built upon a Chimera, forgetting that the *Poles* hated nothing more than to be Subject to one of their own Country-men, and for Six Hundred Years past there had not been one of them chosen; and if they did not pitch upon a foreign Prince at that time, it must be that the Crown was not yet made sure, that the Authority of the Laws was inconsiderable, and their Wits were not so refined and brisk as heretofore. Nor had they made choice of one of the *Piastas* (which is the Name of a Gentleman's Family that derive themselves from the ancient Kings of *Poland*) if they had any Thoughts of setting the Crown upon the Head of a *Pole*; but Chancellor *Zamoski* had been the Man, having under *Stephen* had the greatest Share in the Government of the Kingdom. That Prince consulted this Minister in every thing and follow'd his Advice though against his own Opinion. The Favour he enjoy'd gain'd by

Such an Interest, that he could not have had greater if he had been in the Throne. He had a Court like a Prince's; the Post of General of the Armies served as a Pretence for the Regal Magnificence in which he lived; and his Experience in Business, His Readiness to engage in a Design and bring it to Perfection, together with his Natural Bravery and the Love of the Soldiers, were all great Helps towards raising him to the Throne. Never a One of these we have mentioned carried it. The Factions were reduced to Two, One of which declared for the Prince of *Sweden*, and t' Other for *Maximilian* Arch-Duke of *Austria*, the Emperor *Rodolphus* his Brother. The Generosity of the Arch-Duke, His Sweet Temper and his Love of Justice, had gain'd him the greatest Part of the Senate. The Intrigue was carried on heartily by the *Austrians*, and he declared King by one of the Two Factions.

T' other Faction who had a great Aversion to the *Germanis* that were like to fill the Court, and be preferr'd to the Natural born Subjects when any Favours were bestow'd, was afraid the Arch-Duke might one Day succeed his Brother, and then join *Poland* to the Empire for an Hereditary Country, as his Ancestors had done *Hungary* and *Bohemia* which they got by way of Election. They were apprehensive too it might give the *Grand Signior* Offence, whose Power was formidable to them, if they chose a Prince of the House of *Austria*, to which it had been long since observed He was a Mortal Enemy. These Reasons

inclin'd them to be for the Prince of *Sweden*, who at Thirty Years old, and of the Family of *Wasa*, a Name that they held in great Veneration for the sake of one of their Kings of that Name who had done great things amongst the *Scythians* by annexing the Dutchy of *Lithuania* to the Crown.

Crown. The King of *Sweden's* ready Money might perhaps too be a powerful Argument with them, some People thought he intended to bestow more of it towards uniting the Crown of *Sweden* to *Poland* for the sake of his only Son whom he loved extremely.

But the Quickest sighted thought quite otherwise. This Prince might have more Children yet, and besides he had other Heirs of his own Name; but setting aside those Two Motives, what Ground was there to believe he would settle the Succession upon the Kings of *Poland*, that were frequently placed upon the Throne by an Intrigue or by an Accident? It's far more probable the *Poles* had a Mind to secure *Lithuania* to themselves, which the King of *Sweden* might pretend to in Right of his Mother, and so by choosing her Son, might ward off a long and bloody War.

Farther they considered their own Weakness, by reason of which they never could make up any considerable Army except of Horse: And that the King of *Sweden* was in a Condition to put to Sea a great Fleet, he became strong both at Land and Sea, and kept the *Muscovites* in Awe, who had been called for a long time the Northern Dragon, and there was an irreconcilable Hatred between them.

One Party Electing the Prince of *Sweden* upon these Accounts, there were Two Persons elected at the same time. And the Two Princes having Notice of what had been done for each, got together as many Troops as they could, and put themselves at the Head of 'em to decide the Title to the Crown, resolving on both Sides to charge thro' whatever oppos'd them.

Sixtus in the time of the Diet, sent Two Expresses to the Archbishop of *Naples* his Nuncio to *Poland*, to order him to be for *Maximilian*, and

do his utmost to get him chose. He enjoin'd him however to give no publick Proofs of his Zeal, but to carry it with Discretion and good Management for fear of disoblising the *Swedish Party*; and besides, it was not for the Honour of the Holy See to make a publick Declaration in a Case where the Event was uncertain. He directed him to have an Eye upon every Step the Diet made, and if he should find *Maximilian's* Party the weakest and that his Case was desperate, presently he should turn about to the other Side: Which was in other Words, giving him a Hint in favour of the Prince of *Sweden*.

His Holiness was extremely overjoyed when the Nuncio sent him Word *Maximilian* was made King; but afterwards when he heard the Election was contested by a powerful Party, He was angry with the Nuncio, and let him know in a sort of Displeasure, *The Affairs of Poland did not continue long in the Condition he represented them*: And at the same time sent two and twenty Ducats of Gold to the Bishop of *Nais* in *Silesia* for the Service of *Maximilian* directing the Money should be employed in what he most wanted, with Promises of farther Assistance.

It was thought if *Maximilian* had been more expeditious, and appear'd at the Gates of *Cracow* the Capital of *Poland* with a better Number of Men than he brought, that he might in all probability have carried the Place, and then the Rest of the Kingdom must of course have come to him; but he came too late to the Plains of this City with no more than Sixteen Thousand Men, in *October* 1587, and upon a *Friday* too, which was always an unlucky Day to him. First of all he sent Notice to the Inhabitants that he was Elected, and desired they would receive

him; but they shut their Gates against him, and sent away in all hast to the Prince of *Sweden* to beg he would come quickly, giving him to understand Delays were dangerous to his Interest, and that his Coronation was appointed upon *St. Luke's Day*. They fortified themselves in Expectation of his coming as well as they could, set fire to some Houses in the Suburbs and cast up Entrenchments to secure themselves from *Maximilian*. There were daily Skirmishes between them and His Men, in which the *Poles* often had the better.

The Prince of *Sweden's* Ambassadors arrived while this was doing, and gave an Account their Master was at *Dantzick*; that the Ill Weather had hindred his coming thither sooner, that he should be forced to make a Halt there for some time to refresh his Men, and therefore it was impossible he should be at *Cracow* upon the Day fixed for his Coronation, and the Ceremony must accordingly be put off till *St. Martin*, being the Eleventh of *November*. They were answer'd, That it was the Practice to Crown their Kings upon a Sunday, and they had made choice of *St. Luke's Day* because it fell out so, the Solemnity must therefore be deserr'd till the Sunday after *St. Martin's*.

In the mean time *Maximilian's* Army which lay encamped in the Plains of *Cracow* was mightily weakned; His Soldiers being ill cloath'd, could not bear the Cold which that Winter was extraordinary. For want of Wine they drank Water or very bad Beer, which threw 'em in a Bloody Flux and a malignant Fever. Sicknes carried off great Numbers of them daily notwithstanding all the General's Care who had no Hospitals for 'em, nor any thing to nourish 'em which is the only Remedy for that Distemper.

The Mortality was every bit as great in *Petrocovia*, where the Prince of *Sweden* being arrived, a Young *Polish* Gentleman named *Corfinski* who was of *Maximilian's* Side, deliver'd him a Letter from that Prince with such a brave dextrous Behaviour, that it deserves to be mention'd here.

This Gentleman had an Uncle with the Prince of *Sweden*, who for his great Deserts was one of his chief Confidants. He entreated this Uncle to intercede with the Prince for him, and to assure his Highness He was extremely troubled he had taken the Part of *Maximilian*, and was very desirous of entring now into his Service. His Uncle overjoyed to bring over one of so much Merit to his Master, obtain'd his Pardon and Leave to kiss the Prince's Hand; but as soon as he was introduced, instead of paying that Respect to his Highness, he had the Assurance to deliver him a Letter from *Maximilian*, telling him, *He must not be surprized if his Master made use of that Stratagem to convey a Letter into his Hands, after writing Five or Six which had never come to him.* The Prince of *Sweden* was enraged at this Insolent Proceeding, and put the Gentleman into a Dungeon after he had thrown the Letter into the Fire before his Face. It was said by some, *That it was not burnt, but he gave it to one of his Secretaries without opening it, to shew by such a Slight how little he valued the Man that wrote it.* In Two Days time he set the Prisoner at Liberty, being moved with his undaunted Behaviour, and Fidelity to his Master.

Maximilian being forced to break up from *Cracow*, marched the Remains of his Army towards *Petrocovia*, with a good Resolution to meet his Enemy and give him Battle, not imagining the *Swedes* so strong as He, tho' their Army consisted

sisted of Thirty Thousand Men, and His not above Thirteen. But whether it was that his Men had been worsted in a Skirmish with the Swedes, or some other secret Motive diverted his first Purpose, 'tis uncertain, so it was he turn'd about and came to *Cracow* to make a second Attempt upon it, in which he lost abundance of Men and succeeded no better than before.

At length finding himself under a Necessity of making a Stay at *Bellon*, the Chancellor resolv'd to attack him with Twelve Thousand Men. *Maximilian* having Intelligence of his Design, quits his Post, and leaving *Poland* comes to *Pilsen*, a Place upon the Frontiers of *Silesia* belonging to the Duke of *Brigen*. The Chancellor, who had always been too hard for him in several Skirmishes, at length besieged him in this Place, which wanting Stores of all sorts, he was forced to give himself up Prisoner in the Beginning of *January*, 1588.

The Chancellor of *Poland* was highly delighted with the glorious Advantage he had got; He had an Inventory made of all the *German* Baggage, sent his Prisoner under a strong Guard to a Place convenient and honourable enough, and left him for his own Use a Dozen Silver Dishes, Eight Plates, Two Spoons, and Two Forks. The Prince was in a Flame to be so treated, and his Disgrace affected all that knew him. The Town of *Pilsen* was given up to the Insolence and Avarice of the Soldiers, who pillaged it with such Cruelty and Barbarity as was beyond Example.

All the Princes of *Christendom* interested themselves in *Maximilian's* Misfortune, and several particular Nations, but chiefly *Poland*, which having made an Agreement to preserve Peace, and

not declare against any Side looked upon the Affront put upon *Maximilian* with a great deal of Regret, as well as the pillaging a City of *Silesia* which belonged to the Kingdom of *Bohemia* by a *Polish Army* under Command of their Chancellor. But of all that pitied *Maximilian's* unfortunate Condition, there was none so ready to assist him as *Sixtus*, which the next Book will shew.

The Pope was at this time very intent upon what was doing in *France*. He had sent the Duke *de Guise*, who was Head of the League, a Sword like that which he had before presented the Duke of *Parma* with, by the Hands of the Abbot *Grimani*. He ordered the Bishop that carried it to give that Prince Assurance of the Kindness he bore him, and that he had indeed the first Place in his Heart. The Duke received the Present at *Paris* with a mighty Solemnity and great Acclamations of the People, so much that King *Henry III.* was Jealous upon the Matter; tho' the Duke refused to receive all this Honour with abundance of Modesty.

The deplorable Condition *France* found its self reduced to by Civil Wars, alarm'd the most Christian King most violently, and weakned his Power daily. *Sixtus*, who could not bear to hear of any Usurpation upon the Authority of Kings, wrote to this Prince to exhort him manfully to support the Honour of his Crown, and suppress the Pride and Insolence of his Rebellious Subjects; telling him in his Letter, *That he must use Fire and Sword in an inveterate Distemper, and not be so sparing of his Subjects Blood which swell'd their Veins so high.*

The King kept this Letter by him, shew'd it several times to the Duke *de Guise*, and made serious Reflections upon it. One Day when he had called a Council about to advise some Remedy that might be applied to the Divisions *France* was afflicted

sifted with, he ordered this Letter to be read, that his Ministers might see the Pope was in his Interest: But that he was not resolved to pursue the violent Counsels were given him, and was rather for saving his Subjects Blood. All that assisted at this Council, and the Protestants themselves, were surprized to see a Pope eager to shed the Blood of a Flock which he called himself the True Pastor of. One of those that entertain'd the New Opinions rose up, and was not Master enough of his Resentments to forbear saying to the King; *Sir; Pope Sixtus who has butcher'd so many People at Rome is ready to die with Grief because he does not see the same bloody Doings at Paris: It's no Wonder he should be for using other Princes Subjects in that inhumane Manner, who has treated his own so; no Miracle that his Advice should be of the same Strain with his Practice.*

The Protestants flung about abundance of Heretical Wit in Satyrs upon *Sixtus* for this Letter. His Holiness finding it had been read publicly at the Council-Board, gave Order to his Nuncio to make complaint of it to the King, and to tell him in his Name; *That when he thought it his Duty to write with the Sincerity of a Father, he had told his Mind in plain Terms, but did not foresee his Letter was to be made publick, and his Pen was to be made use of for declaring his Intentions to his Council.* The King excused himself as well as he could, but *Sixtus* no more writ to him upon such Subjects for the time to come: He thought it enough to speak to him by his Nuncio. The King who did not lay things much to Heart, nor valued the Pope's Advice at a great rate, as they were of a very different Humour, was not much concern'd at this Caution of his Holiness, which was intended to mortifie him.

The King of *Navarr's* Agents in *Switzerland* press'd the Protestant Cantons to raise Forces, and join the King of *Denmark's*, the Duke of *Saxony's*, the Marquis of *Bradenburg's*, and Prince *Casimir's*, who with the Queen of *England's* Assistance, that had already sent them Sixty Thousand Ducats of Gold, design'd to put a stop to the Progress of the League in *France*, against the New Sectaries.

Theodore Beza, the Famous Preacher, was then in *Switzerland*, and the Hereticks held this Arch-Heretick in great esteem for his mistaken Zeal. The Agents of *Navarr* to encrease the Troops they were Levying to a greater Number, came in to him and presented him Letters from their Master full of Affection and Kindness. This Minister being set on Fire by his Zeal for the Advancement of his Doctrine, and being fond of shewing the Interest he had in the Country, went from Canton to Canton, Preaching, and his Rhetorick so far prevail'd, that Orders were immediately given out for Raising the Troops the King of *Navarr* wanted. *Beza* farther engag'd the Protestant Churches to contribute towards the Charge of keeping this Army on Foot, and the Money he rais'd was put into Prince *Casimir's* hands.

The Catholick Cantons, who could not endure to hear this Famous Arch-Heretick so much as nam'd, wrote several Times to the Prelates and Cardinals at *Rome*, to inform them of the great Prejudice this Man did the True Religion, by the more he took to maintain Union and Concord amongst the Protestants to the disadvantage of the Catholick Cause; that his meer Presence doubled their Courage and Zeal; and it was of absolute Necessity to find out some Remedy; but their Advice was not taken.

The

The NINTH BOOK.

Charles Emanuel, Duke of Savoy, in the Beginning of this Year sent an Ambassador Extraordinary to Rome, under pretence of paying his Duty to the Pope, but in reality to entreat his Assistance toward re-taking Geneva. This Prince was resolv'd to do his utmost for the bringing it about; and flatter'd himself with hopes of Success, upon the Strength of his New Alliance with Spain, and that France was not in a condition to oppose him.

Sixtus receiv'd the Ambassador in a very Friendly and Honourable manner, out of the Esteem he had for the Royal House of Savoy, which he call'd the Fore-wall of Italy, and the Glory of those Parts. But as zealous as his Holiness was for recovering Geneva, either the Apprehension of what it would cost him, or the Interest the Cantons pretended to in keeping the Town Independent; or Lastly, the difficulty of the Enterprize, made him talk obscurely upon the matter. He Answer'd Ambiguously, That the Duke of Savoy's Design was Just and Reasonable; but he must not hurry too fast, for fear of drawing down some New Mischief which was not at present to be seen.

Franciscus Faber, who was of Geneva being then at Rome, the Pope had a mind to enquire something about the Town of him. Petrus Faber,

his Father, whose Family had Flourish'd there above Two Hundred Years, had by his Deserts got a great Name. It was thought, His Holiness being inform'd by this *Francis*, in several private Conferences they had, of the Bishop's Pretensions against the Duke of *Savoy*; his Zeal for the Duke's Cause grew cool upon't. And that after several Negotiations with the Count *de Olivarez*, the *Spanish* Ambassador, who had Orders to work *Sixtus* up to a Pitch; he Answer'd that Minister; *That if the War with Geneva was purely an Affair of Religion, he ought to engage in it as Head of the Church; but if the Dispute were upon a Politick Account, he could not in Conscience employ the Money of the Holy See in another's Quarrel.*

The Duke, when he heard of the Answer, was in a Passion with the Court of *Rome*, and the Pope himself; and said with his usual Sharpness, warm'd with Anger; *That Sixtus had rather Spill the Blood of Catholics at Rome than of Hereticks at Geneva; and it was better in his Pontificate to go to a Holding-forth than to Mass, since he gave the Protestants what belong'd to the Roman-Catholics.* Accordingly he recall'd his Ambassador immediately from *Rome*: He Would have him leave a Court that was already infected with the New Opinions; and sent him Word; *If he could not reduce Geneva by the Ways and Motives of Religion, he would accomplish it with the Edge of his Sword, the force of which he thought some Priests wou'd not venture to resist.*

While the several Steps of this Negotiation was making, the Count *d' Olivarez* had frequent Conferences with the Ambassador of *Savoy*. As he went with him to his Audience of Leave, he Talk'd to him thus by the way to the Pope's Palace; *It's to no purpose, Master Ambassador, for your*

your Master to expect Assistance from Rome to retake Geneva: I am acquainted how matters stand, I know the Pope's Humour but too well, by having to do with him so long, and amongst the rest, in the Affairs of England.

But to return to that Country upon Account of which the Count complain'd of the Pope. In the Beginning of the Year, 1587. Sixtus had so enflam'd the King of Spain against Elizabeth, as made that Prince to engage in a great Enterprize upon England. His Holiness had wrote to him with his own Hand, contrary to the Custom of Popes; and told him, That the Title of Catholick King which he enjoy'd above other Christian Princes, and the kindness he maintain'd for a People over whom he had once Reign'd, should put him upon revenging the Affronts which the Catholicks of that Country, and the True Religion suffer'd; and that Himself would contribute towards the Charge of the War. And farther, made Promises to the Count de Olivarez; That as soon as he receiv'd News of the King's Army Landing in England, he would give three Millions of Livres to carry on the Expedition. This Minister did all he could to persuade him to lay down Half the Money in present. And the Duke of Parma sent the Count de Cesis to Rome, on purpose to Sollicit the Business, but Sixtus kept to his Point; saying, He would not disburse one Farthing till the Spaniards had got Footing in the Island.

His Holiness thought best to divert King Philip from asking any Money by giving a Cardinal's Hat, at his desire to William Allen, in April, 1587. He was a Man that had perform'd a great Service for the Faith in England, and had refus'd the Sacred Purple out of Modesty when it was offer'd by Gregory XIII. Sixtus oblig'd him to accept it at his Hands, at the same time declar'd

declaring him according to the King of *Spain's* desire, Legate in *England*, as Cardinal *Reginald Pool* had been in the Reign of *Mary* his Consort. At the same time the Pope wrote to that Prince and told him, *As this Promotion made his Undertaking Publick,* he should Embark his Army with all speed and make a Descent as soon as possible; that the *III* Treatment the English Catholics were under might not be doubled upon them.

The most penetrating Spirits that could dive into Mysteries thought the Motive of Religion, after all, was not the most powerful to put his Holiness upon engaging the King of *Spain* to carry his Arms into *England*: but that he only wanted to bring him into a long, difficult, and hazardous War; that he might take his opportunity to put his own designs in Execution.

He thought perpetually upon conquering the Kingdom of *Naples*, which had run in his Head ever since he was Pope. This Country when it was drain'd of its Money, Soldiers and Officers, would be an easy Prey to any that should surprize it. And the great Preparations that were making to Invade *England* had drawn off the Flower of their Nobility, and almost all their Ready Money.

The Fleet which his Catholick Majesty Set out upon this Expedition consisted of a Hundred and Fifty Large Ships besides a Prodigious Number of Small Vessels. They had Two Thousand Guns and abundance of Ammunition and Provisions of all sorts, and the Land Army was Three and Twenty Thousand Strong. The Duke de *Medina Sidonia*, who Commanded in chief, Set Sail for *England* and in his Passage fell in several times with the famous Admiral *Drake*, Commander of the *English* which Queen *Elizabeth* had Set out to Fight the *Spaniards*, and mortgag'd her

her Jewels to Fit them out. The Two Fleets^s exchange'd some shot in several slight Engagements, but never came to a general Fight, whether it was that the Duke *de Medina*, being no great Seaman, doubted of his Success, or that his Orders being to the contrary, he would not Fight without assurance of Victory, is uncertain. Whatever the matter was, they parted without Blows, and the *Spanish Armada* being sadly shatter'd by a Violent Storm, in which a great many Ships were Sunk, had much ado to make their Ports.

Sixtus, while this was doing, went in Person to *Civita-Vecchia* with a Numerous Train, and most of the Court of *Rome*, where with abundance of Solemnity he Bless'd the Sixteen Gallies he had Built for the Service of the Church, as we have already mention'd. All the Princes of *Italy* well knowing him to be a Man of vast and Towing Designs, took umbrage at it, and particularly the *Spaniards*.

Upon this the Governour of *Naples* found it requisite to Reinforce his Frontier Garrisons, and to send a great many Spies to *Civita-Vecchia*, to watch His Holiness's Motions, who gave out Orders to have his Gallies in a readiness, Victuall'd and provided with all things necessary to the Execution of some Great Design. He view'd the Fortifications of the Place and order'd New Works to be made where he thought there was most need, and hereby increas'd the Troubles and Mistrust of the *Spaniards*.

At the Pope's return to *Rome* the Count *de Olivarez* deliver'd him a Letter from the Elector of *Cologne*, in which he complain'd that he had not only lost several considerable Places in his Dominions, but was afraid *Cologne* it self would also in a short time fall into his Enemies hands; and

and entreated His Holiness's Assistance against their Victorious Arms. The Duke of *Bavaria* who was in great Esteem with the Pope, wrote to him also in Behalf of his Brother the Elector, whose Interest he did not so much insist upon as the Cause of Religion, which was there in Danger of being totally ruin'd, the Protestants having made themselves Masters of all the Country.

Sixtus promised, as he was wont to do, to assist that Prince, but with a great many Clauses and Conditions to the Bargain. He ordered a Hundred Thousand Franks to be paid upon the Nail for the Use of the Elector, and that the Money should be put in the *Spanish Ambassador's* Hands for him, he being then raising some Troops in *Germany*: And to keep that Prince in Heart, and encourage him to stand upon his Defence, he gave him Assurance that the Army in *Flanders* under Command of the Duke of *Parma*, would soon march to his Assistance.

The Pope wrote to King *Philip* to console him upon the Loss he sustain'd in the Storm, but some wiser than others, took it to be not so much out of Grief at his Misfortune, as to prevent any Thoughts of asking His Holiness to contribute towards the Charge of repairing it: And in effect, threw the Blame of all upon the Ill Conduct of his Ministers, excepting *Alexander Farneze*, of whom he spoke mighty well before the Count *d' Olivarez*. And because This great Commander was not free from some People's Reflections, as having acted against the usual Methods of War, *Sixtus* took the Duke of *Parma's* Part, and strenuously defended him against these false Accusations, not only to the Count *d' Olivarez*, but to all the Cardinals at a Consistory. Cardinal *Farneze* thanked His Holiness for it heartily, and let

Z

his

his Nephew know as much by a Letter which was of great Service to that Prince; the Approbation of so great a Pope as *Sixtus*, being abundantly sufficient to stop the Mouths of those that hated and those that envied him.

The Letter he wrote to the King of Spain (in which he did such ill Offices to the chief of the Spanish Ministers) was sent to his Nuncio *at Madrid*, with Orders to make King Philip a Compliment when he deliver'd it. The Nuncio had observed a great deal of Firmness and Resolution in the King when the ill News was brought him of the Disaster of his Fleet, but however, thought it proper to take a favourable Opportunity of delivering the Pope's Letter. The King receiv'd it with so pleasant a Countenance, that One would have guess'd it to have been rather a Business of Congratulation than Condolence.

He thank'd the Nuncio, and told him he would write an Answer to his Holiness; and accordingly he did it in Two Days to this Purpose; *That he treated his Holiness would join his hearty Thanks to Almighty God with his, for the Preservation of the Rest of the Fleet, which through the Divine Mercy had escaped the Fury of the Storm: That He was daily thankful for being in a Capacity to set out such an Armada, and was not concern'd to see the Stream dried up, when he had the Spring-Head in his Power: That this Fleet had Orders to fight only the Enemies of the Faith, and not to contend with the Appointments of Providence; and that he should be in the wrong to complain of his Ministers because they could not answer for the Wind and Weather.*

Philip found by the Expressions of *Sixtus's* Letter how little His Holiness was disposed to assist him upon the Occasion, and being of a Temper to despise what he was not like to obtain, concluded his Answer to the Pope with some

prod

proaches upon the little Zeal His Holiness shew'd in the Cause of the Catholick Princes when they defended the Interests of Religion so heartily, telling him; *The Loss of his Naval Force ought to be common to them both, since he had not engaged in such an Expedition but at the Request of His Holiness; That he had at least the Honour of losing a* *the Service of Christ's Church: That this Disaster ought to draw more Tears from the Common Mother of the Faithful than from him: That for the time to come he should let His Holiness alone to defend her; and promised, he would no more lead the way, but content himself with coming after* *him.*

By this Answer, no doubt, he intended to let him know he could see into his Design upon the Kingdom of Naples: And that the Project gave him no Disturbance, tho' at the same time He was making great Preparation for War, and laid up Money to carry it on: That notwithstanding the Loss of his Fleet, he had Resolution and Strength enough to defend that Kingdom against all Invaders whatever. The Count d' Olivarez watched the Pope's Motions narrowly, and told him in Discourse, after he had deliver'd his Master's Letter, *That His Catholick Majesty would make himself ample amends for what he was out of pocket, in conquering new Kingdoms, out of those* *should venture to make an Attempt upon his.*

The Nuncio, Resident at Madrid, inform'd His Holiness too by a Letter, what Greatness of Soul Philip had shewn in bearing the Loss of his Ships so well. When the Pope read it, he turn'd to some of his Domesticks that he was most free with, and said, *Of all the Perfections the King of Spain is Master of, there's none I envy him for but his Constancy under Disgrace.*

Yet after all, his Evenness and Moderation in good Fortune was no less remarkable. When an Express came of the Victory over the Turks in 1571. obtain'd by Don John of Austria his Natural Brother, who commanded the Christian Army, all the Nobility of his Court that he was most intimate with, run to his Lodgings where he was still reading the Life of the Emperor the Fifth his Father. They expected to find him skipping for Joy, and in such Raptures as he could not contain himself, but he shew'd no manner of Alteration upon the Matter, and when he had heard the Account of this Memorable Battle at large, he said coldly, shrugging up his Shoulders, *That Don John had run a great Hazard,* and so went on with his Book.

It was the same when the News of his Loss in the Tempest was brought. *Christophe de Moura* and *John d' Idiago*, both which he had loved entirely for a long time, happen'd to be then in the Ante-Chamber, They thought by the Looks of him that came Express, he had no Good News for the King: But when they heard the Melancholick Story: how many Ships and Men were gone to the Bottom, they were in such a Consternation, that neither one nor t'other would introduce the Person, and the rather because the King was in daily Expectation to hear something from the Fleet, and to send them further On. *Moura* at length undertook this disagreeable Office, which *Idiago* had quitted to him with a great deal of Satisfaction. As soon as he came into the Room, *Philip* saw a mighty Disorder in the Prince's Face, and ask'd the Reason of it. He went to him and presented the Gentleman that came Express, saying, *the Fleet had receiv'd some Damage.* Then he had the whole History of the Matter which he heard out patiently, and with

out any Disturbance said, I sent them to fight another Fleet, and not to dispute with the Winds and Waves; and taking up his Pen again which he had laid down to hear the Account, he set himself to write with no more Concern than before.

Moura was surprized to see how little the King was affected with the thing; he went to *Idiano* again, who was waiting to hear how the King was received, and told him with a Smile; *His Majesty shew'd no great Uneasiness upon the Business, and for my part I am less troubled at it than he is.*

The King of Spain had been a long time soliciting to have Saint *Didace d' Alcala* Canonized, and had engag'd to bear the Charge of it, out of the Devotion he owed him as a Spaniard. The Pope on his Part was for the Thing because that Saint was of the Order of *St. Francis*. Yet notwithstanding the King's Importunity, The Court of *Rome* being not much given to Expedition, went on slowly, and were very backward in getting ready the Narrative of *St. Didace's* Miracles done in his Life-time:

It was generally thought the Disaster of the *Spanish Armada* would have put this Canonization out of *Philip's* Head; and that he might have Occasion enough for his Money to repair the Damage without bestowing it to such a Purpose: And the Pope was of the same Mind; but they were taken, for that same Week the Ill News came from *Spain*, he sent away Orders to the *Court d' Orléans* to take with him the other Cardinals of their Nation, and obtain of his Holiness to have this Saint Canonized with all Speed; and not trouble themselves about the Charge of doing the thing, for whatever it cost he would have it perform'd with all the Solemnity and Splendour possible. And to a Cardinal that was his Friend he

wrote as he was mentioning the Business, *It was but reasonable for a King who had given the Sea so much, to give something to Heaven.*

The Court of Rome stood amazed at the Greatness of Philip's Mind, and all the Ambassadors admired his Policy in labouring to smother his Disgrace at Sea with the Magnificence of this Publick Joy.

Don Carlos, Philip's Son, who lived in the Popedom of Pius IV. had a particular Devotion for this Saint, and it was at his Desire that Philip moved for the Canonization: But this Unhappy Prince being since dead, and under the unfortunate Suspicion of a Design upon his Father's Life: Saint Didace was no more thought of, and Philip never stirr'd in the Matter again till the Time of Pius V. and Gregory XIII. who were not in the Mood to oblige his Catholick Majesty in the Point, either that they had not much Fancy for the Saint, or were not sufficiently satisfied in the Proof of his Miracles: As soon as Sixtus came upon the Throne of St. Peter, the King was very Importunate to have one of his Subjects in the Number of Saints for the Honour of the Spanish Nation. The new Pope, who had a Respect to the Order of St. Francis, was much better dispos'd to it than any of his Predecessors, and accordingly did appoint a Congregation, which was at length perform'd with a greater Magnificence than any had ever been before.

Sixtus compos'd a Prayer upon the Occasion in Honour of the Saint, and it was thought, he intended to reflect Honour upon himself, by mentioning the Meanness of his Birth and the Glory of his Exaltation. It was in these Words, *O Almighty and Eternal God, who by thy wonderful Wisdom makest choice of the weakest things to confound*

the strongest, Grant, if it be thy Will, to us thy humble Servants, thro' the Holy Prayers of thy happy Didace, Grace to be hereafter partakers of thy Heavenly Glory. It was observ'd he pronounc'd this with so clear and strong Voice, as surpriz'd some of the Cardinals, and made them say to one another: *We have nothing to hope for yet, for the Pope grows younger every Day.*

There were Two Squabbles happen'd at this Cony: One was indeed a Business which might have prov'd of Ill Consequence; the other of no great Importance. It was this: All the Regulars being order'd to go to St. Peter's in Procession upon the Day of the Canonization, the Reform'd would needs walk first, saying, *It was their Right because the Saint was of their Reform.* The other Mendicants answer'd, *That since the Solemnity was neither upon their Account nor at their charge, they should keep their usual Place.* The First presented a Memoria; to the Pope, with the Reasons they went upon, which were examin'd by Order of his Holiness, and the Reform'd condemn'd to walk last to do the greater Honour to a Saint of their Order. The Determination they look'd upon to be something rigorous, which put them upon a Second Petition for Redress, but they were answer'd, *Since they were not contented to pay that Respect to the other Religious as Brothers to Saint Didace, they should keep the rank they had formerly in.*

The other Dispute was indeed of such Consequence as to put the whole Court of Rome in a Flame, and had like to have hinder'd the Ceremony. The Pope was much disturb'd at it, because it was a want of Respect to him to make Disorders in a City, the Good Order of which he valued himself for as owing to his Good Laws and Care.

The Count d' Olivarez Ambassador from Spain, who never appear'd at publick Times for fear he should be forced to give the French Ambassador Place who never miss'd being there, gave out that he intended to assist at the Ceremony, and sent a Message to the French Ambassador by the Masters of the Ceremonies of St. Peter's Church, That he would at the Canonization take Place of all other Ambassadors that should be present. A Master had at last obtain'd it after a great trouble, and as the Action relate only to the Spanish Nation, the chief Honour was due to him.

The French Ambassador made Answer, That the Pontifical Offices perform'd in St. Peter's Church having no particular Relation to one more than another, every body might, if they pleas'd, be present, and all ought to keep the Place they were in possession of. The Spaniard replied, for this once when he ought to stay away: but the other would not give back, and said, He went in respect to the Character he bore, and if he should decline it, the King his Master would be displeas'd: These Reasons he concluded with Compliments and fine Excuses.

The Spanish Ambassador pushed it still farther and said, He was that Day obliged to perform some things, as the offering Presents from his Catholick Majesty, and other Ceremonies he must be concern'd in, such as required his being very near the Pope. T'other told him, He would by no means hinder him in any of those Affairs, but expected as they were dispatch'd, he should go out of Chapel, or come and take his Place below him.

This Contest made a great Noise in the Town, and the Reasons of one Side and t'other were look'd into for Three Days very nicely, the French Ambassador all the while refusing to take an Ace. The Spaniard assembled several Cardinals of that Nation at his House to deliberate coolly.

could upon a thing of that Importance. They were of different Opinions but the Major Part thought it best; *since nothing could be obtain'd of the French Ambassador, it should be ask'd him as a Favour and Civility this once to give the Count d' Olivarez Place.*

The Expedient did not please the Count, for besides that, he thought it a Derogation to his own Honour, the Spanish Gravity, which he esteem'd as far as any Man living, could not well truckle to it. However, since it was the Advice of the wisest of the Spanish Cardinals, he submitted to it contrary to his own Sentiments; and sent Two of his Gentlemen to desire the Ambassador of France, he would grant him the Favour but for this once.

He answer'd with abundance of Civility, *That he would with all his Heart consent to what was asked, he did not believe it would be a Prejudice to that Privilege the Ambassadors of France had enjoyed time out of mind, for him to appear at the first Chamber his Holiness held upon such an Occasion (at which Ceremonies the other never used to be present) and would take his Place below the other, and give a formal Precedent for the Practice.*

Olivarez was vex'd at the Answer, which he told the Cardinals of his Faction, having sent for them upon the Business: He express'd his Uneasiness for having been prevail'd upon to ask a Favour he foresaw could not be obtain'd but, to his Prejudice, and they were to blame for putting him upon't. Then he ask'd their Advice once more, and there was not one of 'em but was against his complying with what was expected from him. He answer'd the French Ambassador, *that he would take special Care not to renounce a Pretension which was his Right, and that he should find Means of obtaining that by Decisions of Justice,* which

which was not allow'd him when he asked it as a Favour.

These Two Ministers began to be in such a Heat with one another, that they were preparing to take Arms for the Defence of their Right. The Spaniards and those of their Faction got about the Count, and the French drew together at their Ambassador's Palace; so that it was thought the Disturbance would not only interrupt Canonization, but create Disorders and Division in the City.

Sixtus hearing of these tumultuous Proceedings, was in a great wrath with the Two Ambassadors, and told them with his natural fierce Looks; *That they should both 'em be quiet; that he would not allow them to disturb the publick Peace, and affront the Authority of the Holy See by keeping Men arm'd in their Palaces; and that since he never would let his Nuncios do it at Paris or Madrid, he did not intend either French or Spaniard should arm at Rome.*

Then he summon'd a Cabinet Congregation of Cardinals of both Nations, and blamed them severely for not preventing this Disturbance, which they might have done if they would. Some of the Cardinals answer'd him with a little too much Heat, and it was thought they had carried it so far as to make Sixtus fly out into such a Passion with them as was usual with him. At length the Weakest must knock under, and it was agreed that every one should do his Endeavour to make up the Business, which in the End was brought about to the Advantage of the French. The Spanish Minister was heartily vexed, but was forced to keep his Wrath to himself, for fear of putting off the Ceremony which the King his Master passionately desired.

The Expedient that was agreed upon was this, That the Count *de Olivarez* should be that Day Indispos'd, and therefore not appear; that Cardinal *Deza* should represent him, who should take his Place below the *French* Ambassador, and perform all the Offices the *Spanish* Minister was to have perform'd if he had been there. He was in such a Rage at his being forc'd to keep House during that Magnificent Ceremony, which he had been Four Years Solliciting with his utmost endeavours, that it was a great while before he could forgive the *French*.

This Canonization made *Sixtus* have a mind to do some Act of Piety that should be for the Honour and Benefit of all *Christendom*, and particularly of the City of *Rome*. Accordingly he set apart Three Thousand Crowns a Year out of the Revenue of the Grand Fraternity of the *Gonfalo* to redeem poor Slaves out of the Infidels Hands, with Directions that the poorest and most miserable should be First fetch'd out, and of them the Subjects of the Holy See in the first place.

Many other Acts of Charity were done by him, and tho' he was naturally inclined to hoard up Money, yet he was profuse when the Poor were in distress, and particularly those of 'em that were Modest. He would intrust some Good Monks with Sums of Money, which from time to time they were to bestow upon poor Widows that had a great charge of Children, and amongst the rest such as had Children to dispose of in Marriage. Such was his care of their Honour that he gave no Quarter to any that attempted to Debauch them either by force or persuasion. He condemn'd above Fifty of them to the Gallies some of which had broke open Doors to come at the Young Ladies and attempt their Chastity; and

and tho' they had not carried their point, he made no more ado but put 'em in the Chain without farther trouble. Two young Rakes were one day took up by the Sergeants, and put in Prison for breaking a Window to get into a House where a young Woman was. The Governour thought the Gallies too severe a Punishment for such a Fault, and a few Days Imprisonment enough; but fearing on t'other side to disoblige the Pope, who had a mortal aversion to insolent Doings, went to give him an Account of it, and told him since they were prevented and no harm done, it should go for a Youthful Folly and not be too severely prosecuted. *Sixtus* when he heard him give so favourable an Interpretation of the matter; said; *I did not make you Judge to plead the Cause of Criminals, but to pass Sentence upon them according to the Letter of the Law; and since you will be an Advocate for them I'll give your place to somebody else, and you may Plead what you think fit before him.*

These dreadful Words startled the poor Governour, who knowing the Pope's Humour pretty well, concluded himself within an Ace of being turn'd out. He excus'd himself the best he could, and tried to make it up by an abundant Respect and Submission. *Sixtus* came to himself a little, and spoke to him something more moderately, telling him, *If these People were not Punish'd for their ill Intentions, and sent to the Gallies, they would some time or other come to the Gallows for acting what they have now been disappointed in.*

A Lawyers Son of *Perusia* was used still more severely; we can't but mention his Misfortune. This Youngster's Father being newly come to Practice at *Rome*; he was strangely smitten with a Widow's Daughter, a celebrated Beauty: H

mad

made honourable love to her, but the Mother intending to bellow her upon one of her Relations was against it. The Spark was upon the Point of despairing, yet bethought himself of a contrivance to carry his Mistress. He knew she was to go to Vessers at a Church a great way off; he stopt her in the Street, lift up her Vail and Kiss'd her in spite of what she or her Mother could do to hinder it, who cried out as loud as she could, and brought a great Mob about her; and that was an opportunity for the Mad Lover to shift for himself.

The poor Woman thinking her Daughters Reputation gone went immediately to the Pope to desire Justice, who order'd him to be Prosecuted immediately for the Insolence he had been guilty of in such Rudeness to a Woman of Honour in the middle of the Street. He was protected by the House of *Colono*, who manag'd the Affair so that the Mother consented to Marry her Daughter to the Gentleman, and when she was Married the Scandal would cease of course, which was the occasion of the Suit; and upon this both Parties were agreed, and waited upon the Pope to let his Holiness know it.

They got a Licence of the Vicar of *Rome*, and accordingly were Married next Day, and abundance of Relations on both Sides invited: Just as they were sitting down to Dinner, an Officer with Sergeants after him came in and spoil'd the Merriment by taking away the Bridegroom and committing him to Prison by the Governours Orders, who receiv'd him from the Pope.

One may imagine this put the whole Company into a consternation and made the Bride very uneasy: They put back the Dinner, and away went the Bridegroom's Father and the Bride's Mother to the Governour in all haste to enquire what

what he intended to do with his Prisoner; he made 'em no other Answer but *That the Pope would give an Account of him.*

Next Day they went to Petition His Holiness for their Son's Liberty; telling him, *The Marriage had repair'd the Injury done to the Woman, and there was no more Quarrel or Suit between the Parties.* Sixtus had laid this matter to heart, and would have all Parties sent for before him, together with the Governour, whom he had before instructed what Answer to give.

When they were all come, he ask'd them one after another, *If they were Content?* Every Body Answering *they had now no cause to Complain:* He said, *I am glad to see you are all satisfied, but we must enquire whether Justice be satisfied too; for since you won't concern your selves in her cause, it is not fit she should have reason to complain of me and you both.* Then turning to the Governour, *What think You,* says he, *Master Governour, of this Wedding, are you pleas'd with it? have you nothing to say against it?* The Governour, who had his Lesson from Sixtus before; Answer'd, *That Justice was not made Amends for the Affront the young Man had put upon her, by such a contempt of the Sovereign Authority, as doing Violence to a Woman of Honour, in the middle of the Street; and that Reparation ought to be made.* *If that be the Case,* replied the Pope, *do you take care Justice be satisfied, since they that should have look'd to it are content without, and have all the satisfaction they could hope for.* He dismiss'd the Company, and sent the Bridegroom to Goal, Ordering the Governour to Prosecute him immediately, and Condemn him to the Gallies, to repair the Injur'd Honour of a Virgin, and for violating the respect due to the Sovereign Pontiff and the Laws of the Country by an Offence so publick. The Governour, who

make his Court to the Pope, had examin'd the Witnesses already, brought on the Trial and Condemn'd him to the Gallies for Five Years, to the Amazement of the whole Town, who were us'd to see so small Faults draw down so rigorous Punishment. But *Sixtus* look'd on it as a very enormous Crime.

The *Colonos* who had interpos'd and made up the Match, were sensibly affected with the Young Man's disgrace. *Sixtus* had indeed a great value for them, and they employ'd their Interest to obtain his Pardon; but all in vain, the Pope forgot the Friendship he us'd to shew 'em upon many Occasions; and Talk'd to them thus, *I don't reckon those my Friends who labour to have Faults go unpunish'd. Can I depend upon their Friendship when I see 'em take the part of an Insolent Rogue against Justice and the Law? such Faults are of Ill Consequence for the Example they give, and should I wink at this, it would give Authority to a great many more such. A Woman ought to be applied to in the ordinary Methods of Courtship and the Honourable Ones, and not by Force and Violence. If a stop were not put here there would be none but such Weddings. Parents would be no longer Masters of their own Daughters, if a Rude Young Fellow, that could give no good Account of himself, were allow'd to go Kiss a Woman in the middle of the Street, and so force her Friends to Marry her to him. An't please God there shall no such Abuse creep into Precedent while I have the Governient of the Church.*

Cardinal *Colono*, who was by, endeavour'd to appease the Old Gentleman, telling him, *He thought the Fault had been Forgiven, by the Union of both Parties.* But *Sixtus* replied, *The Amends does not reach to Justice, who was first Affronted; 'Tis her care to keep the Streets of the City in Peace and Quietness, and if Women can't be Safe in the*
Publick

Publick Ways which belong to me, how shall they be secure in their Houses? Once again, I will not Pardon such Insolence.

Cardinal Colono went away without gaining any thing, and the Pope gave the Governour Orders to do his Duty. The Sentence was Executed, and the poor Young Spark put into the Chain for Five Years, at the same place where the Offence had been committed. The Disconsolate Bride laid it sorely to Heart, and in a Few Days fairly Died.

'Tis impossible to express, or indeed imagine, how Nice and Strict *Sixtus* was in preserving Women's Honour, particularly when they were abroad in the open Streets. A Maid was going early one Morning for a Midwife, and met a Gentleman's Servant who blow'd out her Candle she had in a Lanthorn, and all to get one Kiss. The Wench made such a Noise as made the Fellow run for't, but he staid long enough for her to know who he was. She complain'd to her Master who was but a Linnen-Draper, how Impudent the Man had been, but he thought it not worth while to trouble himself about it.

Sixtus heard of it Three Days after, sent for the Governour and blam'd him for neglect in not keeping the Town in better Order; commanded him to have the Footman Arrested, who was Bastinadoed quite through the Street he had committed the Offence in. The Draper for not Prosecuting him, and letting one 'scape to the prejudice of the Publick, was put in Prison for some Days.

This Severity had brought *Rome* into so good Order, that a Woman might walk the Streets as safely as a Nun in a Convent. The City did indeed want it, to suppress that Scandalous Liberty which had obtain'd in the Pontificate of *Gregory XII*.

whole

Loose Government and easiness to grant Pardons, had made the *Roman* Youth fly out at such a rate, that the most Virtuous Women and Modest Virgins were not safe either in the Streets or their own Houses; and People were forced to put their Children into Convents as not secure at Home.

Nor did this intense Application to see Justice executed, take *Sixtus* off from Works of Piety, which it may not be amiss to mention. Out of a particular Devotion he appointed the Feast of the Virgin's Presentation, and that of *St. Francis de Paulo*, at the earnest Request of the Religious *Minims*, whose Founder that Saint was, and he went to Mass in their Church upon the Day of the Solemnity, which is the Second of *April*. The *Augustines* desired him also to set up the Feast of *St. Nicolas* of the *Tolentine*, which he granted them because that Saint was a Native of the Marquisate. He canonized also *St. Anthony* of *Padua*, by whose Intercession he own'd he had received particular Favours when he lived in a Cloyster. The Arch-Bishop and City of *Naples* obtain'd of him to have *St. Januier Martyr*, Bishop of that Place, canonized with his Companions; and the *Dominicans* procured the same for *St. Peter Martyr* a Monk of their Order.

It was by his special Orders that the Feast of *Saint Placidus Martyr* was solemnized with his Companions, *Eutychar* and *Victorinus* his Brothers, and their Sister *Flavia*, whose Names he had registred in the *Roman* Calendar. Their Bodies had been this Year found in the Church of *St. John Baptist de Messina*, as they were digging up the Foundation of an old Wall to rebuild it. It was known by the Account of their Lives that they were buried in this Church, but whereabouts was uncertain.

Placidus was Contemporary with *Saint Benoist*, and had taken up his Rules, living with his Brothers and Sister at *Messina*. They went one Day out to pay a Visit to this Great Saint, and were taken by the *Saracens*, whose Army was commanded by King *Abdala*, an Enemy and Persecutor of the Church, who sentenc'd 'em to die after he had tormented them in a cruel manner in order to make them abjure the Faith. There was powerful Application made to his Holiness, that he would grant Indulgencies to the Church where their Bodies were found; which he soon did by an Authentick Bull. Further he appointed the Feast of their Translation to be kept, and the Office to be perform'd in the same Church.

Sixtus spared nothing to enlarge the Pontifical Authority: And full well knowing there was nothing could contribute to that like concerning himself in all the Affairs of *Europe*, he would have a Hand in the most important Negotiations of Christian Princes, and did all he could to be made Arbitrator in them. It was this made him send a Legate à latere to *Poland*, to obtain that *Maximilian* of *Austria*, whom we mentioned in the last Book, might be set at Liberty, and the Differences of that Kingdom might be made up, under Pretence of averting those Mischiefs *Christendom* was threatned with.

For this Affair he made choice of Cardinal *Hippolyto Aldobrandine*, who went from *Rome* in *May* 1588. with a great Train of Officers and Prelates suitable to his Quality of Legate, with full Power, as was set forth in his Bull, and begins thus *To our Beloved Son Hippolyto, &c.* He recommended it to his Care to employ his utmost Skill and Prudence to manage this important Business, upon the Success of which depended the Safety of *Poland* both Temporal and Spiritual.

Spiritual, and which would go a great way towards advancing the Reverence due to the Sovereign Pontiff and the Holy See.

Aldobrandine accepted the Post with abundance of Joy, and reckoning more upon the Assistance of Heaven and the Prayers of His Holiness than his own Capacity and Zeal, was in great Hopes his Business would succeed.

He went with all convenient Speed to *Poland*, and as soon as he came thither, began to treat upon the Matter as dextrously as he could, with both Parties, sometimes with the Emperor *Rhodolphus*, sometimes with *Sigismond*. He held both publick and private Conferences with the Nobility of the Kingdom, which were appointed to make an Accommodation; and appear'd at the Dyets which *Vendovius* had summon'd in *Bohemia*. At length God bless'd him with Success, and after he had conquer'd, by his Industry, all the Rubsthat lay in his way, the Peace was concluded in *March*, 1589. between the *Poles* and the House of *Austria*, to the Satisfaction of both Parties; and an Agreement made between *Sigismond* and *Maximilian*, this last was set at Liberty upon Condition he would no more lay Claim to the Crown of *Poland*, by Virtue of his pretended Election, when *Sigismond* was dead, and that he should acknowledge him the true and Lawful Sovereign of the Kingdom.

They took a Solemn Oath in the Cathedral-Church, administred by the Legate to keep the Treaty inviolable, and witness'd it by this Act according to an old Custom, to make the thing more solemn and binding: *Rhodolphus II.* by the Grace of God chosen King of the Romans, Emperor Augustus, &c. I swear and promise upon the Holy Gospels, to keep and see executed in every Point and Article inviolably, the Treaty of Peace now conclu-

ded by the Mediation of our Holy Father the Pope, and the most Reverend Cardinal Aldobrandine his Legate à Latere, between our Commissioners, and the Commissioners of our Brethren the other Princes of Germany on the one part; and the Deputies of the most serene Prince Sigismund III. King of Poland, Great Duke of Lithuania, and the Deputies of the Kingdom of Bohemia on the other part: ~~to~~ maintain perpetual Union and Concord by Virtue of the foresaid Treaty between Us and the said King of Poland, and other States and Provinces concern'd in the Treaty: In my Fidelity to which, I pray God to assist me by the Holy Gospels.

As soon as the Agreement was concluded, the Legate sent away his Nephew to give the Pope an Account of it, he was a Young Man, ~~Clement~~ Passero by Name, Son to one of his Sisters whom he had always loved dearly. Nor was his Kindness to his Nephew less, he had taken him to Poland because of his great Prudence and admirable Learning; and when he came to the Pope ~~under~~ by the Name of Clement VIII. he made him Cardinal with the Title of St. George, and would have him called Cardinal Aldobrandine after himself.

He went away with Two of his Household in Company, and made such Hast that he got to Rome in Twelve Days. All the Prelates of the Court of Rome receiv'd him with great Demonstrations of Kindness: and the Pope was very well pleas'd with the News he brought from Poland, which it may not be unacceptable to touch upon, though indeed it falls into the Year 1589.

The Legate began his Journey homeward in a little time after his Nephew, and left behind him great Character for a Man of Virtue and a Good Genius. A vast Number of Gentlemen waited
of

of him as he set out, and many of 'em shewed by their Tears how sorry they were to part with him. Nor were the People less concern'd at the Loss of him, as appear'd from the Good Wishes they sent away with him.

The Pope, to honour him still more with fresh Instances of his Confidence in him, sent him Orders to regulate some other Affairs of Consequence which would not take up much time. The Governors of the Towns he pass'd through, as well without as within the *Ecclesiastical State*, used him with abundance of Respect, and amongst the rest the Governor of *Bologna*, where he staid Two Days to refresh himself, and was treated all the time nobly at the Cost of the City.

When he was come almost to *Rome*, the whole Sacred College, with a great many Prelates and *Roman* Barons, went out of Town to meet him, with so numerous a Train of Coaches as reached the whole Length of the Streets which was above a Mile. The Pope sent also the Cardinal *Aldobrandino* his Nephew to meet him, and would have him make his Entry in his Coach, with a Detachment of the Guards to attend him, in Honour that no Cardinal ever enjoy'd upon his Return from a Legateship.

The new Palace of *Lateran*, which *Sixtus* had built so fine, and we spoke of in the foregoing Book, was now finish'd. *Sixtus* having furnish'd it some few Days before Cardinal *Aldobrandino* arriv'd, would give him his first Audience in this new Building.

He gave his Holiness an Account of his Journey in the great Hall when all the Cardinals were present, who heard it with abundance of Pleasure. The Pope was overjoy'd to find with how much Wisdom and Address he had compleated

a Business of such Importance, and which was clogg'd with Difficulties that seem'd insuperable. The whole Court went to visit him; there was nothing talk'd of for some Days but the Glory he had gain'd by that Negotiation: And the Pope having a better Opinion of his Capacity than ever, let him have a Share in State-Affairs, and would often say when he spoke of him, *that he had last found a Man after his Heart.*

To return where we broke off, we must speak of the famous Library of the *Vatican*, which he spared no Cost or Trouble to make the finest and richest in the Universe; with this stately Work he crown'd all his Undertakings in the Year 1588. Since this Library passes all the World over for a Wonder, it may not be amiss to give a particular Description of it here, that People may have a clear Notion of the Thing, and chiefly we do it for the sake of those who have never been at *Rome*.

The Account it's hoped will not be disagreeable to any that reads this History, and tho' the Relation be somewhat long, it may however not be reckoned tedious by those that are curious and diligent in Antiquities.

One of the finest things in the Palace of the *Vatican* is the Place called *Belvedor*, which joins to a spacious and lofty Theater. Pope *Pius V.* adorned it below with Benches of very fine Marble all round for Convenience of the People's sitting when any Shew was given 'em.

Sixtus made choice of this Place to build his Library in, and pull'd down those Seats, the Materials of which he employ'd in this great Building. He added to it Lodgings for the Officers that were to take care of the Books, and other Men of Learning, and a fine Apartment for the Cardinal

Cardinal that was to be Library-keeper, if he had a Mind sometimes to reside there.

The Library is a sort of Vessel Three Hundred Foot long and about Seventy Foot wide, divided length-ways by a Row of Pilasters, placed in a very good Order which seem to bear up the Roof. It is open on the North Side, thro' which very good Light comes in. It has Windows besides to the South and West, and Two great Halls in which the choicest Books are kept. No Strangers are permitted to go in there except Prélates, or very considerable Persons who have Recommendations to the Library-keepers.

Sixtus had the Walls of this Building painted both within and without, by the most famous Painters of the Age. There were drawn upon the Outside, which was plastered black and white, several Emblems relating to the Sciences and Virtues, and other things with pretty References to Books and Learning; the Solution of which was mighty grateful to Strangers that had a Relish of Learning.

In the Inside, which is adorn'd with work of a nobler and finer sort, is painted all that *Sixtus* had hitherto done, with Inscriptions explaining these great Performances. And farther, the sixteen General Councils are represented, under every one of which there is an Inscription so fine and so useful to all that desire to know the History of the Church, that No body can wish we had left 'em out of our Book.

Under the First Council of *Nice* these Words are written; *St. Sylvester Pope, and Flavius Constantine* (named the Great, Emperor: *Jesus Christ the Son of God is declared Consubstantial with the Father, the Impiety of Arius is condemn'd, and the Emperor, in pursuance of a Decree of the Council, has the Arian Books burnt.*

Under the next Council, which was the First held at *Constantinople* are these Words, *Saint Damasus Pope, and Theodosius the Elder Emperor: The Divinity of the Holy Ghost is maintain'd against the wicked Macedonius, whose false Doctrine is Anathematized.*

Then comes the Council of *Ephesus*, with this *Saint Celestine Pope, and Theodosius the Younger Emperor: Nestorius who divided Jesus Christ condemn'd, and the Holy Virgin acknowledg'd to be the Mother of God.*

In the next Place is the first Council of *Calcedon*, with this Inscription; *Saint Leo Pope, and Marcian Emperor, pronounc'd an Anathema upon the unhappy Eutychus, who allow'd but one Nature in Jesus Christ.*

The Second of *Constantinople*, which is the Fifth Oecumenical Council, is thus explain'd; *Vigilius Pope, and Justinian Emperor; The Contest about the Three Chapters is brought to an end, and the Errors of Origen cast away from the Holy Doctrine.*

The Third of *Constantinople* with these Words; *Saint Agathus Pope, and Constantine Pogonates Emperor; The Monothelite Hereticks, who admitted but one Will in Jesus Christ, are condemn'd.*

The Second Council of *Nice* is thus explain'd; *Adrian Pope, and Constantine the Son of Irenæus Emperor; The Impiety of the Iconomagi is rejected, and the Worshipping of Holy Images restored in the Church.*

The next Council of *Constantinople* thus; *Arian II. Pope, and Basilius Emperor; Ignatius Patriarch of Constantinople is restored to his See, and Photius his Usurper expell'd with disgrace.*

Next in Order is the First Council of *Lancran*, and under it these Words; *Alexander III. Pope,*

Pope, and Frederick I. Emperor; The Errors of the Vaudois and Cathairi are condemn'd; Tournaments condemn'd, and Discipline restored amongst Clergy and Laity both.

The Second Council of Lateran hath this Explication; Innocent III. Pope, and Frederick II. Emperor; The False Opinions of the Abbot Joakchim condemn'd; the Holy War for the recovering of Jerusalem resolv'd upon, and the Crusado instituted amongst Christians.

By the Side of this Council stands St. Francis, bearing the Church of St. John de Lateran on his Back, for fear it should fall to the Ground; and the Vision Pope Innocent had in a Dream, thus explain'd; Pope Innocent III. saw in his Sleep St. Francis holding up the Church of St. John de Lateran, that it should not drop down.

On t' other Side stands St. Dominick, whose Zeal for the Faith, under the same Pontificate, extinguish'd a dangerous Heresy that took its Rise at Tholouse, and these Words in short set forth his Great Acts: Simon Count de Montfort, by the Persuasion of St. Dominick, encounters and defeats the Albigenian Hereticks.

Then follows the first Council of Lyon, and is thus explain'd; Under the Pontificate of Innocent IV. The Emperor Frederick II. is declared an Enemy to the Church, and deprived of his Imperial Throne. There are Deliberations about recovering the Holy Land: Saint Louis King of France is declared Chief of the Expedition: The Cardinals are honour'd with the Red Hat.

In the next Place the Second General Council held in the same City, with these Words; Gregor. A Sovereign Pontiff, The Greeks are reunited to the Church of Rome: St. Bonaventure performs signal Service for the Church in this Council: Brother Jerom a Franciscan Monk brings the
King

King of the Tartars to the Council, who there in a solemn Manner partakes of the saving Water of Baptism.

Under the Council of Vienna, which is the Thirteenth, in Order are these Words; Under the Pontificate of Clement V. the Decretal Books called the Clementine after that Pope, are receiv'd and publish'd the Proceſſion of the Holy Sacrament instituted at Christendom over; and Professors of the Oriental Languages set up in the Four most famous Universities of Europe, for the sake of spreading the Christian Faith in the East.

The Council of Florence is thus explain'd, The Greeks, Armenians, and Ethiopians are re-united to the Catholick Church under the Pontificate of Eugenius IV.

Under the Fourth General Council held at Lateran is this Inscription; War is declared against the Turks who have got possession of the Isle of Cyprus, and of Ægypt by the Sultan's Death who was King of them; the Emperor Maximilian, and Francis King of France, are named Generals in this War under Pope Julius II. and Leo X.

Then comes at last the Holy Council of Trent, the last Oecumenical one, and these Words underneath; Paul III. Julius III. and Pius IV. reigning at Rome; The Lutherans and other Hereticks are condemn'd, and the Discipline of the Church restor'd to an exact and regular Practice.

Besides these Councils there are painted in the same Hall, all the most famous Libraries that have been in the World, the Names of which follow, with some Inscriptions necessary to explain them. They begin with the Hebrew Books, and these Words, Moses gives the Book of the Law to the Levites to place it in the Tabernacle; Eudras the Priest the Son of Scraiah restored the Holy Scriptures.

Book IX. Pope SIXTUS V.

363

The Library of the *Chaldeans* which was at *Babylon* is thus explain'd; *Daniel and his Companions, make themselves Masters of the Chaldee Learning; by Order of Darius the Decree is sought for which Cyrus made for the Restoration of the Temple.*

The Library of the *Greeks* at *Athens*, has this Explication; *Pisistratus was the First that set up a Library amongst the Greeks: Seleucus has that brought back again which Xerxes had carried away from them.*

The *Roman Books* are thus explain'd; *Tarquinius Superbus buys Three Books of the Sybil, at the same rate as he might have had all the Six before she burnt the other half; Augustus Cæsar, when he had erected the Palatine Library, takes care to provide for Men of Letters.*

Next appears the *Alexandrian Library* filled with *Egyptian Books*, and these Words; *Ptolemy has a mind to add the Hebrew Books to a great many more; collected by his Order: The Seventy Interpreters sent him by Eleazer, make him a Present of the Sacred Books.*

The Library of *Jerusalem* is thus explain'd; *Saint Alexander Bishop and Martyr in the Reign of Decius, makes a Collection of Books concerning the Christian Religion at the time of a severe Persecution.*

Under the Library of *Cæsarea* are these Words; *Saint Pamphilus Priest and Martyr, a Person of exemplary Holiness and Learning, composes a Library, several Volumes of which are wrote with his own hand.*

The *Apostolick Library* which comes after that of *Cæsarea*, is distinguished by this Inscription; *Saint Peter has all the Sacred Books laid up together, and Orders them to be carefully kept in the Church of Rome.*

Last

Last of all comes the Library of the Sovereign Pontiffs with this Inscription; *The Roman Pontiffs apply themselves with great Diligence to adorn and augment the Library of the Happy Apostles.*

The Description of these Councils and Libraries being in some sort necessary to the Understanding of this History, upon Account of the Curiosities therein contain'd, it's hop'd the Reader will not think 'em better left out; nor the rest of the Paintings with which this vast Structure is adorn'd. There is indeed a good Use to be made of it all, as *Sixtus* intended, that those who have never seen it may be a little acquainted with so great a Rarity, and others that have been there may have their Memory refresh'd by a particular Relation of what there is: And all together is as much for the Benefit of those that see it, as the Credit of the Author.

To go on where we broke off, next come the Great Men who have made themselves famous in the World by Inventions of Learning. *Adam* in the first Place is painted upon a Pillar with this Inscription; *Adam being instructed by God himself, was the first Inventor of Sciences and Letters.*

Upon the Second Pillar are represented the Children of *Seth*, *Adam's* Younger Son, distinguished by these Words: *The Children of Seth engrave upon Two Pillars the Knowledge of the Heavenly Bodies.*

After we see *Abraham*, with this; *Abraham invented the Syriack and Chaldee Characters.*

Moses the Chief, and Legislator of the People of God, is next in Order, with this Inscription; *Moses the Inventor of the ancient Hebrew Letters.*

Book IX. *Pope SIXTUS V.*

365

Esdras the Priest and Scribe of the *Hebrew* People, is on the Side of *Moses*, thus set forth; *Esdras* Inventor of the *New Hebrew Characters*.

Upon the Third Pillar appears *Mercury* the *Egyptian*, and these Words; *The Divine Mercury taught the Egyptians the Letters consecrated to Religion*.

After him *Hercules* the *Egyptian* with this; *Hercules the Egyptian Invented the Phrygian Letters*.

Memnon who comes after *Hercules* has this Inscription; *Memnon, Contemporary of Pharaoh Necho, Taught the Egyptians the Art of Writing*.

Isis Queen of *Egypt* is represented near him, with these Words; *Isis Queen of the Egyptians Invented Letters in her Kingdom*.

On the Fourth Pillar is Painted *Phoenix*, and this; *Phoenix Taught the Phœnicians Letters*.

Cadmus also is there represented with the Sixteen *Greek* Characters attributed to his Invention, and these Words; *Cadmus, Brother to Phoenix, found out Sixteen Letters of the Grecian Alphabet*.

'Tis commonly said, *Palamedes* added Four more, and *Simonides Milesius* as many, which together make Twenty Four. *Aristotle*, as *Pliny* tells us, says there were but Eighteen of the Ancient Characters; and that *Epicharmus*, not *Palamedes*, added only Two more. But the great Distance between those Times and ours make the Account so obscure that it is not to be depended upon.

Linus of *Thebes* is represented upon the same Pillar, with *Cecrops* King of *Athens*. To the First there's this Inscription; *Linus the Theban, Inventor of the Greek Letters*. And under the Second these Words; *Cecrops the First King of the Athenians, was also the First Inventor of Letters among the Greeks*.

The

The Wise and Learned Philosopher *Pythagoras* is upon the Fifth Pillar, with this Inscription; *Pythagoras First made use of Letters to give Lessons for the Civil Life.*

On t'other Side the Pillar is *Epicharmus* of *Sicily*, with this; *Epicharmus the Sicilian added Two Letters to the Alphabet of the Greeks.* By him are *Simon the Milesian*, and *Palamedes*; under the First is to be read; *Simon the Milesian Inventor of Four Greek Letters.* Under the other; *Palamedes Invented Four more in the time of the Trojan War.*

Nicostrata Carmenta, *Evander's Mother* is upon the Sixth Pillar, thus set forth; *Nicostrata who Invented the Latin Letters.* The Letters are also set down, A B C D E G I L M N O P R S T V. *Evander King of Arcadia* is by her; with these Words; *Evander Son of Carmenta, First Taught the Aborigines Letters.*

In the next place comes *Demarathus* of *Corinth*, with this Inscription; *Demarathus the Corinthian, Author of Letters among the Tuscans.*

The Emperor *Claudius* is on the Side of him, and these Words under him; *Claudius the Roman Emperour Invented There New Roman Characters.* Over his Head is to be seen an F, and these Words; *The Two other Letters were left out to shew That alone remains of those this Prince Invented.* Yet it's not very probable that the Emperour *Claudius* should find out the Letter F, since *Cicero* who Liv'd long before his Time, makes mention of it in his Letters to *Atticus*, where speaking of one of his Country-houses called *Formiana* he nam'd it by way of Jest *Digamma*, because it was a Character that represented Two Γ's as F does. So that it is not likely that Emperour was the Inventor of it, but rather Added something to its Figure or Pronunciation.

St. *John Chrysoftom* is Painted upon the Seventh Pillar, with this Inscription; *St. Chrysoftom Inventor of the Armenian Letters*: Then comes *St. Jerom* who may be known by his Leanness as well as these Words; *St. Jerom Inventor of the Illyrick Letters*: After him follows *St. Cyril* and under him these Words; *Cyril Invented the rest of the Illyrick Letters*.

Ulphon Bishop of the *Goths* is under *St. Cyril*, with this Inscription; *Ulphon Invented the Gothick Letters*.

Upon the Eighth and Last Pillar *Jesus Christ* is represented and these Words; *Jesus Christ Sovereign Master of the Heavenly Doctrine*.

The Pope *Sixtus* is drawn to the Life, and the Emperor even with him; Under the First is Written; *The Vicar of our Lord Jesus Christ*: Under the Second; *The Church's Defender*.

These are the most Remarkable of the Paintings in this most Noble Place. The Two other Great Rooms in which the Choicest Books are kept are Adorn'd with the Pictures of the Doctors of the Church, and of many other Great Saints, and the Representation of the Finest of *Sixtus's* Works. Lest we Tire the Reader, we will mention only Two Fine Inscriptions cut upon Marble in Letters of Gold, fix'd up in the Great Library. They are as follows.

It is strictly Enjoin'd that all the Articles of the Regulation which Sixtus V. Sovereign Pontiff, made by a Bull for the preservation of the Books in the Library of the Vatican, be punctually observ'd. All the Officers of the said place are forbid upon pain of Excommunication, excepting his Holiness, to carry away, Embezzle, or Lend any one Book to any Person whatsoever, or upon any pretence whatsoever. And they are enjoin'd farther under the same Penalty, to hinder any Body else from Stealing, Abusing,

or Tearing any of them by Carelessness, Ignorance or Ill Design.

The other Inscription which stands on the Left Hand is thus; *Sixtus V. Sovereign Pontiff, Built this Pile from the Bottom, to preserve in a place suitable to the Respect and Veneration due to Sacred Books, those who have been at the trouble of Collecting these Holy Men from the Infancy of the Church, who had the Honour to hear the Voice of St. Peter the Prince of the Apostles. These Books which were laid up in the Church of St. John de Lateran, since Christians began to enjoy Peace and Quiet, were afterwards remov'd to the Vatican, for the Pope's greater conveniency. Nicolas V. and Sixtus IV. augmented their Number considerably, as well to keep up the Ancient Discipline of the Church, and the Unity of the Faith in the Purity it was first deliver'd, as to spread the Truth over all Parts of the World. The Place where they had been kept being Dark, Unconvenient, and Unhealthful, he Erected this with its Vestibulums, Porticos, Stairs, Chambers, and other Noble Lodgings; Built Shelves and Desks in it; Adorn'd it with Paintings by the best Hands of the Age, Furnish'd it with all that can contribute to the Advancement of the Liberal Arts and Sciences, and Dedicated it to the Use of the Publick, in the Year of our Lord 1583. And the Fourth of his Pontificate.*

It's without all Dispute the Biggest and Finest Library in the Universe. For besides, that it is Stock'd with *Latin, Greek, Hebrew, and Arabick* Manuscripts, and Others of many Languages, which *Sixtus* pick'd up with vast Trouble and Expence, it was still Augmented with the Ruins of that which belong'd to the Princes *Palatine* of the *Rhine*, and was indeed one of the most Famous Collections in *Europe*; the Greatest part of them was sent to *Rome* by the Count *de Tilly* when he had

had got *Heydelburg* into his Hands, the Capital of the *Palatinate*.

Near this Library *Sixtus* also Built a Large Printing-House, to Provide Exact and Correct Editions of Books that were Faulty, and purge 'em from the Errors which the corrupt Faith of Hereticks had Foisted into them. And particularly for the sake of Printing the Holy Scriptures in several Languages, *Christian Exhortations*, *The Miraculous Works of the Fathers of the Church*, &c. to spread Religion over the remotest Countries, and maintain its Purity where it has been Establish'd so many Ages.

He committed this Important and Difficult Work to the care of *Dominick de Baza*, a Man Famous for his Great Learning and long Experience in this Employment. And he acquitted himself so well, that the Printing-Office was in a short Time Furnish'd with all Things suitable to the Greatness of the Undertaking, and the Glory of its Founder, the Impression manag'd with all the Diligence and Fidelity requisite to so Great and Noble a Profession.

 The TENTH BOOK.

IN the Beginning of this Year *France* was afflicted with Great Misfortunes that reach'd as far as *Rome*, and gave the Pope abundance of Uneasiness: Which makes it necessary to say something of the Cause and Rise of them as briefly as we can.

King *Henry III.* was resolv'd to get rid of the Duke of *Guise*, not being able to bear the Authority and Interest that Prince had gain'd among the People of *Paris*, by his generous Behaviour. The Jealousy he conceiv'd upon the shameful Distinction they made, at length put him upon this cruel Resolution. He sent for him upon the Twenty third of *December*, 1588. and as the Duke was coming into his Chamber, Nine of the Guards surrounded him and killed him with their Swords and Bajonets. He fell down at their Feet without being able to make any Resistance, or shewing his Repentment any otherwise than by Sighs.

The Pope had the News of it upon the Third of *January* after by an Express. His Holiness at the Time was talking with the Cardinal de *Joyeuse* about the Disorders and Feuds of *France*. The Thing did not move *Sixtus* much when he heard it, and tho' he knew the Duke de *Guise* to be a Zealous Defender of the Catholick Religion, out of Policy he discover'd no great Concern for
his

his Death, thinking he ought to take Part with the Sovereign Authority against all the rash Attempts of a Subject as Ambitious as the Duke, whose Practices had gone a great way to cool the Fidelity of the French to their King. As soon as the Melancholick Story was told him, he shrugg'd up his Shoulders, and turning to the Cardinal de Joyeuse, said, *I should have done just the same if I had been King of France.* Then he asked a particular Account of the Action, and when he had heard it, said; *This is generally the Fate of those who embarque without Foresight and Judgment in the acting Crimes, which their Ambition blinding them deceives 'em into.* But Four Days after, when he was inform'd the Cardinal de Guise was forced the same as his Brother, and that the Cardinal de Bourbon and the Arch-Bishop of Lions were taken up, he fell into the most violent Passion a Man of his Character is capable of, To understand the Thing right, we must speak of it a little more particularly.

A few Hours after the Duke was made away, the King had a Conference with Cardinal Morosini, in which he endeavour'd to perswade him, *That he was forced to make use of this violent Method in the Extremity he was in, to prevent the Practices and Cabals of the Duke, without whose Death his Crown and Life were no longer secure; That God had assisted him to deliver himself from so dangerous an Enemy; that without such a miraculous Relief in humane Probability, he could never have brought it about; That No body knew so well as himself the great Danger he was threatned with; That what he had done was no more than Justice, and agreeable to all Laws divine and humane; The Publick was but too well perswaded of the Affronts the Duke de Guise had put upon him, without any Provocation at all, and directly in opposition to that Duty and Fidelity a*

Subject owes his Sovereign. That his Natural Mildness and Fear of disturbing the Quiet of his Kingdom, had, for a long time, induced him to put up, and seem not to mind the Injuries were done him: And desired him to lay all these just and weighty Reasons before the Pope, that the malicious Artifice of his Enemies might not have Opportunity of prejudicing His Holiness, and alienating his Inclinations from him.

The King told Cardinal *Morosini* nothing new, the Common Talk had given him to understand the wicked Intentions of the Duke *de Guise* toward his Majesty. This made the Legate talk to him of the Good Will he observed in him to the Holy See; and for fear he should make Peace with the *Huguenots*, to speak to him with a great deal of Temper and Respect, and persuade him the Pope would listen to his Reasons as a common and impartial Father, and advised him not to justify himself to His Holiness but upon real and sincere Pretences. *Morosini* thinking it to be of Consequence the managing the King right at this Juncture, went to the Bottom of the Affair with him, and such was his insinuating way, that *Henry* swore to him, if the Pope would engage heartily in concert with him and join Forces, he would more strenuously than ever, set about exterminating Hereticks out of his Kingdom, and suffer only the Exercise of the true Religion there.

At the time the Duke *de Guise* was stabb'd the Marshals *d' Aumont* and *de Retz* arrested the Cardinal his Brother and the Arch-Bishop of *Lyon*, whom they carried under a strong Guard to a private Prison. And much about the same time they secured the Cardinal *de Bourbon*, they took him in his Bed, to which he was frequently confined by Weakness and great Age, and carried him.

him to Prison in the Castle of *Blois*, where the Court then was. The Discourse the King had with the Legate, was not to prepare him to hear the Duke of *Guise's* Death, in which he knew the Holy See was not concern'd, but he wanted to found his Thoughts upon the Imprisoning the Two Cardinals and the Arch-Bishop. The Legate on his part having a mind to move for their Discharge upon mature Deliberation, made as if he knew nothing of their being seiz'd, and behaving himself towards the King with his usual Familiarity (which vexed *Sixtus* strangely) he went to Mass with the King the same Day, who gave him Proofs of a special Confidence he reposed in him.

The King finding the Legate not much troubled at the Confinement of the Cardinals (which was indeed the Death of *Guise*) resolv'd to go farther still, and clear his Hands of that Prince too, who was no less to be fear'd than his Brother, to extinguish with his Blood the Flames they had both kindled.

He propos'd to Five and forty of those he could most confide in, separately from one another, to take off the Cardinal, but not one of the Number would accept so barbarous a Commission. At length he spoke to *Du Gast*, Captain in the Guards, and commanded him to have the Business done next Morning by the Soldiers of his Company. The Officer went at Break of Day the Fourteenth of the Month, being the Day before *Christmas*, into the Chamber where the Cardinal *de Guise* and the Arch-Bishop of *Lyons* were kept. There they had pass'd the Night in extream Terror, had confess'd one another, and been at their Prayer without ceasing. *Du Gast* commanded the Arch-Bishop to follow, and come speak to the King who expected him.

The Cardinal imagining his Friend was led to Execution, said to him, *Recommend your self to God, My Lord Arch-Bishop.* And the other thinking the Cardinal was also about to suffer the same Fate, cried out to him, *Recommend your self also, My Dear Lord.*

They made the Arch-Bishop go into a Room hard by, and *du Gast* returning to the Cardinal *de Guise*, told him He had no longer time to Live.

The unhappy Prince desired so much as to examine his Conscience a little: He kneeled down, and after a short Prayer, covered his Head with the Train of his Gown, and said with a good Resolution; *You may execute your Master's Orders when you please.* Then Four Soldiers killed him with their Partizans, and carried his Body to his Brother's the Duke.

The King in the mean time was rack'd with a Thousand different Thoughts, he could not find out any way of making a Man of *Sixtus* his Humour listen to Reason: For tho' the Legate knowing the true State of the Case, seem'd to be of his Side, and had promised to give His Holiness a favourable Account of the Matter; there was yet Reason to fear the *Spaniards* and the League would continue their ill Offices; that they would be beforehand with him at *Rome*, and prepossess the Pope at such a rate, as would make him unwilling to hearken to the Truth of a Business acted so far off.

He dispatch'd therefore an Express to *Rome* immediately after the Cardinal's Death, to inform *John de Vivonne* Marquis de *Pisani* his Ambassador, what had pass'd at *Blois*; and to give him an Account of the Necessity he was in of using a Remedy so violent, that that Minister might be able to oppose the false Reports which were

were spread about *Italy*, and justify the Proceedings of the King his Master. This Prince had some Days before given Orders to *Jeram de Gondy* a *Florentine*, to go to *Rome* immediately after *Christmas*, and in his Name desire the Legateship of *Avignon* for the Cardinal de *Guise*; but things having now put on another Face, *Gondy* receiv'd Orders from the King to go to *Rome* with all Speed to join himself to the Marquis de *Pisani*, and that they together should make his most humble Excuses to the Pope upon the Cardinal de *Guise's* Death, and to desire Absolution for it, if they should think it proper to ask it of His Holiness.

Gondy arrived the Sixth of *January* in the Evening, and brought the First News of this Prelate's Death to *Rome*, but communicated it to none but *Pisani*. They pass'd the Night together contriving Methods to prepare the Pope for receiving the News with some sort of Moderation: But he had heard it the same Night, as well as the Imprisoning the Cardinal de *Bourbon* and the Arch-Bishop of *Lions*. *Sixtus* was transported at the reading the Account, he stamp'd and struck his Hands together so, that he frighted all that stood by. He sent for *Pisani* and *Gondy*, and told them in rough and angry Words, That he had received strange News from France; He made horrid Complaints against the King, and accused him of violating not only Ecclesiastical Immunities and the Privileges of the Sacred Colleges, but even Laws divine and humane, in spilling the Blood of a Cardinal so cruelly, and shamefully imprisoning Two of the most considerable Prelates of the Church, as if they had been barely Secular Persons.

The Two French Ministers represented to him with a great deal of Temper and Respect, but

with Resolution too, the Reasons the King their Master had for what he had done; and enlarged upon the enormous Crime of Treason which these Three Prelates were guilty of. They remonstrated to him, "That the Authority they had usurp'd did not leave the King at his Liberty to proceed against them in the ordinary Forms of Justice, since they had forced him for the Safety of his Life to leave the *Louvre* and get away from *Paris* in Disguise. That all the Disorders of his Kingdom were owing to the Intrigues and Cabals of the Duke and the Cardinal *de Guise*; that his Majesty desiring to free himself from a Slavery indecent for a Sovereign to lie under, and which threatned him with the Loss of his Crown, judged it requisite to punish their Crime without confining himself to the tedious Proceedings of Justice: That their Crime being publick and known to the whole World, the King had a right to prosecute it in what manner pleas'd him best. That farther, they had made themselves unworthy the Protection of the Holy See by their Sacrilege, and profaning the most Holy Mysteries, by perjuring themselves, and abusing the Honest Intentions of their Master to them: That the defending of Religion, in which no Prince shew'd more Zeal than their Master, was at last but a Pretence to cover their Ambition, which was the true and sole Cause of all the Commotions that had shaken the Kingdom, and of the Destruction of an infinite Number of Souls, who thro' these Disorders, mark'd out for themselves a way to the Throne after the True Heirs should be driven away". To all these Reasons they added Assurances of the King their Master's sincere Submission as a most Obedient Son of the Church; that he was resolv'd to make all

all the Satisfaction His Holiness should enjoin him, and had sent the Seigneur *de Gondy* to *Rome* on purpose to beg His Holiness's Blessing, and that by such a Favour he would shew He maintain'd no Resentment at what had pass'd.

This Discourse neither persuaded the Pope nor melted down his Choler in the least, he replied to *Pisani*; "That he very well knew *Gondy* was sent to *Rome* to negotiate another sort of Business: That he could not comprehend the King of *France's* Submission to the Holy See, and his moving for Absolution at the same time he kept a Cardinal and Arch-Bishop Prisoners, who own'd no Judge but the Church; That Complaint should have been made to him of their behaving themselves amiss, and of the Cardinal *de Guise* too, that he would have done His Majesty exact Justice, and had such a Character, which was well enough known.

The Ambassadors made him Answer, "That their Character ought to find Credit with him in what they said from their Master, and that he did most sincerely desire Absolution." To this the Pope said, "That, as Ambassadors, they had Power only to treat about Temporal and Secular Matter, as to Spiritual Affairs, and particularly such as related to Conscience, it was requisite some Proofs of a true Repentance should go before an Absolution: That some Person ought to be sent on purpose to sollicite this Pardon; and that the King, to make himself worthy of it, should begin his Penance with setting the Two Prelates at Liberty that he had put in Prison". *Sixtus* grew still hotter, and added these Words; "Your Master and you mean nothing but to put Tricks upon me. You use me as if I was still a poor Monk, not able to do any thing; But know that You are mistaken,

and

and that You have at the Helm a Sovereign
 " Pontiff ready to spill good Store of Blood;
 " when there's Occasion to support the Honour
 " and Interests of the Church. "

Sixtus and the Ambassadors said many things to one another which came to nothing, and the Marquis *de Pisani* not being able to keep in his secret Disgust; " How Holy Father, says he to the Pope, " Shall not the King my Master have " the Liberty to rid his Hands of the Cardinal; " *de Guise* his Mortal Enemy, when *Pius IV.* by " his own Authority had Cardinal *Caraffa* strang- " led who had been his Friend"? These Words enrag'd *Sixtus* to that Degree, that he dismiss'd the Two Ministers with a Countenance which discover'd how much he was vexed with their Discourse. He gave Order for summoning the Consistory upon the Day following, and sent for *Albert Badoar* Ambassador of *Venice*, to fall foul upon the Legate *Morosini* in his Presence, and he treated him as a Traytor and Enemy to the Holy See, swearing he would make him feel the full Swinge of his Displeasure. *Badoar* excused his Country-Man as well as he could; but said nothing which might add to the ill Humour *Sixtus* was in.

The Sacred College being met the next Day, *Sixtus* went into the Consistory full of Anger and Animosity. He began with falling upon Cardinal *Morosini*, and threatened to deprive him of the Sacred Purple for having a Hand in the shameful Death of the Cardinal *de Guise*, since he might have saved his Life if he would. And indeed, had he shewn the least Resentment of his being imprison'd, the King would not have ventured to have him stabb'd.

Next he gave the Cardinals an Account, in more angry Words still, of what had passed between

tween him and the Ambassadors of *France*; and enlarged chiefly upon the Reasons that had been offered him, and why he ought to deny *Henry III.* Absolution. Then continued his Discourse;

“ I know there are some amongst you daring
 “ enough to go about to excuse, and in my Pre-
 “ sence too, the Cardinal *de Guise's* Death, with-
 “ out considering the Injury thereby done to
 “ their Character, and the Danger they bring
 “ the Sacred Purple into. For my part I don't
 “ so tamely give up the Interests of this August
 “ Company: I declare to you and assure you,
 “ upon all that can bind the Faith of a Sovereign
 “ Pontiff, I will make no more Promotions to
 “ oblige Crown'd Heads, but Christian Princes
 “ shall court me in vain to make Cardinals.
 “ And You should consider what Prejudice you
 “ do your Character, and what's like to become
 “ of the Advantages and Privileges You have
 “ hitherto enjoy'd. But why should I be more
 “ sensible than your selves of the Disgrace you
 “ are threatn'd with? I foresee You will be ex-
 “ posed to the Resentments, the Contempt, and
 “ Fury of Sovereign Powers, who will spare
 “ neither your Honour nor your Blood; and
 “ not one of you will be secure of his Life, if the
 “ Murther committed on the Person of your Bro-
 “ ther go unpunish'd. Your Insensibility is no Rule
 “ for my Conduct; the Post I maintain obliges
 “ me to do Justice upon this Act of Cruelty.
 “ It's to no purpose to set before me the great
 “ Inconveniences that may follow upon it, and
 “ the Miseries to which *France* may be expos'd:
 “ For when administering Justice is the Point, One
 “ should look every thing in the Face, not de-
 “ clining our Duty, nor fearing any thing but
 “ what's displeasing to God.

The

The Pope, after this Discourse, continued for some time without speaking, to give the Cardinals Liberty of making Answer; but seeing them all in such a Surprize and Consternation as tied up their Tongue, he went on again after this manner; "The Outragious Treatment, which is the Subject of our present Meeting, will not suffer me to say any more, and the Just Commotion I am in, takes away the Use of my Speech; But lest I be accused of Partiality, I will summon a Congregation to treat of the Affairs of France, and particularly to examine into the unjust and cruel Death of the Cardinal de Guise.

This Congregation was composed of these Cardinals; *Antonio Serbellon* a *Milaneze*; *Antonio Santorio* Arch-Bishop of *Saint Severine*; *Antonio Fachinetti* a *Bologneze*; *Scipio Lancilotto* a *Roman*; *John Baptista Castagna*, and some others: This Affair made such a Noise, that all Europe waited to have it decided.

The King in the mean time doubled his Diligence to justify himself to the Pope, and sent for that Purpose *Claudius Dangers* Bishop of *Mans* to *Rome*; He was of the House of *Rambouiller*, for all which Family that Prince had a great Kindness. This Prelate was very capable of the Employment by the profound Learning and Eloquence he was Master of; He had it in charge to sollicite the King's Absolution, and Reconciliation to the Holy See, and to promise the Pope all manner of Satisfaction, provided nothing was asked in Prejudice of the Honour and Majesty of his Master.

The Bishop of *Mans* arriving at *Rome*, had a Conference with the *French* Ambassadors, and then went with them to have Audience of the Pope, to whom they remonstrated, after the
first

first Compliments were over, which were full of Submission and Respect, " That the King their Master had not in any sort incurred the Censures of the Church, nor violated her Rights and Immunities; That the Late Cardinal *de Guise* had been attainted and convicted of Rebellion, in which case all the Ecclesiasticks of France of what Quality soever, were liable to the Secular Jurisdiction, and particularly the Peers of the Kingdom, who own'd no other Judge but the Parliament of *Paris*, composed of Peers, Officers of the Crown, and Judges Ordinary; and if the King had broke in upon the usual Forms of Justice, in punishing the Cardinal *de Guise* as he had done, None but his Parliament was concern'd in it, and he had not thereby made any Encroachment upon the Ecclesiastical Tribunal.

Sixtus, instead of sitting down by these Reasons, was but in the greater Passion when he heard them, and would maintain, " That the Cardinals were immediately under the Jurisdiction of the Pope, and had no other Judges upon Earth but the Vicars of Jesus Christ". The Ambassadors seeing him thus obstinate, maintain'd boldly, " That the King could not be Excommunicated, and alledg'd the Privileges and Immunities of the *Gallican* Church for the purpose.

The Pope still more enflamed than before, told 'em, " They had best take care how they advanced any thing so rashly, and so near a-kin to Heresy as what they had been saying, lest he should make 'em repent it". The *Marquis de Pisani* answer'd him with a great deal of Resolution, " That their Character set them out of the Reach of his Menaces; and all other Affronts, and they should not out of Fear desist from giving a just Weight to the good and sound

found Reasons of the King their Master: but
 as their Orders were to mollifie the Pope and
 not encrease his Spleen, they would only en-
 treat His Holiness to ratify an Apostolick
 Brief, which he had himself lately granted the
 King, and by Virtue of which he was already
 absolv'd". *Sixtus* replied, " That Brief was
 granted only for past Offences, and had not
 Force enough to absolve by Anticipation;
 That an Action so scandalous committed in
 the Eyes of all *Christendom*, could not be par-
 don'd by the Strength of that Brief, the Force
 and Extent of which he very well knew, since
 Himself had granted it.

Things stood at this Stay for Five Months after
 the Death of the Duke and the Cardinal *de Guise*.
 At last the Pope after several Admonitions
 declared to the King, " That if he did not by
 a certain time set the Cardinal *de Bourbon*, and
 the Arch-Bishop of *Lyons* at Liberty, and give
 notice of it to him and to the Holy See in
 Sixty Days after by a Letter signed with
 his own Hand, and Seal'd with his own Seal,
 or by some other Authentick Act, he should
 incurr Excommunication and all the Censures
 of the Church comprehended in the Sacred
 Canons, in the Constitutions General and Par-
 ticular, and in the Bulls which are publicly
 read upon Absolution-Thursday.

His Holiness farther Declar'd " That all those
 who should Assist that Prince with their Coun-
 cils, or should afford him any Aid or Succour
 in the like Occasions should incurr the same
 Penalties." Then he had the King Cited to
 Appear in Person or by Proxy in Sixty Days time,
 Beginning upon the Day that the Citation should
 deliver'd him, to give an Account of the Mur-
 ther of the Cardinal *de Guise*, and Imprisoning
 the

the Cardinal *de Bourbon* and the Archbishop of *Lyon*; and to makes it appear whether he had Incurr'd the Penalty of Excommunication or not, He Order'd, " That all who had a Hand in the " Murther should be Cited to appear also in Sixty Days, and the Citation should be serv'd upon 'em once in Twenty Days.

His Holiness declared farther, " That none of the Accomplices nor the King himself cou'd receive Absolution but only from the Pope, nor from him but upon condition they promised to obey all the Church should think fit to impose for Satisfaction and Pennance; without which Submission they could not receive any benefit from the Indulgencies of the *Jubilee*, of *Crissados*, or any other Grants the King or his Predecessors had obtain'd of the Holy See.

Two Months after this Excommunication was Notified to *Henry III.* he was Unfortunately Assassinated at *St. Cloud*, a Village Two Leagues from *Paris*, in the middle of an Army with which he laid Siege to that Capital of his Country. The Parricide was a *Jacobine* Monk, Born at *Sens*, Nam'd *James Clement*, about Three and Twenty Years Old, he Stabb'd him into the Belly with a Knife that had Two Edges.

After his Death follow'd a War between the Leaguers and *Henry* King of *Navarr*, in which were several Engagements, Fortune sometimes Favouring the Party of the League, sometimes those of *Navarre*. But at length the Business was Decided for that, on the Fourteenth of *May* 1590. in a Fight that goes by the Name of *The Days Work of Ivry*, where after a Brave Behaviour on either Side, *Henry* obtain'd a Victory, tho' it cost him the Greatest Part of his Nobility that was in the Field.

The

The Duke *du Maine*, Head of the League, recruited his Army in a short Time, and the King of *Navarre* soon after came and Sat down before *Paris*. For Three Months after the Battle there was a strong Report at *Rome* that the King of *Navarre* was Dead, and it was so confidently reported that not only the Vulgar but the more distinguishing sort of People believ'd it so much as to lay considerable Wagers upon it. The Pope, when it came to his Ears, said, *If the King of Navarre is Dead of the Wounds he receiv'd in the last Fight, it must be granted he Died like a great Prince.* Neither these sad Stories nor the Disorders which the Kingdom of *France* was then in, could prevail upon him to send the League such Assistance as they expected from him upon the strength of the Legate's Promise he should do it. It was the opinion of some, that *Sixtus* Acted so for fear, if the King of *Navarre's* Party should be worsted; the *Spaniards* who Assisted the Leaguers should grow too powerful, and the King of *Spain* would become Greater and more Terrible; according to *Cicero's* excellent Observation; *Such is the Event of Civil Wars, that the Intentions of the Conqueror are not always follow'd, and he is often forc'd to receive Laws from those by whose Assistance he carried the Victory.* Nor was this Thought without a bottom; For *Sixtus* from the Beginning of his Pontificate had nothing nearer his Heart than Humbling that Monarchy, and therefore fear'd its growing Greater and endeavour'd to prevent it.

Some thought the Pope might be in hopes, if the King of *Navarre* were acknowledg'd Sovereign of *France*, and promis'd he would return to the *Romish* Religion, he cou'd more easily than another Man bring his People off from the New Opinions, and reduce 'em to the bosom of the Church

Church. Of this the Duke of *Luxemburg* persuaded him, who was sent to *Rome* from the *French Nobility*, in Quality of Ambassador, besides several Letters that were daily Written from the King of *Navarre's* Party, all which tended to confirm the Pope in that belief,

Some Politicians were of Opinion the Pope refus'd to lend the Leaguers any assistance, because the Duke of *Luxemburg* had made appear to him ~~was~~ in vain to oppose so just a pretence as the King of *Navarre* had to the Throne, being the Rightful Heir. That it was but throwing away Men and Money, since that Prince had a strong Party in the Kingdom, and an Army powerful enough to place the Crown upon his Head; and ~~there~~ might be a hazard in exasperating him against the Catholics when he could get himself own'd King whether they wou'd or no. His Holiness weighing these things, he thought fit to treat him like a wise and considering Prince, whom he wou'd not venture losing when on ~~the~~ other Hand there was nothing to be gain'd.

However ~~it was~~, all the earnest Supplications the League could make, obtain'd no more of *Sixtus* than Fifty Thousand Crowns which the Legate paid 'em down tho' His Holiness was not much pleas'd with it. Others would have it, this mighty backwardness His Holiness shew'd in Assisting the Catholics was for a particular Esteem he had for the King of *Navarre*, ever since that Prince ventur'd to set up his Protestations upon the Gates of the *Vatican*, The Bravery of that action with an infinite number of other proofs of his Courage, every day talked of at *Rome*, convinced the Pope he was a Prince that deserv'd the Crown of *France*, and it wou'd be injustice to hinder him from getting possession of it. And whenever he was spoke of, *Sixtus* wou'd say *Ho*

was a Brave Man and his head was made on purpose for that Crown.

The King of *Spain* took it wondrous Ill that the Pope should not assist the League, nor excommunicate those Catholick Princes and Prelates who were of the King of *Navarr's* side. Their Murmurs broke out into Pasquinades from every quarter, and Libels which made very bold with the Pope's reputation, and charged him almost with Heresie. The King of *Spain* would needs have a publick protestation made, and the Pope called upon to keep his word: This was done by the Count *d' Olivarez* but privately in the Consistory. *Sixtus* justified himself upon this charge before the Cardinals, and laid before them the Motives he went upon in his management of the Affairs of *France*. Some of the Cardinals were of the *Spanish* side, Others of the Pope's, which hinder'd any more publick protestation. This undertaking put the Count *d' Olivarez* so mightily out of the Pope's Books, that tho' he was a Minister of great Wisdom and depth, (together with some other ground His Holiness pretended to have of being disobligh'd) he would no more give him Audience nor acknowledge him for Ambassador: Which forced the King of *Spain* to send the Duke of *Sessa* in his Room, a Person of high accomplishments, to make the best use of the favourable conjuncture the deplorable State of *France* afforded. But the New Ambassador did not reach *Rome* till *Sixtus* fell Sick, who could not then treat with him upon any Affairs of consequence, having till his Death only some few intervals of health in which he was not capable of Business.

In the mean time News came to *Rome*, (and the *Spaniards* who set it abroad made the thing much greater than it was) that not only the

Party of the League but almost the whole Kingdom; had acknowledg'd the Cardinal *de Bourbon* for their King, by the name of *Charles X.* And farther they inform'd the Pope, the King of *Navarre's* Affairs were become altogether desperate. This put His Holiness upon a Resolution to send a Legate into *France*, to assist at this great Revolution, and employ all means possible for uniting the *French* and securing their fidelity and obedience to the new King, for whose Liberty he had lately so strenuously pleaded, and defended the honour and Interests of the Sacred College.

For an Embassy of so great consequence he made choice of Cardinal *Henry Cajetan*, a man of an illustrious Family, and whose large experience qualified him for such a Post. • But he did not answer the expectations that were laid out upon him, having declared too openly in favour of the *Spaniards.* The Pope named a select Number of Clergymen to accompany him in his Embassy, all of 'em eminent either for their Learning or their capacity in Business, amongst these were *Laurenzio Bianchetti*, and *Philip Sega* who have since been made Cardinals; *Marco Antonio Mocenigo* Bishop of *Canada* a Person the Pope had a great value for and made use of upon several occasions; *Francisco Panigarola* Bishop of *Arti* a famous Preacher; and *Robert Bellarmine* a Jesuit, a Monk of eminent Learning. He gave the Legate above a Million in Bills of Exchange which he shou'd receive of the Bankers of *Lyons*, with orders to employ the Money as he should find most occasion, but particularly toward getting the Cardinal *de Bourbon* out of Prison, the procuring whose Liberty was his principal Errand, But this violent heat was soon allayed, and the Pope in a very irresolute temper when he understood

devoted by Letters from the Duke of *Luxemburg*, that the King of *Navarre* was at last own'd the True and Rightful Heir to the Crown. This Lord gave him an Account at large of all the steps of this great Remove, and told him he was deputed by the *French Nobility*, to inform His Holiness what reasons that Illustrious Body had for owning the King of *Navarre*; and to desire he wou'd, as the Common Father of all Christians, find out means of establishing a lasting Peace amongst his Children.

By this News *Sixtus* found the Emissaries of the League had deceiv'd him, in giving him assurance the greatest part of the Kingdom had declared against the King of *Navarre*, and that there was but a very small number of desperate People that adhered to him. He made Answer to the Duke of *Luxemburg* without any delay, *that he was very Wellcome*, and wrote at the same time to the Nobility that were in the King of *Navarre's* Army with expressions of paternal Tenderness; He conjured 'em, *to remain firm to the Catholick Religion, and declared to 'em he had* ~~no objection~~, *but to have a King of France that profess'd the same Faith with his Predecessors; that it was indifferent to him whom they pitch'd upon provided it was no Heretick, One that he cou'd not reckon a Son of the Church: If that were taken care of, Let 'em name who they pleas'd he wish'd 'em good luck.*

This Letter was shew'd the King of *Navarre*, and confirm'd him in what he had often heard, that the Pope had a great opinion of him: He laugh'd and said to those that brought it him, *Upon my Faith the Pope is a Great Man, and I will turn Catholick if it be but for the sake of being Son to such a Father.*

The Agents of the League were inform'd of all that pass'd and press'd the Pope to send a

way the Legate without delay, returning to him. That all these Reports ~~is~~ but a Trick of the King of Navarre to amuse him, to abate his Zeal, and gain time; the thing that Prince chiefly aimed at. Sixtus to Answer these solicitations after a fashion, ordered the Legate to set out, but with instructions far different from the first, by which he was to do all he cou'd to confirm the Election of the Cardinal de Bourbon, and labour with diligence to get him set at Liberty. But in these last orders he was to endeavour the uniting of the Catholicks in the choice of a King, who shou'd be of the same Religion and acceptable to all the French, without specifying any body. To these instructions the Pope join'd others which were contain'd in the same Brief bearing date the Fifteenth of October, to this Effect, that the Legate shou'd be indifferent as to any Person that was put up (provided he were but a Catholick Prince and in subjection to the Holy See) and still he shou'd have a regard to the Interests of the Church. Above all things He enjoind him not to declare openly against the King of Navarre, if there were any hopes of his returning to the Church; that he shou'd be always Neuter in that point, and if that Prince gave any proofs of Conversion he shou'd declare publicly for him.

The Legate did not follow these Orders, the Spaniards had got him over so strongly to their Side, that as soon as he came to Paris he struck in with the Party of the League, and profess'd himself an open Enemy to the King of Navarre. Sixtus was so angry at his Conduct and the Neglect of his Orders, that he never confided in him after, nor sent him any more Money.

The King of Navarre on the other hand made heavy Complaints against the Legate; and when

the Bishop of *Carthage* went to propose a Truce to him, he blamed the conduct of Cardinal *Cujetan*, who threw himself much more a *Spaniard* than a Catholick: And that he had as great reason to condemn his behaviour as he had to approve what His Holiness did. That he was strangely surprized to find that contrary to his duty of Legate he had began to give proofs of his hatred to him, in taking up his residence at *Paris*, the Capital of the League: That as he represented the common Father of Christians he shou'd have placed himself in some Neutral Town, that he might manage matters without being liable to such suspicions, and which wou'd have advanced the Peace he came to promote in the Kingdom.

The Senate of *Venice* had been for some days deliberating whether they wou'd let their Ambassador stay in *France* with the King of *Navarre*, which was a sort of owning him for lawful possessor of the Crown: But after they had examined the matter with the ordinary prudence they shew in all they do, they concluded it was best for all Christendom that Crown shou'd be in the Right Heir, rather than the *Spaniards* and the Leaguers shou'd tear it in pieces; or that it should be set upon a strange Prince's head: Besides that the King of *Navarre* being acknowledg'd by the greatest part of the *French* Nobility, which carries a mighty stroke in the Government, it was no hard matter for that Prince to get into the Throne in spite of all his Enemies cou'd do. For these reasons the Republick resolv'd to continue their Ambassador with him as King of *France*, and to offer him all that lay in their power, the same assistance they had afforded the Kings his Predecessors when they stood in most need of help. *Henry le grand* acknowledg'd this kindness of the *Venitians* as long as he lived, by whose example

example several other Sovereign Princes own'd him for Rightful King of France. *Jerom Matteuccy* who was at that time Nuncio at Venice together with the Spanish Ambassador made a great noise, and in a full Senate made complaint, That the Republick had own'd a Heretick for King who was excommunicated by the Holy See, and whom the Pope had declared a Rebel and Contumacious from the beginning of his Pontificate. But the Senate understanding pretty well *Sixtus's* sentiments in the case Answer'd the Nuncio, that they did not concern themselves in matters relating to the Faith of the Church, which belonged to No-body but the Holy Father; but being convinc'd *Henry de Bourbon* was a Prince of the Blood Royal of France, and Rightful Heir of that Crown, they cou'd not avoid treating with him upon secular matters in which France and the Republick had both of 'em an Interest, without any intent to interfere in Spiritual Affairs in opposition to the Pope's declaration.

The Nuncio was not satisfied with this Answer, he made some protestations against it, and then went from Venice in such a hurry as if he had run for his life, and came Post to Rome. He thought to have made his Court to the Pope, by so sudden a retreat, but when he came he found matters went otherwise: For His Holiness would not so much as see him, but sent him word, to take the same Horses again and return immediately to Venice; which he was forced to comply with, and shew as much willingness as he really felt shame and confusion.

It was then commonly reported that there was a secret understanding between *Sixtus* and the Senate, and that *Albert Badoar* the Venetian Ambassador at the Court of Rome had made some overtures to him about owning *Henry de Bourbon* for

lawful King of France, before the Republick had any deliberation upon the matter; that knowing the Pope to be well enough disposed to that Prince he gave the Senate notice of it, who were not resolv'd upon acknowledging him before.

'Tis certain *Henry IV.* was beholding to the artful management of *Sixtus*, for restoring to him the Throne of his Ancestors: For if he had declared openly against him, and engaged in the Interest of the League, that party without all doubt would have resumed their first Vigour, and the Republick had not led the way by owning that Prince. So it was, Other Sovereign States who stood Neuter, did not know which side to take when they saw the Pope deal underhand, and his Heart more inclin'd to wish well to *Henry* than to oppose his just and generous designs: And a Senate so wise and politick as that of *Venice*, by making the step we mention'd, did effectually weaken the League, and raise a reputation to the Arms of the King of *Navarr.* This signal piece of service did not pass without acknowledgment; That Prince thanked the Senate for it by Letters that express'd abundance of affection and kindness to them, and gave order to the *Seigneur de Mesmes* his Ambassador at *Venice*, to testify his gratitude to the Republick, and assure them of his Esteem and good Intentions. The Duke of *Luxemburg* on his part express'd himself to the Pope at the same rate, and promised that the King his Master would ever maintain a high sense of his good Offices, and his admirable conduct so well becoming the Common Father of all Christians.

Now we have set out *Sixtus* his way of managing Affairs with other Princes, it may not be impertinent to say something of his behaviour to

his own Subjects, which we have but touch'd upon as yet.

However earnestly he concern'd himself in the Disorders and Commotions of *France*, he was no less intent upon the Government of his own Country. In the Five Years of his Reign he look'd particularly into the Abuses and Grievances of his People. He named Cardinal *Aldobrandine* to reform the excessive Luxury of Dress, and laid severe Penalties upon such as should not observe the Injunction. It was thought his Drift in this was but to get Money out of those that were found Tardy. But so exactly were these Orders pursued for some Months before his Death that no body incurr'd the Penalty, and all wore plain and cheap Stuffs.

He also gave it in charge to Cardinal *Aldobrandine* to reform the Regulars, enjoin'd him to enquire into all the Abuses that were crept into the Cloysters, and amongst the Brothers, and to apply proper Remedies. It came into his Head to suppress some Religious Orders, and keep up only such as stood upon great and ancient Foundations, or which lived up to their Primitive Purity and Rules. He had several Conferences with Cardinal *Aldobrandine* about it, but his Death put by the Execution of so reasonable a Design.

So exactly had he Justice administr'd among his Subjects, that not One Criminal escap'd in the whole *Ecclesiastical State*, as we have already related; and he took great Delight in finding out secret Crimes, and such as were thought forgotten, to punish them in a rigorous manner. On the other Hand he was a Zealous Defender of the Poor and Fatherless, and kept up the Grandeur of the Sovereign Tribunal. In short he so effectually rooted out Violence and Injustice.

stice, that the Governour of Rome one Day told him, *All the Judges of his Dominions lived in the greatest Ease of any in the World*; Meaning that his Subjects were become mighty exact, and kept a strict Guard upon their Behaviour. But Sixtus far from being persuaded there was any so effectual Change, answer'd him; *I am fully convinced the Romans will fall into their old Courses again in another Pontificate.*

He gave Audience to all sorts of People, and ordered his Master of the Ceremonies to present the Poorest and most obscure to him in the first Place. He would hear Complaints against the Governours with extraordinary Attention, and made every Article be explain'd of the Memorials that were given him. The same Care he took in any Dispute between a Bishop and his Clergy, and always afforded sure and speedy, but withall effectual Remedies.

In this Year 1589. The Tyber twice broke its Bounds, and so prodigiously overflow'd Rome, that they were forced to make use of Boats to go to several Parts of the City. The continued Rains and high Winds swell'd several Rivers in Italy to that height, that the Country was drown'd, and the Houses ruin'd, and they were forced to sow their Land four or five times over. The Snows which follow'd encreas'd the Scarcity, and Corn was at such a rate, that as much Wheat as a Man could carry upon his Back, was sold for Ten Pistoles at Rome, and other great Places; and sometimes were not to be had at that Price. Abundance of People were starved to Death, and others found about the Country lying upon the Ground with Grass and Roots in their Mouths. The poor Wretches went a foraging, and eat Hay and Chaff like Horses.

Sixtus indulged the People in a great deal of Liberty at *Carnaval* time, and would have 'em make Feasts, Balls, Comedies, Masquerades, and publick Shews, and indeed all sorts of Recreations; No Pope ever allow'd 'em so much Liberty of this sort as *Sixtus*. Not 'tis it at *Rome* only that these Doings were permitted, but all the Subjects of the *Ecclesiastical State* had the same Privilege, and the Governours were ordered to keep up the Custom.

But to prevent and curb the Excesses of this time of Revels, he set up Whipping-Posts in the Streets near those Places where the greatest Rejoicings of the *Carnaval* were kept, to punish those upon the Spot who should dare to disturb the publick Joy. He condemn'd a *Taylor* to the Gallies only for giving another *Taylor* a Cuff on the Ear in the Street; and tho' some of his Holiness's Relations that the poor Fellow worked for interceded for him, they could not get him off. The same Severity was used upon a Footman of Cardinal *Serbelloni* who was sentenced to the *Strapado* for some unmannerly and smutty Words before Ladies of Quality, who made but a Laughing Matter of it! But when the Pope heard of it, he had him immediately tied up, and Justice done upon him before the Cardinal could ask Forgiveness for him. By this Exactness there was so good Order kept at the *Carnaval*, that in the Reign of *Sixtus* there was not a Word of any Quarrel at such a time, and the People enjoy'd all Peace and Quietness in these Days of Pleasure.

He was so indefatigable in Business as No Pope had ever been before him, all Matters from the least to the greatest continually passing thro' his Hands. He spent himself so much with this hard Labour, that he had a good Stomach, and Nature

required good Store of Nourishment, so that he exceeded that frugal and hard Fare he had used himself to when he led a retired Life out of the Noise and Hurry of Business.

He was a moderate Sleeper, but kept to no Hours for taking his Rest, when any Affair of Consequence lay upon his Hands, he was at it all Night without Shutting his Eyes; And when other things were before him that he look'd upon not worth his Care, he would go to Bed and lie there till it was late. He gave his Chamberlains Order when any Express arrived in the Night, or any thing extraordinary fell out, to wake him though he were but just gone to sleep; and one Morning was very angry with them for not coming to tell him of the Arrival of an Express from the Legate of *Bologna*, telling them; *He would be Master of his own Sleep, and not be a Slave to it, and depend upon it.*

He would reprove very sharply such as had been wanting to their Duty, or had displeas'd him any way by their Behaviour: Yet he loved to see any body that he was reprimanding, if he were a Person of Merit, defend himself in a respectful Manner and make what Justification he could, so as it was neither with too little Confidence nor too much; and look'd upon such with Contempt, who would not venture to speak up for themselves when they were accused of any thing. It was a great Pleasure to him to hear them alledge good Reasons for what they had done, provided it was with Modesty and without Passion, for then he would be in a Passion himself and hear no more of it.

He would frequently hector his Officers and Domesticks before Ambassadors and Cardinals. He had a kindness for them all, but forbid them asking any Favours of him which were not agreeable.

Book X. Pope SIXTUS V.

397

agreeable to Justice. He advanced them to the chief Dignities of the Church; Made Three of 'em Cardinals, one of which was *John Baptista Castruccio* of *Lucca*, who had served him very faithfully. Several others he prefer'd to Bishopricks. But as he reward'd those well who pleas'd him, so he punish'd others with extreme Severity that were found Tardy.

He had an extraordinary Love for his Relations, and amongst the rest for *Signora Camilla* his Sister, and her Daughter's two Soas, One of which he made Cardinal, as we have already mention'd, with the Title of *Montalto*. At his Death he left him a Hundred Thousand Crowns a Year, most of which was in Benefices, which the Nephew made so good Use of, as to gain a Reputation and Esteem. *Sixtus* was for setting up the other Nephew in the World, who was a Young Man of a Good Distinguishing Head. He left him a great Estate besides good Store of Ready Money, upon condition he should marry, and bear the Name of *Peretti*. The Fortunes he gave them made no body grumble tho' they were large, because it was well known *Sixtus* did not do like some of his Predecessors, who plunder'd the Church to enrich their Family. He married his Two Nieces, the Sisters of those Nephews we have been speaking of, One to *Virginio Ursino*, T' other to the Constable *Colono*, which are the Two best Houses, not only of *Rome* but indeed of *Italy*. These Two Matches were univerfally liked, and the Pope gave publick Entertainments to make the Splendour of their Weddings greater. These Two Brides soon made so good a Figure that they did not betray the Obscurity of their Birth, and particularly Madam the Constable by her Air and Behaviour outdid Princesses that had been from their Gradle brought up in a Court.

- *Sixtus*

Sixtus was the first that practis'd the selling of Offices which the Popes had ever given away freely, as the Commissary, and Treasurer of the Apostolick Chamber, and the Vice-Chamberlain, which are the most considerable Places in the State, besides others which are of lesser Account.

Cardinal *Castagna*, for whom the Pope had a great Value, as we shall see hereafter, looking upon this new Method with other Eyes than His Holiness did, was afraid it would be a Reflection upon him, and therefore in few Words, but with abundance of Freedom set before him the ill Consequence of doing so. *Sixtus* heard him out with Patience, and then made Answer; *Is it reasonable we should pay our Officers before-hand? For my Part I think to break the Neck of that ridiculous Custom, and make those pay me who shall have the Honour to be taken into my Service, and I would advise you to do the same when you come into my Place.*

He was persuaded from the first of his Advancement to St. Peter's Throne, that Cardinal *Castagna* would succeed him. This made him treat him with a particular Respect, and employ him in the most important Affairs of the Church. He was made Commissary in Three Congregations, that of the Holy Office, that which judged of the Disputes between Bishops and Regulars, and that of the Injuries and Grievances of the States. The Pope's Design in these great Proofs of his Esteem and Kindness was to oblige him to do as much for his Nephews. He would often be hinting to him, *that he was as good as sure he would be his Successor*. This he said upon Two Occasions amongst all the rest; One was, when he was speaking of the Street he was making from the Church of *Santa Cruz*, along by St. *Mary Major*.

quite to the *Trinite del Mont*, he turned to the Cardinal and said; 'Tis You, My Dear Lord, that must finish this Work.

Some Days before his Death they brought him a Dish of Pears at Dinner, he would always have some of them in the Dessert, because as he was born when they were in Season, it put him in mind of the time he came into the World. He took one of 'em and finding it rotten within, changed it for another which was no better; upon that he threw it into the Middle of the Room, and said loud enough for every body to hear him: *Since the Romans are satisfied with Pears, for the future they ought to have Chestnuts: Alluding to his Name of Peretti, and his Arms which were Pears, and that of Castagna who gave them.* Another time he said to that Cardinal *That when Pears were over Chestnuts would come in.*

His Domesticks that waited of him in his Chamber said, *That for himself he was so frugal that he patched his Shirts not only when he was Cardinal but after he was Pope.* His Sister *Camilla* told him once upon a time, that it was indecent for a Sovereign Pontiff to wear such Linnen: He answer'd her with a Smile; *Our Advancement, Good Sister, should not make us forget from whence we came, the Rags and Scraps you find fault with, are the most ancient Arms of the Family.* This Spirit of Good Husbandry grew out of the vast Projects he had in his Head, for knowing full well Money was the Nerves and Strength of Government, he let himself from the first Day of his Popedom to hoard it up. He laid up in the Castle of Saint *Angelo* all that he could save out of his Income from the necessary Charges of his Government: And never gave his Nephews a Groat out of the Churches Revenue, tho' he made 'em indeed very Rich; for he took nothing towards it but the

the Profits of some Benefices and Rents which the Pope has the sole Disposal of, and could bestow upon Strangers if he thought fit.

When he Married his Niece to the Countess *Colono* he paid down with her Four Hundred Thousand Crowns to clear the Debts of the Family, which were contracted in the Time of *Paul IVth's* Persecution of them. But this Sum was no Dowry for her, it was but lent, and upon Interest too which was to be constantly paid in to the Apostolick Chamber, and the Principle in Seven Years Time.

He retrenched the Pensions, Gratuities, and Free Gifts the Apostolick Palace ordinarily made, that the Treasury gain'd above Six Hundred Thousand Crowns a Year by it. This indeed made the whole Court of *Rome* grumble, and a Pope less powerful than himself would never have brought about a Retrenchment so much to the Prejudice of particular Persons.

He set up several Banks where Money might be put out or taken up at high Interest, and augmented at the same time the Revenue of the *Datary*. He made the Chamberlain's Office into Two, as well as the Auditor's of the Chamber to make the Revenue of the Church the Greater; and created a new Office by the Name of Warden of the Archives of the whole *Ecclesiastical State*, which he presently sold for a round Sum.

The very first Year of his Pontificate he laid up a Million of Gold in the Castle of *St. Angelo*, and made a very strict Constitution Signed by all the Cardinals, providing that the Money should not be touch'd but upon these Occasions and Emergencies following: *For the Recovery of the Holy Land, and the Support of a Crusado, for which however no Money was to be parted with till the Christian Army had got footing in the Infidels Country.*

To relieve the People of Rome in a very hard Time of Famine, or to secure the Subject from the Mischeries of the Plague: To protect some Christian Towns or Provinces from the Menaces or Attempts of the Enemies to the Faith: To beat off Infidels, or Christian Princes if any of them should declare War against the Holy See and prepare to enter the Territories of the Church: And lastly for the Recovery or Defence of the Towns depending upon the State: But the Church in a Case of urgent Necessity must have recourse to this Money. The Pope swore to observe every Article of this Constitution, and had his Oath Registred; and to engage all his Successors to take the same Oath as soon as they should be chose, he made a formal Decree about it, which he Signed himself, and made all the Cardinals Sign in a full Consistory.

Two Years after he laid up another Million of Gold in the same Castle, with the same Provisions against having it meddled with as he had secured the first by, and added farther, That if this Money were employ'd to recover Christian Lands out of the Infidels Power, the re-taken Provinces should be dependant upon the Church, or should be exchanged with other Princes-as might be most for the Convenience of the Holy See.

Cardinal Castagna, as he was one Day talking to Sixtus with his usual Freedom upon the Caution His Holiness shew'd in preserving the Treasure of the Church, desired it might be inserted that it should be allowable to use the Money towards the Destruction of the Hereticks of France. But the Pope answer'd him; I apply the Money I save in my Reign to the Preservation of Catholicks, which appears to me a thing of great Consequence: When you are Pope you may, if you please, employ yours in exterminating Hereticks, which will be an Action like your self, but for my part I can't do so many

things at a time. . At his Death he had Five Millions of Gold in the Castle of *St. Angelo*, and as fast as he encreas'd the Sum he renew'd his Decrees for preventing its being made use of and spent. He had the Bolts and Padlocks which were upon this Treasure fitted up, and provided by a new Decree, *That there should be Three Keys to it, One in the Pope's keeping, another in the Cardinal Dean's, and a third for the Chamberlain.*

'Tis undeniable the Church has infinite Obligations to this great Pope, not only for adorning the City of *Rome*, and making so many publick Works there for the Benefit of the Holy See, but for laying up Treasure so necessary to keep up the Grandeur of a State. For after all, What a Shame would it be for the Common Mother of Christians not to have wherewithall to supply the Necessities of her Children, to be so poor as to see them in Extremity, without being able to relieve them? Far from decrying the Government of *Sixtus*, because he burthened his People with Taxes, and sold those Offices which used to be given away as a Reward, to them that had done the Church good Service; because he was too frugal in the Expences of his House; Instead of this the whole Christian Common-Wealth should set apart a Day to celebrate his Memory every Year; and the *Ecclesiastical State*, to the Splendour of which he Sacrificed all his Time and Wealth. and had made so potent by the Treasures he left in its Coffers, should for ever keep in remembrance the great things he had done for it. His Fondness to hoard up Money may, one would think, find an Excuse if not a Justification in the parting with it so freely in publick Buildings and Ornaments, which is mention'd in the Seventh Book of our History. Nor did he want for Acts of Liberality, applying a Fund of Two Hundred

Thousand Crowns to maintain the People of *Rome* in constant Plenty, as he set forth in a Bull; And this too was saved out of the Expences of his Household, he took Pleasure in pinching himself for the sake of doing good to his Subjects. He admonish'd his Successors to augment rather than diminish these Funds which were appointed for so just and reasonable a purpose.

Sixtus having a mind to do something more for the Honour of the Sacred College, and advance the Dignity of a Cardinal by new Degrees of Respect, regulated several Abuses that had crept in thro' some Decrees and Bulls that had been granted by his Predecessors; reforming some of them; and throwing away others that he look'd upon useless and superfluous.

For several Reasons he fixed the Number of Cardinals at Seventy, one of which might be, that some Popes had a Design to augment them to a Hundred, after the Example of the Old *Romans*, whose Senate was compos'd of so many who were called the Hundred Fathers. But *Sixtus* did not think the Glory of any body consisted in the Multitude of its Members, and therefore could not approve of their Intention. He design'd by fixing it thus to prevent a Pope's creating Cardinals as often as he thought fit, and advancing those to the Dignity who were Men of no Merit, and so the Sacred Purple by such frequent Promotions would grow cheap, and the Character be lessen'd; this he thought himself secure of when no Hat could be given but upon a Vacancy of one of the Seventy. At first he thought of reducing^d them to Sixty; but after was only for making the Number equal to that of the Disciples of Jesus Christ, and this is the Principal Reason set forth in the Bull.

He made an Order that there should be in the College always Four Doctors of Divinity taken from amongst the Regulars and the Mendicants. This was a very reasonable Provision, for it is well known the Monks have spread the Christian Religion over all Parts of the World; and generously spilt their Blood in establishing the Faith amongst Infidels and Idolaters. *Sixtus*, who above all things took pleasure in acknowledging Service done to the Church, thought this Honour due to the Religious Mendicants; besides that, he look'd upon it as a Credit to the Sacred College to have Good and Learned Divines in it. But his Successors have not trod in his Wiser Ways, they have slighted *Sixtus*'s his Decree, and shew'd themselves ungrateful to these poor Doctors, who are the Pillars and Support of the Church; that at present there is not One of 'em honour'd with a Cardinal's Hat.

He farther provided that no Promotion should be made but in the *Ember Week* of *December*. This Practice was first set up by Pope *Saint Clement* and observ'd for above Six Hundred Years. *Sixtus* renew'd it, but yet twice broke it himself the first time upon the Promotion of *Cardinal Morosini*, the second for his Nephew the *Cardinal de Montalto*, who was made in the Month of *May*.

He confirm'd the Decree of *Julius II.* by which it was prohibited to give the Hat to two Brothers: He carried it farther, and excluded those that were not so nearly related, the Reasons of doing which, he set down at large in a Bull that he made on purpose.

He had a Maxim not to keep all the Places of the College full, but to leave some of 'em void to serve a Turn at a Critical Time. He recommended

intended the Practice to his Successors; that they might have it always in their power, to reward those who should deserve well of the Church, whose Services demanded it as a piece of Justice: And that they might at any time oblige Princes with promoting their Creatures, if there were any Hazard in refusing them.

He created but three and thirty Cardinals all the Time of his Popedom, at Eight Promotions, in the last he was in the mind to fill up all the void Places, and had certainly done it if he had thought himself so near his End.

He made an Order, *That all shaven Clerks who had above Sixty Crowns a Year should wear the Clerical Habit, exempting none but the Knights of Notre Dame de Loretto, and threatned those who did not readily obey it, to deprive them of their Revenue.* The whole Court of Rome was pleas'd with this Regulation, for before it was a scandalous Sight to have those Church-Men who enjoy'd good fat Benefices, go in a Lay and Unsanctified Dress.

In the last Months of his Pontificate he marched his Troops towards the Frontiers of his Country next to *Naples*, under pretence of curbing the Incurfions of the *Banditti*, with which that Kingdom was infested. He was carried to *Terracina*, and gave out that he went to drain the Marshes of that Country which he had a mind to see the doing of himself, but his true Errand was to make an attempt upon the Kingdom of *Naples*. The *Spaniards*, who had a long time mistrusted him, being certainly inform'd of his Motion, ordered Four Thousand chosen Men that way commanded by Count *Spinelli*, under pretence too of driving the *Banditti* out of the Country, where their Gang was less fear'd than the Pope's: For there went about a Report that there was a good Under-

Understanding between Him and Them, and as soon as the Pontifical Army should enter the Kingdom, the *Banditti* should join them with a good Body. But whether *Sixtus* doubted his Enterprize would not succeed, or that the Design was not well laid, he return'd to *Rome*, after he had receiv'd the Compliments of the Viceroy of *Naples* at *Terracina* by his Son, and died soon after. The *Spaniards* rejoiced at his Death as much as *Henry le Grand* lamented it: Which, since it has been represented divers ways, it may be proper enough to mention the most considerable Circumstances of it.

Sixtus found himself out of order with a Pain in the Head Four Months before he died, and imagined it proceeded only from too great Fatigues of Business. Being one Day upon Affairs of Signature (as they call it) he spoke a long time upon the Nature of his Distemper, and treated the Matter neatly and in a very good Method, as he was never more eloquent than when he discours'd upon a Point that nearly concern'd himself. He enlarged upon his Complexion, his ordinary *Regimen*, and tho' his Voice was grown very weak, he gave a particular Account of all that his Physicians had prescribed him. He back'd his Opinion with the Authority of *Hippocrates*, *Galen*, and *Avicennes*, and explain'd a Passage of *Aristotle* which came up to his Case.

He took pains continually for Four Months, finding a Refreshment in Labour and Exercise; Rarely kept his Bed, or if he did, but for a little time, though his Nephew and Sister were urgent with him to think of nothing but preserving his Health.

He would never submit to the Physicians Prescriptions, but despised their Consultations; yet he

BOOK THE POPE SIXTUS V.

He would often send for 'em to talk with him upon the Cause of his Illness. He went pretty often out of his Palace, sometimes a Foot, sometimes a Horse-back, for he loved walking out mightily: But he never talked with Ambassadors about Business as he walked, which other Popes used to do. He gave them more frequent Audiences toward the latter End of his Life, as he lean'd upon a little Table, for the Weakness that was upon him would not suffer him to stir about with the same Vigour and Nimbleness as heretofore.

He neither broke off nor deferr'd Business for any Indisposition he was under, and would often be repeating that fine Sentence of *Vespasian*, a Prince ought to die standing, that is, labouring for the Good of his Country to the last Moment; a Maxim which *Sixtus* follow'd most exactly, being always vexed with those that would have hinder'd him, and indeed he gave Audience, and was pleas'd with taking Pains those Days that he was most sick.

He would needs go to the Church of *St. Mary of the Germans*, with a numerous Train upon *Saturday* the Eighteenth of *August*, 1590. The Protector of that Nation had desired him to be there to give God Thanks for the Conversion of a Great *German* Lord, that had thrown off *Lutheranism* and return'd to the Church, and was instructed by the *Franciscan* Monks. The Pope, it may be to give greater Proofs of his Devotion, assisted at the Ceremony, and went and came back a foot.

The *Monday* following he was taken with an Ague which began with a Shivering, and notwithstanding all the Entreaties of his Family and the Physicians that he would compose himself to rest, he got up, thinking he should be better,

gave Audience, and took pains in some other Affairs which he might as well have put off to another time; And besides, sent for the Governor of Rome to order him to condemn all the Criminals to the Gallies that he had in Prison, because he had a mind to see 'em set out for *Vita Vecchia* in a Weeks Time, and then dismissed him that he might go presently about the Business. On *Wednesday* he had another Fit more violent than the first. He rose the next Morning which was his Well Day, and assisted at the Congregation of the Holy Office. He would have Business brought before him which was very difficult, and required a long Consultation; and taking it amiss that the Cardinals, at the Instance of the Physicians, endeavour'd to bring things to a Conclusion a little abruptly, he made 'em examine them to the Bottom, and asked very earnestly for a List of the Prisoners of the Holy Office. All the time of his Illness, and upon his Ague-Days he would never eat in Bed but sat down to Table that he might have Company, and was pleas'd with raw Fruit. The Physicians ordered him some *Cassia* next Morning, but it had no great Effect, tho' there was another purging Ingredient added because he did not take the whole Dose. His Distemper grew upon him so strongly the Day following, that he found himself extreamly weak. He heard Mass and received the Holy Sacrament: And being weaker and weaker, they made hast to give him extreme Unction. He sent for Cardinal *Castagna*, whom he always look'd upon to be his Successor, recommended some things to his Care that were under the Notice of several Congregations, and told his Nephew who was by, *That Cardinal was the most deserving Person in the whole Sacred College.* He expired the same Evening in *Castagna's*

Castagna's Arms; His Nephew and the rest of his Family melting in Tears, retired to a Corner of the Room.

This was the Account of his Death that went about among the Common People, and the Clergy confirm'd it that there might be no scandalous reports rais'd upon the matter. But People of better Sense thought quite otherwise, that there was more ground to suspect he was Poison'd. And this the Physicians gave out upon opening him; finding the Substance of the Brain corrupted by the malignity of the Poison that had taken it: The pain in his head which he felt before his Death, made him suspicious there was something of that in the case, and he said one day to his Physician in Ordinary; *I believe the Spaniards are so weary of seeing me Pope, that they will take some course to shorten my days and my Pontificate.*

It was thought too that the *Manna* he took the day before his Death had a mixture of Poison in it: However it was, He Died of a Fever, the Violence of which according to the Account of the Physicians inflamed the poison they observed in his Head. The Courtiers and such as speak all they think set it about every where, that the Spaniards had Poison'd the Pope; nor was the Report without some Colour.

In the first place, every body knew what mortal uneasiness he had put them into about the Kingdom of *Naples*, and how he had alarm'd them perpetually with preparations of War that he made upon the Confines. And among other things they could not forgive him the unwillingness he shew'd to declare against the King of *Navarre*, in Favour of the League, in the business of the Succession upon which they had form'd great designs. When they found out that the Pope was in that Prince's Interest they were in such a rage about

about it as No body can imagine. Their disgust was still increas'd by his being so cool in assisting the Duke of *Savoy*, whom they help'd in his Enterprize upon *Geneva*. He had built Forts about it, which he depended upon it would carry the Place, and after all, was forced to raise the Siege with Disgrace because *Sixtus* denied him Money and Troops: Thus much at least is certain, for the *Spaniards* declared it publicly, That the Pope put a stop to the Duke of *Savoy's* Conquests upon *Geneva*.

It was commonly said that all these Reasons put together enraged the *Spaniards* to such a Degree, that they swore they'd be the Death of *Sixtus*, and resolv'd to get rid of him as soon as possible, that they might have a Pope in his Room that should be at their Devotion, and having a Heart entirely *Spanish*, they might prevail upon him to favour the Leaguers, and persecute Hereticks.

Thus the deep-sighted Folks would talk all *Italy* over, but to speak Truth, these Reports were set about only by the Enemies of the Crown of *Spain*, who went about to ruin it's Credit at *Rome*, and cry down their Nation all *Christendom* over. For after all the subtil Contrivances of that People, the Business of poisoning a Popè was not so easily accomplish'd, it could not be done by one single Person, and there was too great Hazard in communicating it to a Number; this would have been short of the *Spanish* Prudence, who knew well enough how many Spies *Sixtus* kept in pay. However it was, *Henry IV.* was extremely concern'd at the Death of this Great Man, he discover'd his Grief for several Days together, and when he heard the first News of it, said; *This Blow is a Piece of Spanish Politicks, no Stroke of Heaven*; Speaking of it at another time.

time he added this, *I lose a Pope that was truly Mine, God grant his Successor may be like him.*

His Body was the next Night carried in a Litter from the Palace of *Monte Cavall*, where he was carried to *St. Peter's Church*, where he was buried with the usual Ceremonies. His Nephew the Cardinal *de Montalto*, a Man of extraordinary Virtue, removed it the next Year in great State, and made a Magnificent Funeral for him in the Chapel he had built in *Saint Mary Major's Church*.

In the Vacancy of the See, which was but Eighteen Days, some discontented People, and the *Spaniards* amongst the rest, would needs pull down the Statue which the *Romans* had erected for him in the Place of the Capitol. The Senate; when they heard what was done, made a Decree immediately, forbidding any Pope's Statue to be set up in his Life-time. This they had engraved in Marble and set up in the Hall of the Capitol; it was in these Words: *If any one, either a Private Man or Magistrate, shall for the future dare to propose setting up any Statue in Honour of a Pope then Living, The Senate and People of Rome declare him infamous for ever, and for the time to come, incapable of holding any publick Office, by this Decree, bearing Date in the Month of August, 1590.*

F I N I S.

BOOKS Printed for John Wyat,

AN *Essay upon Friendship*, from the Ingenious Monsieur de Sacy's, lately published in Three Parts; The First directs us in the Choice of our Friends: The Second in our Behaviour toward them: The Third in our Conduct when the Union is dissolved by Death or otherwise. Done into English by the Translatour of *The List of Pope Sixtus V.*

The History of the Apostles Creed, with Critical Observations on its several Articles. By Peter King Esq; The Second Edition.

An Essay concerning the Nature and Guilt of Lying. By Charles Brent, M. A. Rector of Christ's Church and St. Werburgh, in Bristol.

A Brief Vindication of the Separate Existence and Immortality of the Soul, against Dr. Coward's Second Thoughts. By John Turner, M. A. In Two Parts.

An Exact Abridgment of all the Trials, not omitting any material Passage therein, relating to High Treasons, Piracies, &c. in the Reigns of the Late King William, and of our present Gracious Sovereign Queen ANNE.

Clavis Commercialis, Or, *The Key of Commerce*: Shewing the true Method of keeping Merchants Accompts, after the Italian Manner of Debtor and Creditor, in One Hundred and Twenty Propositions; containing most Cases relating to Merchandise: With a Practical Wast-Book, Journal, and Ledger, and Directions how to ballance the Ledger, and transfer the Ballance thereof into a New Ledger, designed for the Help and Assistance of Young Merchants.



00035889

Digitized with financial assistance from the
Government of Maharashtra
on 15 June, 2016

